

MY ROOMMATE

Introduction

She's a simple yet very beautiful kinda girl next door

She grew up with nothing much, in a not so stable family, her Granny is the only family who cared for her future, she is a focused ambitious young lady who knows what she wants to do with her life, she knew her Granny won't be able to pay for her varsity fees so she studied hard although she was naturally intelligent.. But you can never be too smart right?...As beautiful as she was she stayed far away from boys as possible cause she saw the rate of pregnancy in her neighborhood and she didn't want to be held back and obviously her grandmother preached the same thing to her, but like any other teenager she did try dating but things

didn't go as she expected,I'll let her tell you about that when she's ready....finally! she flees the nest,leaving home,the dusty rural areas of Mthatha, off she goes to the City of Gold.. What a big transformation right? She got her bursary but then there was a turn of events BURSARY WENT WRONG

she found out she wasn't offered accommodation, whatever was she to do? She was already in the big city,she knew absolutely no one and had nowhere to go,that night she was sure she would be sleeping in the streets, but how was she to study while living in the streets? This was definitely not part of the plan! She didn't want to call her grandmother, she would die of heart attack cause she was the most excited when she was leaving to go make something of herself, At this moment she had no one, In the big city,no one to call,she was exposed to the many dangers of this Town

anything could happen to her at this moment, she's lost, she's cold, she's confused and she's a teenage girl....I wonder how life will turn out for this mysterious lady?.....will she make it through the night? Could this be the end of the beginning? Will someone save her?...so many questions....will she go back home? how? will something bad happen to her? what kind of person is she? will we get to know her?.....will Admin carry on with this story? or will she leave us hanging?

.

Grab your popcorn, your blanket find your comfortable couch and let's watch how this story will unfold

.

.

.

You know what to do...mention..

share....comment,....like....

Are y'all interested? I need to know,so I know whether to continue or notthe more likes the more likely we continue with this story

[07/28, 11:04] W: insert 1

.

.

.

.

one year later

I really want to be bothered or at least angry by the disgusting sight in front of me, but really, I'm not, I actually feel like cheering them on cause they just made my life a whole lot easier. She's on her knees facing the headboard while he's pounding her uncontrollably from behind

"Fuck me harder, yeah! Yeah ooooooh fuck fuck ooh shiiit!"

"Oh your pussyy so good ohhh mmmh"

Me: "wow"

I bang the door behind me as I walk out. I make my way to the kitchen, I'm starving, it's been a long day then I come back to this

"Baby, I can explain"

I'm now enjoying yogurt when the Jerk speaks, I'm so calm it's not even funny, well it is kinda funny. I've been meaning to break up with this

doutch but I just couldn't get the time or find the reason to leave his sorry ass

shame poor guy...I feel sorry for interrupting his fun

Me:"explain what babe?"

He looks at me with a facial expression I can't explain

Him:"aren't you mad? "

Me:"what for? That you were horny and decided to get a booty call,oh no babe I totally get it,I'm not angry, actually I was about to leave so y'all can carry on,its your house anyway you free to do as you please,I hope you don't mind about this yogurt I'm a bit hungry,but now I'm gone,hopefully we never cross paths again,bye babe"

I make my way to the exit door as I aim the empty container of yogurt at the bin and I score

Me:"yesss!" I say as I'm out

Him:"please babe,give me one more chance,I'm sorry"

Me:"chance? Me being with you in the first place was a chance,the greatest chance I've ever made"

I leave him standing there dumbstruck and half naked.

I call an uber after I've walked a few houses away from his.

To think this was one of the longest relationships I've ever had,I mean guys a whole two months! Yoh that is way too long for me most of my relationships are not more than one month or few weeks,I don't know whether it's good or bad luck but they always show their true colours early,but with Thato it was longer than I anticipated, long and sooo boring, to think I was about to give him the cookie

thinking it would maybe spice things up
nyana,thank goodness he did this,thank you
Lord! I think I should take a break from dating
now and just focus on myself and books,I'm
doing my second year now so I gotta focus,I
wouldn't wanna disappoint my
grandmommy,she sacrificed too much for me
to get here,I've been through the worst
childhood, but that's a story for another day.

The Uber picks me up,I don't feel like going
straight home so

Me:"please drop me off Braamfontein near
WAM café"

He drops me off there indeed,I don't know
about you but I'm supper famished right
now,and I'm not about to go to that pitiful house
I live in. I make my way in the café then sit right
at the far corner end,I love sitting at far corner
ends in restaurants and just have a clear view
of who walks in and who walks out,how are

they dressed, make up their lives in my mind just by looking at them, call me creepy but trust me, its fun...

Quinton is the only human being who doesn't think its weird, infact we both like to do this.

Waiter:"can I get you something mam or would you still like to look through the menus?"

Me:"I'll have your cappuccino muffins and a latte please"

He writes on his notepad

Waiter:"that be all?"

Me:"yes"

He nods and walks away,yoh I wonder how will I fall asleep tonight with this much caffeine, might as well study..who am I kidding recess is not even over yet

"Can I join you?"

I look up at him then I start examining him,he is

a caramel bone, a bit too thin but not skinny, wouldn't say he's hot but he's got looks nyana just njeeee, he's dressed not very decent, looks like some rapper wanna be, the skinny jeans, them big sneakers, the pants are not pulled right up they sitting bellow his butt showing off he's boxers, he has on a white vest and a leather jacket, he better be a bicker or else he's outfit is a big turn off for me

"Well? May I?"

I come back to earth

Me: "uhm.....wellll.....l..... eerrrm

He flashes me a big smile I almost fall out my chair, has this guy ever heard of toothbrush and toothpaste!? trust me they do wonder my brother, Even worse he's got a gold tooth! Yoh he really didn't need it cause he's teeth are all turning gold

Me: ",uhm, actually... I

","she's here with me,sorry but we on a date,so a third wheel would be intruding"

Phew,this guy is always here when I'm in some kinda trouble, sometimes it scares me

Me:"Quinton!, finally what took you so long,babe"

I play along so this guy can vanish

He comes and kisses my cheek then takes he's seat

Quinton: "sorry to keep you waiting, did you take me an order?"

Me:"No,you know how picky you are"

We fake laugh at each other,the gold tooth guy gets the message and leaves,finally! I can breath!

I sigh

Me:"thanks for the rescue "

Quint:"I wish I didn't, and watch you suffocate"

He laughs and I give him a dead glare

Me:"then I make you wash the dishes for the rest of the year"

Quint:"unfair! Its not like its my job to rescue you"

Me:"but you always there when I'm in trouble, might as well make it your job"

Quinton: "girl please,I got better things to do than saving your ass"

Me:"mmmh really? Like what? Breaking hearts?"

Quinton: "wow,really now? We going there?"

Me:"let us not"

Quinton: "good, cause I've only broke two this month,I'm getting better"

This guy is unbelievable

Me:"I hope God one day hears all my prayers for

you.....anyway while we still in the topic.... I
broke up with that son of a

Quinton: "tiiiiiii..."

He always says that when I'm about to swear in
public, I also do it for him.

Me:" I caught him red handed,cheating ,today"

Quinton: "as in like you saw him fucking? With
your own two eyes?"

I nod smiling, don't ask why I'm smiling

Quinton: "I need to pay him a short visit"

Oh no he always does this

Me:"no please,he's not worth it really,I'm not
even hurt,I've been meaning to break up with
him,you know that"

Quinton: "okay I guess you right,hurry and finish
up,I need to get back to the house,I'm tired just
wanna chill and talk to you so I can fall asleep
and rest"

I gasp

Me:"are you saying I'm boring,Mr O'Brien? "

Quinton: "That is not what I'm saying my Lilly,
just saying your presence is so relaxing"

Me:" go jump off a cliff"

We finish up then he drives us back to our apartment, yes "our" we live together,let's just say if it wasn't for him I'd be somewhere in the streets,it was one of those things "bursary went wrong" turned out I wasn't offered accommodation,but I only found that out when I was already here,I remember I had nowhere to go,i couldn't call my grams cause it would've stressed her and I wouldn't want her getting another heart attack due to stress, so I dragged my big luggage not knowing where to go just roaming the streets of Jo'burg till it got really dark, a group of young men surrounded me,it was the most terrifying moment of my life,when

out of nowhere a handsome Knight(he should never hear me call him that,it will boost his already big Ego)came to the rescue,he scared them off with his gun,I was relieved and thankful and charmed,then I was terrified again cause after all he was still a stranger with a gun,I was young,lost and vulnerable so he could've done as he pleases with me and I remembered I was in the city of gold anything is possible,but the cute gentleman in front of me assured me that he wouldn't hurt me then offered me a ride,I took my chances and trusted him with my life,I told him I have nowhere to go and that's when he offered me a room in his bachelor apartment of five rooms,it was a nice reasonable house,but at first it was Scarry the thought of sharing with a guy many thoughts ran through my mind,luckily the whole of last year he didn't stay with me,he'd come by but not sleepover, he asked he's friend if he could crash with him,just for one year until I was

comfortable then he'd move back in this year,we became very close as friends from then,the year just started so he recently moved in two days ago,but this will be the first night we'll spend as roommates. I've never lived with anyone besides my mom and grams,I didn't have much of an interesting life back then,but that all changed last year,varsity life,where have you been all my life? But it also has its downs,that's when I start missing home.

If it wasn't for Quinton, God knows where I'd be doing what,the thought terrifies me. Suddenly I feel nervous, why?

Quinton:"penny for thoughts? "

We now at the house chilling in front of the T.V just finished a box of pizza

Me:"sorry but I only deal with Rands,when you have that,then we can talk"

Quinton:"wow,I always knew you were a gold

digger,didn't think it was that bad that I'd also have to pay for your thoughts"

He says jokingly while laughing in between

Me(chuckle):"hey,in my defense you offered to pay for my thoughts, so I took my chances,like any other business minded person out there"

Quinton: "you such a smart mouth"

Me:"that's why you luurrrv me"

Quinton(chuckles):"haaa yeah right...pshhh"

Me:"I'm going to bed now,goodnight "

He looks at me disappointed

Quinton: "its only ten,and a nice movie is about to start"

I shake my head,then he gives me those puppy pleading eyes,with those rainbow eyes of his,now how do you say no to such an adorable face like that? Please teach me,I'm serious, please teach me I really need to know cause I

really need to sleep right now,as in now,any one there?,hello? I guess no one wants to teach me

Me:"Eish,Quinton....

Quinton: "come on,I'll make popcorn"

He gives me that childish excited cute face showing every single tooth in his mouth.

(Oh boy you better thank God for taking he's time while creating you,otherwise nc nc nc)

Me:"popcorn? Mmmh okay then I guess one movie won't hurt"

He flashes a smile, more like a smirk

He makes popcorn then watch the movie, he wraps he's arm round my shoulder as we indulge in the popcorn on my lap ,might be a problem staying with this bimbo if he'll make me stay up till late every time.....oh hey I almost forgot,my name is Lisakhanya

Mthethwa I'm turning 18 next month March 03,I

can't put into words on what kind of person I am but you will soon find out and maybe describe me in your own words,I'm doing my second year in Law,there's not so many reasons of why law but there is one,which y'all bound to find out

- .
- .
- .

let's keep each other satisfied... I'll do it by posting...then in return y'all comment..like...mention as many friends as you can!

[07/28, 11:05] W: insert 2

Lisa

I'm woken up by movement of someone breathing beneath my head,what is this? Ouch my back,can't believe we slept on this small couch,we all tangled up on each other,I lift my head from him,we a bit sweaty,I mean its still the beginning of the year the temperatures are hot,definitely not for cuddling or whatever this is,and worse I'm still wearing my warm PJs,what was I thinking?....aawwww would you look at that,he looks so innocent and cute with his pouted purplish lips,how come they purple,its because he smokes of

cause....uuuhh I have an idea,

I try to untangle myself from him I slowly throw my legs gently over him as I make my way to the kitchen....I hope we have some cream..mwahahaha this is going to be fun

Me:"eish,we don't have whoop cream"

Argh great I really wanted to prank that fool

Me:"oh what is this? Chocolate syrup!"

Me(whispers):"shhhhh keep it down Lisa, we wouldn't wanna wake him up before having our fun"

I tip toe back to the couch,just one more thing...

Now where is that feather duster? Oh there you are! Let me pull out one feather

(he's so gonna get me for this) I say to myself

I squeeze the syrup on his right hand,no I think he need more,so I squeeze even more. I try to hold in my laugh....oh wait my phone,I have to

get this on video,I laugh silently as I on the video

Me(talking to the camera,whispering): "okay guys,I'm about to prank my friend here,so the reason I'm videoing this is cause if he should make any threats to kill me and y'all don't see me for more than three days....please come after him....hehehe..okay,here goes"

I gently move the feather on his left ear tickling it but he just shakes his head

Me(whispers): "oh come on...don't be boring now"

I tickle his nose and mouth,he wiggles his nose in frustration,I giggle softly, does he have to be this cute? I carry on irritating him with the feather,when he suddenly slaps his face with he's right hand..YES!

Me(laughing): "oops!"

He gets up totally shocked,gosh you should see

his face all smudged with chocolate

I'm laughing uncontrollably while videoing him

Me(laughing): "you look so yummy mmmh I could just eat you up!"

Quinton: "what the fuck Lisa....you did this?"

His face turn into an angry one ...shhiit

Me:"Me? Why Me?"

I ask all shocked and innocent

He laughs while licking the chocolate on his lips

Quinton(laughing): "I'm so going to get you for this Lisa"

Me:"you should've seen the look on your face...priceless! "

He looks at me in disbelief

Quinton: "Are you videoing this?"

I shake my head although its clearly evident I am

Me:"No"

Quinton: "delete it now!"

I laugh shaking my head

Me:"Never!"

Quinton: "bring that here before I kill you!"

Me:"you see people, there's the threat I was talking about"

He gets up coming towards me but I'm too fast for him I'm already outside

Quinton: "You better give me that phone Young lady And I'm not playing with you,Delete that video now"

Me:"you better be nice Young man,cause you still on camera... So smile for the camera chocolate face!"

I giggle then he starts chasing me

Quinton: "you think you can outrun me...I don't

think so Missy"

I was now in the bedroom hiding next to the bed on the other side

I try to be as quiet as a mouse but my breathing is too heavy. I hear the bedroom door close

Quinton: "I know you in here, and there no more running cause you stuck in this room with me...if I were you I'd give up now..I have the keys after all"

Shit I'm busted I quickly talk to the camera before I switch it off

Me(whispering): "okay guys I'm busted, it was fun while it lasted, remember what I said, if you don't....."

" there you are"

I switch off the video and save it, I lift up my eyes and suddenly my heart is racing in fear

Me:"look...Quinton..... My Bff....my beautiful

brother....let's talk about this"

He smirks

Quinton: "I see you have a death wish huh?"

Me:"I...I was just...come on...

I jump on the bed as I try to run to the other side but he quickly corners me before I can even make it to the door. I'm standing still while his hands are holding against the wall locking me between them

Quinton: "so you think you have jokes huh?"

Me(breathless): "come on....Quinton... I ..was just messing with younothing personal.....let's forget this ever happened..... Okay?....

I stretch out my hand a bit

Me:" Truce?"

I smile nervously showing every tooth in my mouth

He still has chocolate on his face,its smells so good,by the way I'm obsessed with chocolate

Quinton (chuckles): "Truce?...you have to be kidding me..come here"

I close my eyes cause I don't know what he's about to do,when I feel him pick me up then throws me on the bed roughly,I lay on my back he gets on top of me

Me: "what you going to do to me? Please don't tickle please I won't do it again!"

Quinton: "that's not such a bad idea as well"

He smiles I try to move but he presses himself even more on top of me,he takes my hands then hold them tightly over my head,I'm now completely stuck,he brings his face closer to mine,whoa what is going on? My heart starts beating faster and so does the one down there,don't look at me like that he's dick is too pressed against my honeypot and its very

big,okay why am I thinking about his dick?this is my friend, hello Lisa!?

Me(whispers): "Quinton?"

He smiles

Quinton: "it's time you clean up your mess young lady"

Me:"what?"

Quinton: "you going to lick my face clean, since you love chocolate so much.....go on"

Me:"are you serious I'm not doing that...eewww"

Quinton:"fine then we will stay in this position as I torture you with awkward silence and intensive stare down"

Me:"I can live with that,but I'm never licking your face,even if it was the last chocolate face on earth!"

Quinton: "okay then"

It goes silent his face still close to mine,he's still on top of me,he's staring deep into my eyes like he's searching for something he lost,his light brown hazel eyes.... Its been five minutes now my breathing has changed,my heart is beating in a different way, he's smiles are sending shivers down my spine,what's happening to me? I've never felt like this before towards anyone, all of these things happening to me feel so foreign... This is really torture

I finally break the ice

Me:OK! Fine! You win..I'll lick your face"

Quinton: "good girl"

He let's go my hands as I pull his face and start licking all the chocolate off it...finally I'm done,I just left the bit that was around his lips

Me:"all done..can I be set free now?"

I don't know if its just me or he's dick feels very hard on me now....I think its just me,I can't

possibly make him feel that way..I'm not the type of girl like the ones he dates..so no Im just imagining

Quinton: "what about the chocolate around my lips?"

Me:"you can take care of that"

Quinton: "its your mess,you clean it"

I sigh

Me:"argh,this is soo disgusting you know"

Quinton: "I know...just so you bare in mind..I sweated a lot last night"

I felt the urge to puke..I LICKED HIS SWEAT!!!
eeww

Me:"did you have to mention it"

Quinton:"you didn't expect me to make you enjoy this punishment? did you?"

Me:"you the cruelest friend ever!"

Quinton: "why thank you..I only aim to please"

Me:"more like to disgust "

Quinton: "the more you talk the more this chocolate will melt with my sweat"

Me:"yuck! let's just get this over and done with"
remind me to never prank this fool again

I pull his face closer and lick the chocolate around his lips,next thing I know our lips are touching ,he starts moving them as he sucks my upper lip

Quinton: "sorry you kinda had a bit of chocolate there.....and here"

He sucks my bottom lip...next thing we sucking each others lips...OMG we kissing! This is so wrong....but it feels so damn good...I break the kiss

Me:"uhmm...II have to go"

He gets off me and I jump out of bed as quick

as lightning

Okay things are going to be so awkward from now on.....I hope they won't though

Quinton: "I see you also enjoyed my chocolate lips as much I enjoyed yours?"

He smirks

Me:"don't flatter yourself buddy...you know how obsessed I am with chocolate... wouldn't say much for your lips..so wipe that smug off your face"

I smirk back

Quinton: "and here I was thinking this was a start of something amazing"

Me:"haa!! Nice try not in a million years....but no offence..I'm way out of your league"

He hold his chest

Quinton:"you breaking it"

Me:"its about time you got a taste of your own medicine "

We crack up and laugh

Quinton: "where has 'hard to get' gotten you?"

Me:"very far from heart breakers like you"

Did I mention I'm kind of a smart mouth?

Quinton: "smart mouth"

Hey he reads minds now?

Quinton: "stop thinking too much.,...now get out of my room,before I get my real revenge on you"

Me:"I'll pass"

I literally run out,phew I think I handled that well....our friendship is not bruised by this,thank goodness.

Me:"phew! What to do now?"

I throw myself on the couch and then go

through the channels when my phone starts ringing, I check the ID and its grams, Eish I was post to call her first thing yesterday before things didn't go the way I had imagined

Me: "If it isn't the best granny in the whole wild world "

Grams: "Lisa, ubuya nini kanti?" (when are you coming back?)

I laugh, is she serious

Me: "kodwa makhulu bendinawe izolo oku?" (but grams I was with you just yesterday?)

She laughs I love it when she laughs, its an Angel's laugh

Grams: "sendyak'khumbula nje " (I miss you already)

Me: "aaw I miss you too ma-gree"

She sighs loud

Me: "kukho inxhaki makhulu?....(is there a

problem grams?)

It goes quiet...this can't be good,I can already sense tragedy, this is the same silence I heard when grams was going to tell me my dad has passed on

Me:"makhulu.....please,talk to me....(whisper)...is mom okay?"

Grams: "(sniffs) ayi umamakho uyaphila(your mom is fine),just she's not giving up on that bottle, she's somewhere out there in the taven,drinking her life away"

I sigh,although I'm used to this, I'm not really used to this,my mom has become a drowning alcoholic ever since dad passed away five years ago

Me:"ayi mna andsazi ngoku ukba sizoyithini lento ka mama nyan"

(I really don't know whatever are we to do about mom's problem)

Grams: "kodwa ke, akusiso isizathu endiku fonele sona"

(That's not the real reason why I called you)

Me: "obviously,.... Its cause you missed me"

She laughs lightly

Grams: "Lisa, mntam.... I went to the doctor a few months back ndyaz uk'ba akuloxesha elihle lokuk'xelela eli(and this is probably not the best time to tell you this")

My heart skips a beat in fear

Me: "is everything okay grams? Do you have the flu again? Is it your bones acting up...you did blood check up?"

My suspense is running wild

Grams: "hlisa umoya lilly"(calm down, lilly)

I try to calm down

Grams: "I want you to study hard okay, don't let

the city of gold deceive you,ungadlali
amakhwenkwe(don't be fooled by boys),I want
you to go places and make something out of
yourself kodwa ungasoze ulibale apho uvela
khona(but never forget where you come from)"

Me:"o_okay kutheni uthetha kanje? Ngaba
yonke into ihamba kakhle khona into ek'ding'ba
ndiyazi?"(why are you talking like this,is there
something you want to tell me?)

Grams: "I have cancer baby....andinaxesha
lingakanani emhlabeni(And I don't have much
time on earth)

My ears went deaf everything just shut off

Grams:"I'm sorry I didn't tell you earlier or over
the holidays, but I just wanted to spend quality
happy time with you,I knew you would've
insisted in staying here instead of going back to
school and I couldn't let that happen"

Me(breaking voice): "how long do you have to

live?"

Grams (crying): "three months or two....

I burst into tears

Me:"No! No! Please tell me you joking... I can't
lose you makhulu ...I can't!...you my only
family "

She's crying loudly on the other side as well,

Grams: "sobuye sithethe Nana..I love
you...remember that"

She drops the call,then all the tears come
gushing down like a waterfall,I can't breath,my
heart is suffocated and is very painful like a
thousand daggers just cut right through it...why
me? Why do bad things love happening to me?.
I drop my phone then drop on my knees as I cry
my eyes out..

I feel someone in front of me hugging
me,making me cry even more,he doesn't say

anything but just holds me tighter and let's me
cry on his shoulder

"Sshhh everything will be okay"

.

.

.

comment and like please

[07/28, 11:05] W: insert 3

LISA

I try to open my eyes but they too heavy and painful

"Hey sleepy head"

I manage to open one eye and I see a clean fresh Quinton

Quinton:"I have to get going, I made breakfast, its in the microwave,bye"

He kisses my forehead then walks

Me:"Wait!"

He stops and looks at me

Me:"why didn't you wake me? Now I'll miss my

morning class "

Quinton: "I don't think you should go today"

Me:"and sit around here and do nothing and think about horrible things"

I say as I'm rushing up and down tryna get ready before he leaves me. I quickly washed my face threw in sweat pants bra, vest,I'm now tryna put on my shoes while hopping to the bathroom which is across my bedroom,I brush my teeth as I manage to put on one shoe,I run back to the room while brushing my teeth and take my other shoe I run back to the bathroom, I rinse my mouth and before I know it I'm all done,I go back to my room to get my bag

Me:"ready to go"

I say as I pass him

Me:"are you just going to stand there?"

I'll bath when I get back so I just puffed some

perfume and roll on...don't judge me..we all have our days

He looks at me with his mouth hang open

Quinton: "that's the quickest I've ever seen a girl dress up"

Me:"if you don't close your mouth, it'll be the quickest you've ever seen a fly get in someone's mouth"

He laughs then we head out to his car,it's nothing fancy just one of those old golf cars ,but its all pimped up and very nice and shiny,he always keeps it clean even in the inside with red and black leather seats its black on the outside, the rims are the best they can rotate for a few minutes after the car has stopped,it's a sexy babe..I don't know how he afforded to pimp his car like this, cause well he doesn't come from a very financially stable home,he's told me about himself but not much..the only thing I know is

that he hates his father even though he passed away..the reasons being? He's not ready to tell me...but he loves his mother dearly, I've never seen where he comes from but he's from around Jo'burg,I once asked if I could visit where his family stays since he says his mom knows about me and what he's done for me,apparently he tells me his family loves me but when I ask to meet them he become dodgy making up excuses,telling me he's ashamed and embarrassed by the situation at his home,I don't get why cause I don't come from a fancy home either so I'm the last person to judge..so I've stopped asking,cause I guess its really bad,he works part time as a bartender at "The Immigrant" night club he's salary is not much but he's surviving, he also has a bursary paying his fees,I think this flat is also costly the landlord once came and demanded his rent and at that month Quinton was broke so I helped him out with the little spending money I get

from my bursary and the little I get from grams at least it managed to pay half of their rent, I was starving for those past four or five months cause I started using my money to help out with rent, but Quinton would manage to get a few things for us to Cook, cause even though we didn't stay together but he was here most of the time only he'd sleepover at his friend Brandon, some days we'd have bread and butter for supper, not that I'm complaining cause that's the life I lived back home, but its not always bad most times its good, we manage to buy lots of groceries even go shopping for clothes...so our struggle is short lived but becomes very bad.

he's not really an open person and I'm not really a meddling person so if you say its non of my business it probably is non of my business..that's why I'm not open with him either, like last night, I didn't tell him why I was

crying after he asked,its non of his business. I wonder how will I survive without Grams I'll have no one

I don't know how to describe Quinton..

well he's cute,okay maybe cute is an understatement he's hot,like he's the kinda hot that makes a girl throb just by his side smile..the kinda hot that makes you go damn more then five times whenever he comes by and try by all means to catch his attention.. Well at least that's what I hear from other girls cause I really don't care..what? I don't....Girls are all over him like literally, they can't even pretend to not want to get under his pants! Although he never pays attention to girls,well he does but certain girls and they're those kinda cheerleader beautiful popular girls we usually watch on movies who always get the "guy" now that is his type..

..he's not serious when it comes to

relationships, I won't even call them relationships cause he doesn't stay with one girl for more than one week or two weeks,he gets what he wants and leaves them,when I asked why does he do this,he told me he's just having fun and I can't expect him to be serious with girls who flirt with him at work while mixing them cocktails and besides these girls love the expensive life and he's not about to be sucked dry by some bitch..his words not mine...I won't put myself down I'm very cute if I say so myself..* wink wink* if I wanted to be one of "those girls" it wouldn't be such a hard task but I'm not about that,I'm way too busy and have a life ,to be like that,I got the body,yes hourglass kind but not the Nicki minaj,I'm more medium boobs flat tummy,pointy hips medium ass,long but not skinny legs,light golden brown complexion(yellow bone),Chinese big green eyes,don't ask me how come I got green eyes,I don't wanna ruin my already bruised mood

talking about that..I put black eyes contacts no one knows I have green eyes except my family, my grams doesn't like the fact that I hide the colour of my eyes she says they very beautiful but she doesn't understand,I have natural long silk hair,I'm half colored, I hope you now have a clear vision of how I look?

Quinton: ",get out of my car"

Oh we here.

Me:"No need to be a dorkass about it....I'll see you later"

I say as we get out the car

Quinton: "I'm not waiting for you today,you'll have to call an uber or something"

Me(smug):"got a hot date?"

Quinton: "why do you always assume that? Maybe I got a study date...ever thought of that?"

I laugh out loud but fake laugh

Me:"haaa! You? Study? Try again! "

He laughs

Quinton: "okay okay you got me, there's this hot chick,Brandon introduced me to last week,her name is Minentle ,we exchanged numbers,she was literally craving for me,we flirted over the phone,until she couldn't wait for me to make the first move then she....guess what?"

I shrug my shoulders

Me:"she asked you to marry her?"(sarcasm)

He chuckles

Quinton: "gee its too soon for that....she asked me out"

Me:"she...asked...you...out?"

He nods proudly

Me:"wow,desperate much?"

He laughs

Quinton: "hey,I don't mind,so that's what I'll be doing after classes"

Me(smirk):"a girl you didn't meet at the club...interesting"

Quinton: "oh please, I doubt she'll be any different, she flirted with me and asked me out..so she's no different from all the others I've dat....had fun with"

Me:"mmh if you say so... okay then charmer boy I'll see you later,I'm already running late bye!"

I realise I think I'm acting weird or I don't feel like I sounded happy for him..which is weird right? so I stopped and look back at him

Me:"good luck with the date,hope you don't mess this one up like the rest"

He smiles

Quinton:"go away!"

Me: "see you later Roomie"

Quinton: "don't count on it *winks*..Roomie!"

I run to class and I'm fifteen minutes late,I go sit by the third row from the front,I don't like sitting at the back,I won't focus since I'm such a blab mouth I'll easily get distracted

Me(whisper):"hey girlfriend "

Oh I forgot to mention I have another bestie besides Quinton her name is Yonela,well we go waaay back since high school, grade 10...but we only found out when we started varsity that we were accepted at the same varsity

Yonela:"you late.....again"

She rolls her eyes

Me:"give me a break,better late than not showing up at all"

Yonela: "obviously, you'll take your side"

I try to laugh silently

Me:"aahh.... Durrh"

I roll my eyes and hit my forehead stupidly

The day proceeds as we go from one class to the next

Yonela: "did you hear?"

We now taking a walk to my place its a walkable distance but its also a drivable distance but since we have time and we came out early since most lectures weren't present its only 15:00pm

Me:"No....I'm guessing you will tell me?"

Yonela: "we having a transfer student.... He or she is coming tomorrow"

How does she get all these news?

Me:"wow that's cool...I wonder where she\he is from"

Yonela: "from America I hope....and I Wish it would be a very handsome guy"

She sighs like a girl in love looking up

Me:"okay....I bet you do"

Yonela: "dude,we've always talked about going to America, marrying a cute white American guy and being filthy successful"

I laugh as I remember our crazy dreams

Yonela: "and besides,we need someone who will outdo Quinton, he can't be the hottest guy forever!"

Me(laughing): "you exaggerating now,There are plenty hot guys around"

Yonela: "yeah but not like Quinton.. Come on you know what I mean,he just has that thing...you know....that thing...about him that no other hot guy has..I don't know whether its the body,or the way he uses his body language

more than words,or the fact that he doesn't even have to try to get what he wants or is it that lazy smile he flashes every time, that doesn't even last five seconds or is it that car he drives that makes him look like a hot gangster.. Have you noticed how important he looks?,for an average guy with non much.....this transfer student has better be all that.. Or else I'm gonna scream"

Me:"whoa..calm down,Quinton is not all that,I really don't get what y'all see in him"

Yonela: "ahaa you probably the only girl who thinks that in the whole neighborhood"

Me:"argh....it doesnt have to be all about the looks all the time..there are many more things that should attract us to guys instead of appearance, well as long as they clean,neat and decent"

She rolls her eyes as we enter the gate

Yonela: "I don't even know how will you manage staying with a hunk like that under one roof without fucking for the next three years or resisting those purplish lips"

Me:"oh please don't be so dramatic, I'll manage and besides I don't see Quinton in that way, I see him the same way I see you,my best friend"

Yonela: "yooh uyabora.....I'd be going out of my way to get his attention, it must be easy if you live with him....like you just walk around the house half naked,drop your towel by mistake after a bath..."

I burst into laughter

Me:"okay...I've heard enough,eeww not for Quinton...Ever! Sick..nooo"

She also laughs

Yonela: "I'm just teasing you,anyway enough about Quinton how are things with thato?
(Smirks) Gave him that surprise we talked

about during holidays?"

Me:"hehehe....ubani yena?....instead I got the surprise of my life....I found him banging another bitch"

Her eyes and mouth widen in shock

Yonela: "what!? After two months yonke...I really thought he was the one"

I laugh out loud

Me:"you make it sound like two years"

Yonela:"that's where I thought it was leading "

Me:"mxm,you know,guys loose interest in me quickly, I wonder what I do wrong,because its not like I even give them my pussy so I can't say he got what he wanted? Or maybe its because I don't give them?"

Yonela: "okay you shut up right there,its nothing you do wrong,its everything you do right,hey you haven't been dating that much,I mean you only

started dating in matric and after him you've only dated three guys,so I'm sure you just haven't bumped into the gentleman yet"

Me:"but they all seem like such gentlemen in the beginning "

Yonela: "babe,please don't think much about that,and remember this,...don't you ever blame yourself for a man cheating or leaving you,I mean look at you,you beautifully sexy,you ambitious, you so intelligent and focused.... I guess you too much for these losers to handle"

I flash a huge smile at her

Me:"you always have the right things to say,.. I love you so much "

Yonela: "I love you too,now with all that love in you for me,would you be a darling and make us some food...I'm starving, I'll go home a bit late,I don't feel like cooking"

I look at her in disbelief

Me:"didn't know I opened a restaurant "

I get up laughing my phone vibrates in my pocket I check it out and its a WhatsApp from Quinton

Quinton: are you okay? Got home safe?

Me:I'm good,yes all safe,how's the date going?

He's already typing

Quinton: it's amazing, she's amazing Lisa,I think she might just make it for two weeks

I laugh

Me: wow,she must've made quite the impression huh

Quinton: I actually would like you to meet this one

I take a few minutes before answering

Me:oh..really?... In that case I can't wait to meet her

He answers quickly

Quinton:I think I might actually like her

Me:well well well,if it isn't Mr too cool for love,look at you falling, on the first date!

Quinton : shut up,I said like her.. and I said I 'think' I 'might' like her... No one said anything about love

Me:"mhm we'll see about that...let's bet?...you'll fall for her

Quinton: I won't... Its a bet then, I know I'll win,we'll discuss my reward when I get home

Me:hahaha....okay after a month though

Quinton: I doubt it will even last that long,do you know the difference between a month and two weeks?

Me:I'll keep my fingers crossed

Quinton: oh shuu here she comes,bye

Me: bye....*whisper*..you falling

He doesn't read or respond

I carry on making food as I'm about to finish my phone vibrates

Quinton: stop saying that!... don't wait up for me....I just scored jackpot!

Me:dude! Too much info ..enjoy!

I put my phone away then head to the lounge where yonela already made herself comfortable

Me:"you can sleep over tonight... Please "

She smirks

Yonela: "will Quinton be here soon?"

Me:"uhm,....fortunately nope,he's not coming back tonight "

Her smile disappears

Yonela:"aawww I was already thinking of using those tips I told you earlier...walking half

naked...mistakenly dropping towels..while playing Rihanna's song.(she gets up and starts signing and dancing)... don't know if you could take it...Know you wanna see me nakey, nakey, naked

I wanna be your baby, baby, baby. ..wild wild wild thoughts"

We burst into laughter...This girl is insane!

- .
- .
- .

please share,comment and like

[07/28, 11:05] W: Insert 4

LISA

What a beautiful day it is today, the sun is out the birds are chirping.... But damn the temperatures are too high, the sun is blazing hot. Too bad we have to attend classes, we just finished freshening up, I wore my short red and black scotch skirt and a plain white short sleeve formal shirt and all star, yonela combed my hair and tied it into a messy bun leaving the short parts of my hair to run loose along the sides with my baby hair, she left her hair loose we put some lipstick, we called an uber

Yonela: "so how do I look?"

We just arrived in campus

This is the hundredth time she's asking me this

Me:"you look good"

I roll my eyes

Yonela: "just good?"

Me:"dude you look normal,you look great,beautiful "

Yonela: "are you sure"

Me:"geez yes.... Uzovele ujale kuvele kubeyi ntombi leTransfer student" (this transfer student might be a girl)

She gasp

Yonela: "yooh please don't say that....let's stay positive here"

Me:" how did you even know there's gonna be a transfer student?"

Yonela: "we were told before you came to

class,he'll be doing the same courses we doing"

Me:"so he's a foreigner?"

Yonela: "yeap"

Me:"ayi okay let's get to class then"

We went to class and the lessons proceeded

We were now on the last class of the day and my friend here was a bit disappointed

Me: "maybe he'll start next week"

Yonela: "argh after I put in so much effort"

I laugh at her expression

Me:"I don't know why you stressing yourself,its not like you don't have a boyfriend...by the way how is Chris?"

A smile creped on her face

Yonela:"he's okay"

Me:"okay?"

Yonela:"argh he's just too perfect for my liking, he's too sweet,too romantic, its irritating sometimes, everyday I love you,you beautiful, my angel,romantic poems,it's like we have nothing else to talk about besides him praising me....yoooh its driving me nuts and bored "

I'm now laughing my guts out, she waits for me to finish but I can't bring myself to stop,so we walk to class with me laughing at her,till she got irritated

After class we parted ways.

I don't have enough money for uber,Eish the beginnings of the month,I hate it. I start walking when a car stops next to me but I don't look I just pick up the pace

"May I give you a ride please pretty Lady?"

That voice,I know it,so I turn to look

Me:"argh its just you"

I jump in his car then we drive home

Quinton: "how boring was the house without me?"

Me: "that's what you think? Shame, I had the time of my life..I was hoping you'd spend another night yaz, why didn't you anyway?"

Quinton: "wow, you so mean, please get out my car"

I laugh at his childish reaction, then I remember my dream last night was pretty weird and scary

Me: "Q?"

Quinton: "L"

Me: "I had a very strange dream last night"

Quinton: "I knew my absence affected you somehow....what was it about?"

Weeh ayi this idiot

Me:"whatever....it was about your mother"

He keeps quiet as he parks the car in front of the house then looks at me

Quinton: "but you've never even met my mom"

Me:"yeah bit I've seen pictures"

Quinton: "oh...carry on"

Me:"it was like she was shouting for help but when you tried to get closer to help her the mist would grow more and more until you couldn't see her anymore, you broke down and cried then you said a short prayer,that's when the mist disappeared and your mother came back smiling.. "

Quinton: "so you think something like that will happen?"

Me:"No,it was just a dream,it kinda scared me,I just had to share it"

He looks at me for a while with his lazy side

smile,I kinda hate it when he stares into my eyes it makes me shy,but I can't look away I have to keep the eye contact cause then he will think I like him in "that way" or something, which I don't!

We get inside the house immediately when we get inside we head for the fridge,its our habit, we open it and stare for a while,I grab water turns out he also grabs water so his hand is on mine

Me:"I held it first"

Quinton: "but I'm more thirsty"

Me:"let go Q I wanna drink"

Quinton: "let's play rock paper scissors for it"

Me:"fine"

Him&I:"rock paper scissors! "

He threw a rock and I a paper so I won

Quinton: "cheater"

Me:"that was easy"

I say as I pour myself in a glass then give him but he decides to drink out the bottle.. I hate that

Me:"argh man Quinton, you think I'm crazy when I pour in a glass, ayi dude that's so disgusting, I also drink that water nxaa ahga"

I storm out of the kitchen to my room

"I'm Soorryyy!!"

He shouts

"Shut uuuup!!"

I shout back

He's so irritating sometimes,I change into something more comfortable like shorts and plain loose shirt with no bra,its too hot for that and its not like I'm going anywhere,I throw myself on the couch in the lounge where Quinton is watching cricket, I love this sport,well

I first didn't like it cause I never understood of until he explained it to me and he would watch it all the time until I grew to love it too. I lay my whole body on the couch and put my legs on his lap.

Me:"foot rub please?"

Quinton: "No"

He's focused on the game

Me:"pretty please or we changing the channel cause I want to watch the real now"

He doesn't like that show,he looks at me with a frown then starts massaging my feet

Me:"mmmh..thanks"

I close my eyes next thing I know I'm thinking of my grams and everything she told me,I love her so much,I can't afford to loose her so soon I still want her to live so that when I'm successful she will be able to see all that and be proud of me,I

want to flourish her with all the nice things she deserves,now she won't even be there when I graduate

I feel Quinton moving closer to me next thing I know I'm sitting on his lap

Quinton: "heeyy,don't cry"

He wipes my tears,I didn't even realise I was crying so I also wiped them,he pulls me into his embrace,his scent fills me up...this guy smells of money and power,I don't know how but,he smells of money, which doesn't make any sense cause he's nothing close rich,sometimes he can't even use his car because of petrol expenses

Quinton: "tell me what's bothering you...why are you crying?"

I shake my head

Quinton: "is it the same reason you were crying the other day?"

I nod

Quinton: "you know you can talk to me right?"

Me:"yeah.."

I sigh let me just tell him

although I don't like it when people feel sorry for me

Me:"its just...the other day I got a call from my grams..... She...she told me.."

His phone disturbs me he takes it and "princess" flashes on his screen that's his sister

Quinton: "sorry, can I take this?"

I nod

Quinton: "hello,candra"

....

Quinton: "whoa whoa calm down,where are y'all?"

....

Quinton:"I'll be there in a few"

He drops the call I get off his lap

Me:"what happened!?"

He quickly put on his shirt since he was shirtless

Quinton: "something happened to mom...I have to go"

Me:"I'm coming with you"

I say as I look around for shoes I find them and slip into my sleepers

Quinton: "No you stay here"

Me:"No! I'm coming with you Quinton, end of discussion! "

He was in a rush so he didn't argue with me

Quinton: "lock the door"

I locked,he is driving like a maniac

Me:"slow down,please! "

Did he listen to me? Like hell...we got to the hospital, but this was a private hospital

Me: "you sure this is the right hospital? "

He ignores me as we rush inside to the reception

Quinton: "Mrs O'Brien"

Receptionist: "the doctor is still attending her please wait by the waiting area"

We walk to the waiting area when I see a beautiful young girl, she's dressed simple but looks like a million dollars, who looks exactly like Quinton, they hug each other, then she looks at me with blood shot eyes like she's been crying she comes and hugs me too more like squeezes me like she's missed me so much, but it's my first time meeting her

Her: "you must be Lisa"

Me:"you must be Candra"

She gives me a weak smile

I knew Quinton has a sister and two brothers
but I didn't think they'd look this much alike

Me:"where are your other brothers"

Candra: "they overseas, so they can't come"
overseas? I didn't know that,how can they
afford to be overseas?

Me:"oh?..what are they doi....."

Doctor: "good evening"

Quinton: "is she okay? What happened? Is she
awake?"

Candra:"can we see her"

Doctor: "she had a heart failure, but we
managed to stabilize her,but it might take some
time before she wakes up,she's in a minor
coma"

Candra broke down but Quinton remained normal, Candra's cry made me shed tears too as I was embracing her

Quinton: "can we see her?"

The doctor lead us to her ward, where she was laying there lifeless, Candra broke down even more I was calm but the tears were streaming down, I couldn't read Quinton he was emotionless

Candra talked to her mother she she was done she asked to leave, she left, I was now with Quinton and his mother

Me: "aren't you going to say something? "

He ignored me, he got up and kissed her forehead then walked out, I remained in there alone with her

Me: "it was nice finally meeting you Mrs O'Brien, although this is not the best way, I pray that you wake up very soon"

I looked at her she is so beautiful she's white(race) with dark black hair

I stood up and went to the car where Quinton was waiting for me he was sitting on the bonnet facing down,I went and stood in front of him,I lift his face and found he's crying so I just embraced him

Me:"sshhh everything will be okay"

He held me around my waist then got down from the car to hug me properly after a while he let go and put his hands in his pocket

Quinton: "thank you"

Me:"for?"

Quinton: "everything"

I just smile cause I know what he means

Me;"what are Roomies for"

He's smile disappeared

Quinton: "let's get going Roomie, you still owe me an explanation"

I hoped he'd forget about that, I don't feel like talking about her, especially now that this whole thing of his mother just happened, one of us has to be strong, we can't both be emotionally weak like this

.

.

.

.

please like and comment, mention and share
if comments are booming, I'll drop another
insert later

[07/28, 11:05] W: continuation

LISA

Before he starts the car he asks me

Quinton: "so tell me,why were you crying?"

I sigh

Me:"my grams,she told me she had gone to see a doctor a few months back and she.she found that she has cancer,I guess it had already spread since she already has limited days to

live.....she will die Quinton.... She will die and leave me alone in this cruel world...I'll have no one "

I wipe the tears steaming down he wipes them too then hugs me I cry on his shoulder

Quinton: "I'm so sorry to hear that,I had no idea you were carrying such a load,you won't be alone,I'll be right here,I'll always be right here with you,through it all,it won't always be like this,we'll make it through, struggles don't last forever"

I'm now calm so I get off his embrace

Me:"I don't know what I'd be without you...thanks for everything, you my everything "

Quinton: "you mean a big part of my life now Lisa, so I'd do anything to keep you happy, and tonight I want us to just be carefree"

Me:"what do you mean?"

We drove home in silence,when he suddenly parked the car in front of a pub

Me:"and then? "

Quinton: "its Friday, come on let's distress a lil"

Me:"Q,I don't think this is the right time to be....."

He doesn't wait for me to finish when he jumps off,I also get off and follow him. We get there and sit by the chairs opposite the bar

Quinton: "give us ten shots"

I raise my brows at him warningly he winks

Me:"Quinton do you know how expensive these are?"

Quinton: "come on live a little will you"

Me:"you can drink,but one of us has to be sober to drive"

Quinton: "come on only five shots that won't get you drunk"

Me:"No Quinton "

Quinton: "please"

He gives me those puppy eyes,I hate it,he's tooo cute

I shake my head, I'm not falling for those again

Quinton: "I'll do anything you want me to do for rest of the month"

He blinks continuously curving his lips upside down

Me:"anything huh?"

Quinton: "anything that's everything"

Me:"wait"

I take out my phone from my pocket then go to voice record I put it near his mouth

Me:"what was that?"

He laughs

Quinton: "I'll do anything you want me to do"

Me:"anything that's? "

Quinton: "everything"

Me:"promise?"

Quinton: "I promise you lilly"

Me:"good"

I stop and save it then put my phone back,I'm so going to take advantage of that promise

The shots came and we started racing on who will finish first,he beat me cause I couldn't stand the taste I was still on my third shot when he finished all his five

Quinton: "wow,are you even trying?"

Me:"its bitter"

He asked for lemons

Quinton: "here,this will make it better"

I sucked the lemon and it was nice

Me:"let's go again,last time so that I beat you"

Quinton: "can't you accept defeat?"

Me:"you know that ain't me"

We drank more next thing I know the drinks are just coming, I felt my eyes getting heavy and my head spinning a bit I tried to stand to test how drunk I am so I went to use the restroom.

I came back

Me:"Q?"

He was trying to get rid of two girls who were throwing themselves at him

Quinton: "ladies,please, I have a girlfriend"

He kept on laughing,he's drunk

Girl 1:"I don't see her anywhere "

I feel him pull me to stand in front of him then wrapped his arms around me from behind ,I was now facing these girls

Quinton: "there she is,my beautiful girlfriend....

Right beautiful girlfriend of mine?"

I nod

Me:"yeap my beautiful boyfriend "

Girl 2:"I don't believe y'all, you just wanna get rid of us"

Quinton turned me around and his cold lips smashed on mine I kissed him back I felt my whole body shiver my already weak knees couldn't take it,he broke it after a while leaving me breathless and kind of wanting more? No you don't want more Lisa you don't, in fact you regret this,you should not let it happen again, you hate him for this,and now you should stop staring at his lips...Gosh what's wrong with me?

Quinton (looking into my eyes): "do you believe us now?"

Girl 1:"we so sorry,we'll leave y'all be"

We were still staring at each other we didn't

even see them leave

Quinton: "let's get out of here"

Me:"where to?"

Quinton: "you'll see,tonight the city runs by our rules"

Me:"Okay?"

Quinton(inspirational voice): "No I need you to believe it,tonight the city is ours"

Me(unsure):"tonight the city is ours?"

Quinton: "louder and believe in yourself!"

Me(louder):"Tonight the city is our!!!"

I shouted

Quinton: "that's the spirit, let's go paint the city red"

We rushed out of the pub to the car

Me:"but I want it orange"

Quinton: "fine...let's make it fair,we'll paint it red and orange"

Me:"fair enough "

We laugh at our stupidity, gosh we drunk,he speeds off and for the first time I'm enjoying the speed I feel so carefree like I have nice life problems

We drive to Sandton city mall

Me:"this place is for rich people, I don't think we should rule this side of the city"

Quinton: "the whole city is ours now come"

He parked the car then we walked passing some shops,most were already closed a few were open

Quinton: "there a nice jewelry store"

We went in some very beautiful store,with high security

We were looking around, yooh the prices of all

these diamond necklesses and rings are on sky high level,there's this specific ring that caught my eye, its sooo stunning but damn its 800000

They are mad

I can't stop staring at it goes with a neckless which is 500000

Me(talking to myself): "do people even buy these ridiculously expensive things"

Quinton:"everyday"

He startled me

Me:"I forgot you were here"

Quinton: "I see you like that one"

I look at it once more

Me:"naah diamonds are not my thing "

Quinton: "yeah right..diamonds are best friends with girls...wait is it girls are friends of diamonds, friendship is in between the girl and

diamonds.... Whatever.. But yeah the saying has girls and diamonds and friends in it"

I'm laughing my guts out

Me:"its...a diamond is a girl's best friend"

Quinton (laughing): "yeah yeah....so what was the point of this conversation again?"

I shrug my shoulders

Me:"let's get out of here,its too shiny"

Quinton: "yeah its blinding me"

We walk out laughing at sweet nothing

We got out of the mall then went to some nice shop around town

Quinton: "look for anything you like here,just one thing though"

Me:"okay,let's do this I need a new small bag to fit my text books "

We head to the bags but everything in this shop

is expensive

Me:"they too expensive Quinton "

Quinton: "which one do you like?"

Me:"this one"

He takes it

Me:"Quinton, this is R500,we still need to buy groceries, remember "

Quinton: "I told you, the city is ours tonight,our rules"

He pit the bag around him

Quinton: "take my hand"

I took his hand and he held me tight

Quinton: "you can run right?"

Me:"yeah,why?"

He pulls me and we walk towards the door

Me(whisper): "Q we have to pay"

He shushes me we get out of the store then the alarm goes off

He starts running I first hesitate

Me:"Quinton!.. Wait..no..what..yoh"

I saw security coming I made a run for it following Quinton I ran as fast and far as my legs could take me

Security: "stop! Stop!"

I was keep stumbling cause I'm still drunk...we lost the security

But we kept on running I saw Quinton slowing down but my legs couldn't let me I passed him as I was running for my life

"Lisa!! Wait! Slow down,we lost them"

Fear overtook me I couldn't stop it felt like the security was right behind me,I felt someone grab my arm almost making me fall but he caught me and locked me into his arms

Quinton: "I said slow down"

I was breathing very heavily, I had so many questions I wanted to ask him, but I just laughed instead he laughed too I cracked up and laughed really hard we both fell on the ground on our butts and laughed our butts out

Me: "that.... Was.....so....fun!!!"

We continued laughing

Quinton: "I knew you'd like it"

Me: "like it?....I loved it, whoa what a thrill"

Quinton: "you the best"

Me: "we should never go to that side of town again, I'm sure they'll see us on the camera footage.... "

Quinton: "we'll be most wanted"

I laughed at how cool he made that sound when it's actually a bad thing

Me(laughing): "I'll go to jail!"

Quinton (laughing): "might be sentenced for yeeears"

Me(laughing): "my life is over...I can just forget about graduating"

Quinton(laughing): "goodbye dreams"

Me(laughing): "hello orange jumpsuit"

We laughing so hard right now but we are in deep shit we leave the car,Quinton calls an uber cause we too scared to go back for the car

We now in the uber we both sat at the back

Me:"hello Mr bus driver"

Driver: "hello"

Quinton: "this is not a bus? Is it?"

We bust out laughing

Driver:"where to?"

Me:"Eish, please just take us home neh"

Driver: "okay, and where is that?"

Quinton: "by our house... Durh"

He looks at me as if he's asking if is the driver
"okay"

I laugh at him

Driver: "please tell me the name of the location"

Me: "by Quinton and Lisa's place"

We keep looking at each other and laugh

Driver: "I'm gonna have to ask y'all to please
jump off if you can't tell me your location"

Quinton: "okay okay geez no need to be rude
about it"

Me: "yeah..we paid money kaloku"

Quinton: "you have?"

Me: "you haven't? "

he shrugs he's shoulders

We laugh again, shit alcohol makes us dumb

Quinton gives the driver the location in the GPS since we can't direct him he started the car and drove

Quinton: "so Mr bus driver, what is it that you do, like for a living?"

Me: "what the fuck? He drives an uber hello?"

Quinton: "oh yeah, okay fine, ... so how is it like being a driver?"

Me: "the same way its like when you drive yourself "

Quinton: "mmh okay that must be pretty awesome then"

Me: "not everyone speeds like you"

Quinton: "do you have a girlfriend?"

Me: "of cause he does, look at him, he's a charmer"

Quinton: "are you the driver now?"

Me:"do I look like a driver to you?"

Quinton: "you not so shut up and let the drivers have a convo here"

Me:"I can drive too ayibo"

Quinton: "so have you ever been in jail?"

Before I could answer Quinton put his hands over my mouth blocking me from talking

Quinton: "so have you"

Driver: "not that I remember"

Quinton: "you sure,cause you look like someone whose been there"

I try to talk but he tightens his grin over my mouth

He doesn't answer I manage to remove his hand from my mouth

Me:"if you have please tell us how it's like,we

might be going there soon"

Driver: "what?"

He sounded shocked

Me:"don't worry we hid our tracks they'll never find it"

Quinton looks at me and smiles

Quinton: "yeah I mean we disposed it where no one will ever find it"

Driver: "what exactly did y'all do?"

Me:"we really would like to tell you but..."

Quinton: "you can't live to tell the tale"

Driver: "are y'all murders?"

I could sense the fear in his voice

Me:"we choose not to label ourselves "

Quinton: "yeah..so you've been to jail before?"

Driver: "errm yeah..but it was for assault, I only

spent one night in a cell so I won't say I've been in jail"

Me:"so you've been to jail but

Quinton: "not really into jail jail"

He stops the car and we've reached home

Me(singing): ""Thank you Mr. Bus driver, bus driver, bus driver. Thank you Mr. Bus driver for the safe ride, cause your friends are my friends, and my friends are your friends, thank you Mr. Bus driver for the safe ride."

Driver: "please get out of my car"

He sounded sacred and irritated

Quinton: "heeyyy,you will not get my money if you don't be nice"

Driver: "you can keep y'all dirty money"

Me:"not even a thank you Mr bus driver? after I sang so beautifully "

Quinton: "let's go babe he doesn't deserve it,he should be arrested for not having manners"

we got off ,he drove off in a speed of lightening

Quinton: "looks like someone will be going back to jail tonight, for reckless driving"

We burst into laughter as we make our way inside,we can't even keep it down,I'm sure the driver was irritated by the million questions we were asking him which I was answering by the way

I jump on Quinton's back for a piggy ride but we both fall flat

Me(laughing): "ooouuuch"

Quinton: "what the hell were you trying?"

Me:"I wanted you to carry me bed I'm tired of stumbling "

We laugh and help each other up,he piggy ride me to the room but heads to his room instead,

we fall on the bed

Quinton: "what a night!"

Me:"we really painted the city red"

Quinton; "we'll be painting it orange in jail
sometime"

We burst out laughing

.

.

.

please share this page guys it needs likes

[07/28, 11:05] W: Insert 5

LISA

Me:"daddy!!!"

I ran up to him and he scoops me up and spins me around in a hug

Dad:"My Angel...how's daddy's little princess? "

Me: "good,how's daughter's big king?"

Dad:"Awesome!"

Me(whisper):"did you bring me the secret diamonds today?"

Dad(whisper): "today I got you two"

I gasp in excitement

He hands me two small shiny diamonds

Dad:"where are you hiding the rest?"

Me(giggles): "I can't tell you that silly,its my secret"

He laughs

Dad:"that's a good girl,once you turn twenty one,then you can take them okay"

Me:"I know,then I can buy that aeroplane I showed you,remember"

Dad:"yes baby,you can buy yourself whatever you want"

Me:"are you staying over tonight? "

Dad:"I'm sorry my princess, not today,you know I'll see you longer on December right?"

Me:"please don't go,I miss you"

Dad:"daddy has to work baby"

Me(crying):"please daddy,please don't go! "

Dad:"mommy will be here,I'll ask grams to buy

you some chips huh?"

He got up and took his briefcase, I wrapped my little body around his leg

Me:"you just got here,please,don't leave please my king"

He picks me up pecks my lips and forehead

Dad:"daddy loves you"

He put me down and hurried out

I ran after him but stopped as I realise I was by the gate which I'm not allowed to leave

Me(shouting): "come back daddy!

Please,dad!...daddy!...daddy!"

....

"Daddy"

I open my eyes I realise I'm in bed,all sweaty,I hate it when I get these dreams,its been a long time since I dreamt about my dad,I wonder,my

dreams usually have a meaning sometimes I dream something that might happen,my grams says it a gift,I hate it though.

Gosh my head is buzzing I close my eyes as I listen to the head,I quickly open them again as I realise that I'm not in my bed I look around and I'm in Quinton's bed,I don't remember anything from last night after we left the pub, Eish I can't remember, I look at myself and I'm naked at the top...holy father let it not be what I think it is,Quinton is busy snoring, I close my eyes as I slowly pull up the balnket, I open one eye and I'm butt naked

Me(panicking): "fuck no no fuck"

I lift the blanket again to see Quinton and he's also butt naked

My heart accelerates

Me:"what have we done?"

I feel my nunu but it feels fine,maybe Quinton

has a small dick?

I lift up the blanket again to have a peak but he makes a sound and starts moving, he moves closer to me then wraps his arms around me then throws his legs over me then holds me close as he continues snoring softly, he's still in very deep sleep, oh my, I can feel it..on my thigh, I need to get out of this position before I lose my senses and start imagining things

I shake him

Me:"Quinton.,....wake up"

He groans

Me:"wake up Q"

He slowly opens his eyes he looks up at me then he smiles

That's when I realise my breasts are exposed so I cover with my arm

Me: ",hey what you looking at?"

Quinton: "you...morning... Ouch my head"

He untangles himself from me at long last!

Me:"do you remember anything from last night?"

"

He keeps quiet for a while..then he laughs

Me:"what happened? I need to know "

Quinton: "you don't remember?"

I shake my head

Me:"can you first start by explaining why are we butt naked, on your bed,together?"

Quinton: "damn,I'll never forget...damn girl..you freaky"

My eyes pop out...I'm freaky?

Me:"oh no! You mean we?...I?...like?"

I was talking with my hands

Quinton: "it was magical"

This can't be, why can't I remember

Me: "we did it?"

Quinton: "we did it like no one else has ever done it"

Yoh how can I be so cheap? I'm never having alcohol again if it makes me so loose, and with my friend of all people, I hate myself

Me: "oh my God, I'm so ashamed, how was I? I mean like you know"

Quinton: "we were so tight girl....you one crazy ass when you drunk"

He's laughing, why is he laughing? I feel tears threatening

Me; "I can't believe this"

Quinton: "me too"

Us: "we had sex\we robbed a shop"

We look at each other

Me:"wait...what?"

He looks at me perplexed

Quinton: "sex?...what are you talking about?"

Me:"wait... What are you talking about!?"

Quinton: "I'm talking about what happened last night"

Me:"we robbed a shop?"

Quinton: "yeah"

Now I'm confused

Me:"so we didn't have sex?"

Quinton: "what..no..of cause not"

Me:"then why are we naked"

He laughs

Quinton: "you said you were feeling hot and you were so wasted so your shorts were too tight on you so when I was helping you undress the panty slipped down with the shorts,while I was

still undressing you,you were undressing me,you were so horny you asked me to fuck you,I wasn't going to though because you were too drunk and I wouldn't take advantage of you like that,by the time we were both naked you were fast asleep you passed out and so I tucked you in and we slept innocently"

I breath out

Me:"phew...wait you saw my naked?"

He chuckles

Quinton: "don't worry its nothing I've never seen"

I gasp then punch him on his shoulder

Me:"never again!"

Quinton: "wouldn't bet on that if I were you"

Me:"and what makes you think I'll allow you to see me naked again?"

He gets under the blanket then comes back out,I was moving my hands all over my body

trying to hide my naked self

Quinton: "I just saw you naked....again"

Me:"mxm"

He gets under and out

Quinton: "and again"

He does it again

Quinton: "and again"

Me(laughing): "stop it"

I grab the sheet and walk away with it around me

"Lisa!"

I turn back to look at him

Quinton: "please don't go....please stay in bed with me"

Me:"okay but let me first get dressed "

Quinton: "you don't have to...I won't peep I

promise"

I walk back to the bed

Me:"close your eyes"

He puts his hands over his eyes.

I drop the sheet then wear my panty and his oversized shirt then go inside the covers

Me:"you can open them now"

He removes them

We slide in the covers he lays on his back while I lay with my side facing him,suddenly everything comes back to me

Me:"OMG Quinton! We are criminals! "

He looks at me and roll he's eyes

Quinton: "and you just now figured that out?"

Me:"dude the police are probably looking for us...that bag was expensive "

Quinton: "yeah you right"

He's too calm for my liking

Me:"oh so you used to these things"

Quinton: "no...but come on it was just a bag,we'll make bail"

Me:"but we ran away...we'll probably spend two weeks or even a month before they allow us bail,which we won't even afford,then we'll spend more time....oh gosh my grams doesn't have much time left and I'm already disappointing her...I'm such..

His lips are on mine,but it was just a peck

Me:"oh okay....what was that about?"

Quinton: "it was about,please shut up....we won't go to jail I promise you"

One thing about Quinton he never makes empty promises he hardly promises but when he does,he keeps to it

Me:"you so sure,how? Is there something you

want to tell me?"

Quinton: "I'm too young and handsome to go to jail"

I laugh at his Ego, his phone rings

Quinton: "hello?"

.....

Quinton(smiling): "oh hey Enhle, how are you beautiful?"

....

Quinton: "I'm okay"

...

Quinton: "I miss you too hlehle..."

...

Quinton(smirks): "mmmh is it?"

...

Quinton: "so what are you wearing?"

....

He laughs

Quinton: "that's all? Wow I can just imagine"

...

Quinton: "be careful now...I might just pop up right now"

...

Quinton: "you tempting me woman"

I clear my throat

Quinton: "look baby,I have to go okay"

....

Quinton: "I'm glad you do"

He drops the call

Me:"that was Minenhle?"

He nods

Quinton: "yeah,I'm sorry I should've took the call"

somewhere else"

Me:"ayibo why? We hiding things from each other now?"

Quinton: "No..I thought it would make you feel uncomfortable"

Me:"all friends want to hear their friends on a phone call with their partner, so that you can fill me up on the gossip, like for starters,how was the date!? Where did you take her? What did y'all talk about, how is she?"

He laughs

Quinton: "damn woman,one question at a time...well she's a..."

My phone rings interrupting him

Me:" sorry have to take this"

I sit up

Me:"my favourite meema in the world"

Grams:"Lilly my baby..unjani kodwa?"(how are you?),

Me:"I'm not fine grams,I can't stop thinking about you"

Grams:"ungazihlukumezi mntam please"(don't torture yourself my child)

Me:"nhliziyo yam ibuhlungu makhulu"(my heart is painful)

Grams: "jonga there's something I would like you to do for me before I leave this world"

Me:"I'll do anything for you grams,whatever you wish,it will be my command "

Quinton gets up and signals he's going to make food,I nod

Grams:"there's a wealthy family from P.E, I used to work for them as a maid,they are a very loving and warm family, they are the Johnsons,they have two daughters and one

son who was schooling overseas but he's coming back to South Africa"

I sigh

Me: "okay that's all good and nice...but why you telling me all this?"

Grams: "the son needs to get married so that he can take over the family business"

Me:"oh wow,good for him,hope he finds the lucky girl"

Grams: "the lucky girl is you Nana"

I laugh out loud I tend to forget how grams loves joking around

Me:"ayi makhulu wena nalamahlaya akho...ayikengoku yoooh"

(Oh grams you and your jokes,seriously now)

It goes quiet wait she can't be serious right now

Me:"oh my God! You serious? "

Grams: "yes lisa, this is my last wish,I don't want to leave you in this poverty,I want to leave you where I know you'll be well taken care of,I know that family they have helped us a lot during the years I've been working for them,I also would love to see you in that beautiful dress looking like the angel you are,I want to at least experience that,please do this for me"

I keep quiet,I can't believe grams wants to marry me off,I'm too young for marriage, I haven't even turned 18 yet,I never dreamt of getting married I always wanted to be an independent woman now she's ruining my plan

Me:"kodwa makhulu... I'm too young for marriage, what if I can't handle it? "

Grams: "you can,I raised you well,I don't like choosing you a person to marry,I always wanted you to marry the person you love,but now the situation,I can't leave you like this baby"

Come on Lisa think...you can't do this but you also can't not fulfill her last wish

Me:"uhm...what if there's already someone in my life that I love?"

Grams: "baby,at this moment its not about love"

Me:"but what if I tell you that he's filthy rich?....I love him makhulu and he's loaded which is a bonus, please don't make me do this to him"

She sighs

Grams:"how long have y'all been together? "

Me:"uhm its been eleven months now we almost finishing a year"

Grams: "okay...I want to meet this guy"

Shit!

Me:"uhm meet him? Why?"

Grams: "cause I want to see the man Lisa and have a few words with him"

Oh God..why me?

Me:"uhm oh okay ke ...when do you want to meet him?"

Grams: "I'm coming next weekend"

So soon!

Me:"yoh makhulu, but I'll be busy nje next weekend and..."

Grams: "no excuses,its that or I talk to the Johnsons about the offer they gave me"

Me:"No no, no need for that,next weekend is perfect! "

Grams: "good...Nana, I'm so sorry about this but I love you too much to leave you alone,and there's no hope for your mother,I want you to be well taken care of"

Me: ",it's okay grams I understand, I'll see you next weekend then"

Grams:"I love you Nana "

Me:"I love you too meema"

I drop the call,my heart sinks

Where the world am I going to find a filthy rich man in five days? A man who will wanna marry me and tell grams we've been together for almost a year,I know I'm beautiful, but right now I need a miracle

Me:"God please show me the way,what do I do now?"

"Brunch is served"

He comes in with a tray of food,eggs sliced tomatoes and toast with grated cheese over the egg,I love doing that

Me:"wow looks delicious "

Quinton: "tastes even better"

He puts my plate on my lap then gets inside

Me:"you not eating?"

Quinton: "we'll eat together"

Me(smirk):"you lazy to wash the dishes?"

He laughs

Quinton: "you caught me"

He says as he feeds me egg

Quinton: "why you frowning, doesn't taste good?"

I smile I didn't even realise I was frowning

Me:"its good very good "

He moves the plate and puts it on the table beside

Quinton: "what's wrong?"

Gosh this guy sees right through me

Me:"I'm fine Q really"

Quinton: "hey,your granny is an amazing woman, she's definitely going to a better place,I know it will take time for you to accept that she's

leaving you soon, but She'll always be with you and from what I've learned is that, People who are spirits can take care and protect you way better than when they were alive, you'll get through this lilly, we'll get through it together....okay?"

I nod and wipe my tears

Me: "whichever girl will marry you one day will be one lucky girl "

He chuckles

Quinton: "well I wouldn't argue with that"

He rubs his small mustache

Me: "Ego much"

He gives me back the food and we eat

Quinton: "can you come with me to the hospital later?"

Me: "of cause"

Quinton: "thanks"

He kisses my cheek

I need a plan and fast...yonela is good at these kind of things,I can't marry someone I don't know,...gosh never thought I'd say this but I NEED A MAN!

.

.

.

please continue sharing the page guys and mention its still early

[07/28, 11:05] W: Insert 6

LISA

Yonela:"she wants you to what!?"

Me:"yeap,and I only have one more day until she comes,if I don't get a man today,I might get married to someone I don't know....but hey what's the difference, if I do get a man today, it will be just the same,cause I won't know him...aaarrgghh my life is doomed! "

Yonela:"okay let me think"

silence

20 minutes later

Yonela: "I got it!"

She says as she jumps up

Me: "I got it too....why don't you wear a disguise yourself as a man, then we get married.. You already know everything about me so that's a bonus....oh my! I'm such a genius "

She looks at me for a while

Yonela: "for an intelligent girl who passes with distinctions..... You can be so dumb"

That's when I realise my plan is so wack

Me: "Eish that is kinda lame hey"

Yonela: "no that is the dumbest thing I've ever heard"

We laugh

Me: "so what was your brilliant plan Miss know it all?"

Yonela:"weeeelll....you do know that you live with a guy"

Me:"Eish yah,he has to go to Brandon's before grams comes"

She looks at me defeated

Me:"why you looking at me like that?"

Yonela:"you are the most clueless person I know...dude...Quinton is a male"

Me(confused):"yeah of cause he is...he has a dick too..let's state the obvious... What are you on about?"

Yonela: "Gosh do I really have to spell it out ?"

Me:"spell what out "

Yonela:"since you already living with Quinton...why don't you just ask him to be your boyfriend for the weekend"

My eyes widen

Me:"you mean like, he must be my pretend boyfriend? "

She nods,we smile at each other

Me:"No Way! Not Quinton "

Yonela: "why not,I mean y'all already so close he knows quite much about you than any guy,and he's cute which is a bonus"

Me:"yeah,but dude this is Quinton.. And he has a girlfriend...of which he's been dating for almost a whole week now....and it looks like he really likes her"

Yonela: "So?....you only asking him to pretend, its not like you'll have to marry him for real or anything like that"

Me:.....

Me:"I don't know..."

Yonela: "do you have another brilliant idea?
Cause the way I see it,you don't have a much of

a choice, I know you hot friend but trust me you can't find a perfect guy in two days...so atleast Quinton will pretend for you,you know how he'd do anything for you that one..which makes me wonder why are y'all stalling, why can't y'all just be a couple already"

Suddenly I remember something

Me:"anything! Of cause, he'd do anything that's everything! "

Yonela: "o-kay you being weird again"

Me:"he owes me,he promised and I have proof"

Yonela: "I know I'm a genius no need to praise and thank me for the great idea by the way"

I laugh as I get up and make her stand then I pick her up with her legs wrapped around my waist and spin her

Me:"thank you thank you! You are the greatest,I love you!"

She giggles then I put her down

Me:"damn girl,you heavy did you gain"

I spank her ass she jumps

Yonela: "you have to stop with your gay tendencies, I'm straight"

Me:"come on,we could've made a great couple if we had went with my plan"

Yonela: "oh please your grams is not stupid, she would notice before I even get inside that door"

Me(laughing): "yeah you right,I don't know what I was thinking...I knew I could count on you,I just wish I had told you earlier"

Yonela: "next time"

Me:"yeah next time I have guy issues...you the man"

Yonela: "not only guy issues hawu....(unsure).also with some books and stuff"

Me:"you mean outfits makeup and stuff"

We burst into laughter

Me:"let me get going... The weather looks like its gonna rain"

Yonela: "yeah the way its getting dark it might even storm"

My heart skips a beat

Me:"oh Dear God I hope not"

Yonela: "when will you get over your fear of storms?"

Me:"Never....I have to get going ,let me call an uber...Eish can you borrow me a few bucks?"

Yonela: "yeah of cause"

She get up and goes to her room while I call an uber,she get back and gives me R50

Me:"thanks,I'll pay you back"

Yonela:"oh please there's no need for that"

Me:"thank you"

Yonela: "the rain will catch up with you if you just going to stand here thanking me the whole evening"

I hate borrowing anything especially money,that's why I'll pay her back,I always do even if she insists I don't, I would sneak it in her bag when she's not looking but she always find out

Me:"okay okay,ungade undigxothe (no need to kick me out)

We hug and I make my way out,the uber get here in no time and takes me home,the rain pours as soon as I'm by the gate,I run quickly to the house,I lock the door,I'm soaking wet already,I take off my shoes,leave them by the door then make my way in,I find the TV playing but no one is watching maybe he's in his room,I go to the bathroom I take off the wet clothes

and hang them by the handle above the tub where we hang towels, I take a nice warm bath, I get out and wipe my body, the door opens and Quinton budes in, I half scream

Quinton: "Shit..sorry"

He gets out and closes the door, I was just covering my private part with my hands, immediately after he gets out I wrap a towel around me then brush my teeth before heading out to my room, I bump onto him again

Me: "dude, you everywhere "

He chuckles

Quinton: "sorry.. Oh I'm sorry about that I should've knocked"

Me: "that okay....its nothing you've never seen right?"

We laugh

Quinton: "you said it"

Me...

Quinton: "I was about to watch a horror movie"

Me:"oh yeah? Which one?"

Quinton:"I don't know,I have plenty,we'll see the scariest "

Me:"wanna have nightmares I see"

Quinton: "I'm no baby"

Me:"mmh"

I walk to my room and wear my short PJs I take a throe blanket and head to the lounge,he connects his laptop to the TV and puts a movie

Quinton: "get ready for some horror.... Let me switch off the lights"

Me:"oh no,I'm scared already "

He switches off the lights and the movie starts,I sit at one end of the couch while he sits at the other

Quinton: "I also want a blanky"

he gets closer to me

Me:"No no don't go there...wow she's so stupid "

Quinton: "whoa I really thought he was going to be the last man standing"

...,...

"Aaahh!"

I hide myself under the blanket when I hear him laugh at me

Quinton: "its over now"

I come out and the movie was finished

Me:"that was the ending?....after all of that surviving, she dies at the end..what a shame"

Quinton: "that was some scary shit"

Me:"tell me about it"

He packs his laptop

Quinton: "goodnight I'm off to bed"

I'm so nervous to ask him this...I need to ask him today

Me:"goodnight "

He walks away,Eish I couldn't do it,I'm scared he might say no

I go to my room and just lay under the covers as the rain gets stronger and the lightening starts

Me:"oh no,please let it not thunder,please God"

I'm shit scared of storms,every time it stormed I used to run and sleep with grams and we'd cuddle as she tells me insomi (tales)..

last year since I was alone I'd on all the light curl myself on the couch close my ears and hum a song,but I'd end up crying

*DOOO DO DO DOOOO!!"

I jump to my feet,that was a loud one,to make things worse the scary movie we watched had a

lot of thunderstorms

*DOOOO! DOOO!"

My heart starts beating fast I run to his room
and jump on his bed

Me:"Quinton! Quinton "

I shake him and he quickly sits on his butt with
his eyes wide open

Him:"huh? Huh?...what's happening? "

He touches me all over my face

Him (concerned): "are you okay? What's
wrong?"

Me:"I'm....

DOOOO DOOODODO !!

I get under his covers and bury myself into his
arms he holds me back

Quinton: "its okay,its just a storm"

Me:"I'm scared....

The thunder gets louder and the lightening brighter

Me:"please just hold me"

He lays me on his chest and holds me tighter making me feel even safer

We stay like that until the storm settles after an hour or so

Quinton: "its over now"

I sigh

Me:"yeah,finally "

I try get off his grip but its still tight

Me:"I'll go back to bed now"

Quinton: "but I'm feeling way warmer now,you doing a way better job than this blanket....please stay just until I fall asleep?"

Me:"okay"

silence

Well this is rather too comfortable, our breathing is the same and its getting louder by the minute,I don't think I can fall asleep, he's drawing circles with his fingers on my back underneath my shirt,he's shirtless and his muscular body against mine,I'm starting to feel some typha way

Me:"Quinton? "

Him:"You also can't sleep?"

I chuckle

Me:"yeap"

I move from his chest an lay on the pillow he turns and faces me with his arms still around me

Me:"do you still remember that time you said if I drink shots with you,you'll do anything I want....anything that's everything? "

He dares deny it,I have proof I'm so feeling my

lawyer vibes right now

Quinton: "oh boi what did I get myself into,I thought you'd get drunk and forget all about that"

Me:"hahaha,well your bad,cause I need a favour..... A huge one"

Quinton: "oh no,I'm now more scared than I was when that girl was eaten by her zombie friends"

I laugh

Me:"so? Will you do it? "

Quinton: "what is it first?"

Me:"no !matter what it is,you have to do it cause you promised me....remember? Or should I go take my phone?"

Quinton : "okay fine...just spit it out already "

I sigh

Me:"will you be my boyfriend? And will you

marry me?"

His eyes pop out

Quinton: "Say what?"

.

.

.

to be continued

.

.

please share the page, mention like and
comment

the reason I'm taking long to write is because
I'm waiting for likes, so please help me out
here

[07/28, 11:05] W: continuation

LISA

Me:"will you?"

Quinton:"whoa,Down,girl!"

Quinton: "I know you have a major crush on me, but hey what's the rush?"

Me:"oh please you wish I had a crush on you"

Quinton:"I wish? Let's just rephrase....'will you be my boyfriend and will you marry me?'.....mmh

you right you don't have a crush on me...Girl you obsessed "

I laugh ,I get out of his grip and sit on my butt

Me:"I mean like just for the weekend,three days and two nights?"

He chuckles

Quinton: "Two nights huh?....so like you the kinda girl who believes in marriage before sex?...and since you need some sexual healing you want me to marry you first?...damn,I know I said anything that's everything but this is....a lil extreme?"

Oh God, Lisa,you forgot to explain yourself..gee yonela was right I am clueless when it comes to these things

Me:"No man! I don't need sexual healing,and I most definitely don't want want to marry you...ever!"

Quinton: "okay first of all you really do need to get laid....second of all, ouch you didn't need to add the 'ever' geez I have a heart you know,and never say never ever cause you don't know what the future holds"

He gazes deep into my eyes, a bit of silence fills the room for a split second

Me:"first of all,I don't need to get laid I'm perfectly fine"

Quinton (mummers): "yeah right"

Me:"secondly I heard that.....thirdly I do know what the future holds and its not me married to you or anyone..and lastly my grams arranged marriage for me"

He walks out of the bed toward the door and switches on the light then comes back to bed looking at me attentively

Quinton: "she can't do that...I mean,you should marry a person you love,not a stranger"

Me:"yeah,but this is her last wish,so I can't let myself marry someone I don't know just because of money"

Quinton: "money?"

I sigh

Me:"yeah my grams doesn't wanna die knowing that I'm still living in poverty,she wants me to be well taken care of,and it turns out that a wealthy family she used to work for back in her days has a son who need a wife to take over family business, argh rich people and their stupid norms I hate them,anyway they offered grams this deal with me"

Quinton: "....."

Quinton:" that's...so absurd and sad at the same time...so if I may ask? Why did you ask me to marry you if you supposed to marry someone else?"

I take a deep breathe

Me:"I told grams that,I already have a boyfriend which I'm in a very serious relationship with for almost a year now,and he's filthy rich"

Quinton (smirks):"and I'm that handsome boyfriend? Who's planning on marrying you and fulfill you grams wish?"

Me:"didn't say anything about handsome...but yeah whatever makes you sleep at night"

We laugh ,I get out of the bed then pull him to stand up as I stand in front of him

Quinton: "what's going on?"

Me:"I want to ask you properly"

I get down on one knee

Quinton (girly voice): "OMGeee"

I burst into laughter before getting serious again

Me: "Quinton Ambrose O'Brien...would you make me the happiest woman in the world and

be my pretend boyfriend willing to marry me soon?"

He holds his chest and gasps dramatically, he nods his head continuously

Quinton: "Oh my! I always knew this day would come...but I didn't think it would be this soon(sniffs)"

Me:"is that a yes?"

Quinton:"Yes..Yes I will!"

He helps me stand as he grabs my legs picking me up and spinning me around making me laugh my guts out

Me(laughing): "okay okay!! Put me down!"

I was getting dizzy,he stops and he was stumbling since he is dizzy too

Quinton: "whooaa whoa!"

Me:"don't drop me"

He stumbles to the bed and falls on his back with me on top of him

I stop laughing as soon as I realise I was now laughing alone cause his starring at me with a happy smile on his face,I smile back then get off him but he holds me tighter

Me(heavy breathing): "Quinton..."

That comes out as a whisper

Quinton: "I'm sorry"

He losses his grip

I get up quickly and sit on my butt and so does he

Me:"so ready to learn how to be my long term boyfriend? "

Quinton: "I think I know how to do that"

Me:"No...no you don't, I've seen your relations with other girls and trust me that's not how my boyfriend should be...and we gonna need to

come up with a pretty good story of how we met and all that then I'm gonna fill you up on some of the history about myself and so do you about yourself"

Quinton: "damn..do we need to do this now?"

Me:"Yes! Tomorrow is Friday and my grams is coming"

I check the time

Me:"actually today is the day,so looks like we not sleeping mister"

He groans

Quinton: "did I really make that promise?"

I give him that "don't start with me" look

Quinton: "argh fine,what do you wanna know?"

I play with his cheeks

Me:"cheer up now,its only for a few days"

He smiles

Quinton: "well then we better make up the most in love couple, your grandma has ever seen"

I smile and bite my bottom lip

Quinton(smirks,):"oh you like that?"

I put back my straight face as I realise what I just did

Me:"No...now,come we'll start by moving my things to your room"

I jump on my feet and pull him he lazily gets up huffing and groaning

Quinton: "my poor sleep.... I'm so gonna get you for this"

Me:"you can start by moving that table over there"

Quinton: "mxxxxm"

I laugh at his grumpy self,Oh dear God I hope everything goes smoothly

.

.

.

I'm sure I don't need to ask y'all to like and comment anymore

the more y'all do it the quicker the inserts come

[07/28, 11:05] W: Insert 7

LISA

Me:"so after that day when my dad bought two diamonds,it was the last time he Bought them,I didn't know they were real at that time,he came back in in December as usual, looking rather a bit stressed ..*A tear fall breaks out my eye*..... I'm sorry, that was the worst day of my life,it was the day my father was shot to death in front of me,when my grams told me he passed away it was the most horrible and horrific thing I've ever went through "

Quinton:"does anyone know the man who killed your dad?"

Me:"yeah,but only my mom saw him,she was there too when they shot him,turns out mom

has once met him,since my dad used to work for him"

He hold my hand and wipes my tear

Quinton: "I'm so sorry for your great loss,I feel your pain,loosing someone who played a big part in your life is not easy to handle...our stories are totally opposite, you see my dad..(pauses)..

Me:" what? "

Quinton: "(sighs)..nothing... It's just I don't like talking about him.. I'm not proud to call him my father"

I notice the hurt in his grey eyes,I can never get used to how his eyes change colour that's why I call them rainbow eyes

Me:"you don't have to talk about it,I mean we already covered half of the things I need to

know about you "

Quinton: "my father was a wicked man"

He says with a breaking voice filled with pain

Quinton: "he ..he was involved in shady businesses, he was respected cause he owned all these businesses of his,I never knew what my father does for a living exactly until one time(pauses)..

Me:" you really don't have to...

Quinton: "until one day on my sixteenth birthday, he said he has a surprise for me,it was my birthday so heeyy I was excited, that's when he took me to some warehouse in the middle of nowhere,I asked him why is he bringing me here,he told me he's coming to teach me how to be a man,we got in there and there were three men tied up,men who had betrayed him,he shot one on the head, and told me that's how a man deals with people who double cross him,then

he..He gave me the gun...he told me to shoot them...I was so frightened, shocked and scared,looking at the other guy just laying there in a pool of blood was torture...I peed my pants that day,I pointed the gun at the other on his head,he was pleading me to not do it,he said he has kids,but my dad told me to never listen to an enemy's excuse"

One tear drop escaped his eye followed by another,I came closer to him and wipe them with my thumb

Me:"did you do it?"

Quinton: "I couldn't....but..."

My phone rings interrupting him

Me:"oh no,its grams"

His eyes pop out

Quinton: "shit!"

I stand up and answer the call

Me:"makhulu,...unjani?"(grandma, how are you?)

Grams:"ndise texini,okanye ndzoba lapho late ngabo ten kuya kuleven ,yoh kukude egoli marn"(I'm in the taxi,I'll arrive there very late,probably around ten to eleven, Jo'burg is far hey!)

I laugh

Me:"Eish yah sorry grams,I'll give you a nice massage when you get here"

Grams:"I'll hold you to that, ukhona umkhwenyana?"(is the hubby there?)

Me:"come on grams we not even engaged "

I look at him and he has a devilish smile on him face,I roll my eyes at him

Grams:"then I better have a word with him"

Me:"ayi nawe mah...please switch off your phone now,so you can save battery so that you will call us when the taxi drops you off"

Grams:"unyanisile yaz(you right).. I forget how smart you are"

Me:"I love you grams,safe trip okay"

Grams:"I love you too,thank you"

I drop the call

I turn back to Quinton

Me:"okay,you still remember everything we talked about right? "

Quinton: "Eish...I think so"

I hit his chest

Me:"No..don't do that"

He laughs at me

Quinton: "hey,do you blame me? I was sleepy throughout the whole planning"

Me:"let's just rephrase.....we met in university, you were coming for motivational speaking, you were asking questions to us students and we all

had our hands up to answer but your eyes landed on me,I answered smartly and that's when you realized how beautiful I am and smart..

Quinton: "I instantly fell in love with you...from the very first moment I laid my eyes on you"

We look at each other

Me:"you did?"

He laughs

Quinton: "yeah..isn't that part of the story?"

Me:"oohh yeah of cause..that.. Yeah"

For a moment there I thought maybe heargh never mind

Me:"remember,the reason we stay in this small apartment,I will explain that to her cause I know she will ask....okay so what else are we forgetting? Oh no I hope we not forgetting anything, okay our room is sorted grams will

sleep in my room"

Quinton: "you mean our spare room"

Me: "yeah, and and uhm oh you know you gonna have to pretend like you going to work in the mornings right? And come back in the evening"

He looks at me frowned

Quinton: "and what exactly will I be really doing the whole damn day?"

I laugh at him

Me: "I don't know, you a big boy you'll figure it out, you can go hang out with Brandon or something, or even better visit minehle"

Quinton: "wow, my own girlfriend telling me to spend time with my side chick"

Me: "yeah I'm a cool girlfriend"

He laughs

Me: "just remember the rules about that, no

texting or calling her when you in the house, my grams is very observant she will know if you cheating on me"

Quinton: "got it..no cheating in doors"

He laughs,I'm so nervous, I've never done anything like this in my life

I feel him rub my arm

Quinton: "chilax would you...everything will work out great,I mean its only two days, we'll definitely pull it off"

I take a deep breathe

Me:"you right, its just growing up I was never rebellious, I was the perfect granddaughter and daughter, excelled in school,won trophies got distinctions, loved reading....I'm not saying I haven't done mistakes and things that would disappoint grams if she found out, but this,I think this is the worst lie I have ever made"

Quinton: "I understand, but you doing this for the good,don't worry with your law student knowledge this lie shall be successful"

He says in an motivational tone making me laugh

Me:"of cause let's joke about it"

Quinton: "I won't disappoint you, sweetheart"

Me:"sweetheart? "

Quinton: "better start calling you pet names from now on"

Me:"mmh you kinda getting good at this, honey"

We laugh, I have classes today but I'm not attending I'm too tired,by the way Quinton is doing his masters in Aerospace engineering, I know right,he's very smart,but you wouldn't tell,he doesn't look focused at all and he's too cute to be smart....I mean that's what other girls might think

Quinton:"let's take a long nap while we wait,cause I'm too tired to attend anything today"

Me:"you right *yawning*..let's go"

We head to the room but I turn to go in my room

Quinton: "where do you think you going my love? Our bedroom is that way"

Me:"come on,grams is not here yet "

Its still ten in the morning

He raises his eyebrows

Quinton: "you should convince yourself before you can convince your grams,so,'pretend girlfriend boyfriend mode' starts now"

I groan

Me:"aargh fine"

We sleep on top of the covers and doze off

immediately

I'm woken up by my phone ringing, I grab it with my eyes still closed

Me(sleepy tone):"low"

"Ulaleleni emini nkazinyana!" (Why you sleeping during the day young lady?)

I lazily sit up as I check the time its late actually its half past nine

Me:"Grams,kusebsuku nje,sowufikile?"(its late at night, have you arrived?)

Grams:"yes you can come pick me up,the taxi is almost there,I hope you prepared dinner cause I'm starving "

Me:"yes grams,I'm getting ready to come pick you up now..don't worry dinner is long ready"

Grams:"okay then bye"

Me:"bye"

Shit! I totally forgot about dinner, I shake
Quinton

Me:"Quinton, wake up !"

Quinton: "mmh"

He goes quiet after that

Me:"argh Quinton wake up dammit!"

Quinton: "yoh ayi ngeke you so irritating yaz"

He gets up all frustrated, I love it when he
speaks Zulu or when he mixes it with English,it
gives me goosebumps and butterflies, I don't
know why maybe its cause he doesn't speak it
much but when he does he speaks it so fluently

Me:"Grams needs to be fetched..and she's
hungry I forgot to prepare supper,we overslept "

He gets off the bed and looks for something to
wear

Quinton: "calm down we'll order something, I know a place where they serve African home made dishes,you'll just put it in the pots and 'pretend' you cooked"

He laughs, I noticed how he emphasized the "pretend" in that statement

Me:"ha-ha-ha so not funny"

He gives me their number and we order in they come after fifteen minutes,

I set everything up,we even cleared the dinner table which we were using as a study table just so we make the place look a bit fancy

Quinton: "let's go Lisa,your grams is probably already there and you know how the rank is so dangerous"

Me:"yeah yeah,let me just....okay I'm done...let's go"

We head out to fetch grams she calls me just

as soon as we arrive

Grams: "the taxi just dropped me off,where are you"

I look around then I spot her

Me:"I see you..I'll be right there "

I hang up and run towards her leaving Quinton in the car

Me(excitedly): "Makhulu!"

She sees me and walks towards me,I attack her with a hug as soon as I reach her,we stay in that position for a while,I feel my eyes burning up so I let her go

Grams: "ndakukhumbula kemna sisi " (I missed you)

Me:"ukhumbulwe ndim nontombi" (I missed you too girl)

We laugh and walk to the car

Grams: "uzeno mkhwenyana?" (You came with hubby?)

I fake a laugh

Me:"yeap"

We get to the car I put her things in the boot,these are way too many things for just two days? Argh maybe she didn't want to have limited options?

Quinton gets out of the car and they hug and share greetings

I open the door for her to sit in the front but she insists on sitting at the back so I also get at the back

Quinton: "baby,please,you know I don't like sitting by myself in the front"

Great really now ? My grams smiles at me and winks,I giggle then go sit at the front

Quinton: "much better babe"

He holds my hand,we drive back home while making random conversations here and there.

I show grams to the room where she'll be sleeping, she was now taking a bath.

I was now preparing the table with Quinton helping me,suddenly I can sense he's nervous cause the spoons he's holding are shaking a bit.

I walk up to him

Me:"don't worry,I can sense she already likes you,I mean she hugged you instead of giving you a handshake, that's a good start"

He looks at me unsure

Quinton: "you think so?"

Me:"I know so..you'll do great,I'm sure Grams won't go hard on you"

Quinton: "I hope so"

He looks me in the eyes and we smile at each other

"Nizolibala kukncumelana engathi niyaqalana...khanke nibe nindiphakela kemna,ndibendisidla niphinde ke nincumelane emvakoko"(y'all busy smiling at each other as if its the first time y'all seeing each other.. Dish up for me in the meantime then y'all can go back to smiling at each other)

We laugh as I dish for everyone,grams insists we say grace before eating

Grams:" mmh.. You cooked very nicely Nana, if I knew,you having a man is all it takes for you to cook this good,I would've long allowed you to date..this is a first"

My mouth is wide open from shock,she just insulted my cooking?

Quinton laughs

Quinton: "actually,its the first time I'm tasting such deliciousness, I think she tried a new recipe, right honey?"

I squirt my eyebrows at him

Me: "well...I..you know what I won't even entertain y'all right now"

They laugh at me ,Grams has met Quinton for what? 2 seconds and they already ganging up on me

Grams:"so...tell me, have you two had sex?"

I choke on my juice,like really choke,I'm coughing non stop Quinton rubs my back trying to help me,he makes me drink water and I feel a bit better

Quinton: "you okay?"

I nod

Out of all questions grams. Wow this is going to be a long night

Grams: "so have y'all?"

somebody shoot me now

-
-
-

to be continued

[07/28, 11:05] W: Insert 8

LISA

Me:"Makhulu!"(Grams!)

Grams:"what? Its a simple question that needs a simple answer yes or no?"

Him&I:"NO"

Grams:"I don't believe y'all, ngeke you mean you two have been dating for almost a year,living together and y'all haven't had sex? In this twenty first century time,in Jo'burg, with a rich man? Niyaxoka"(y'all lying)

Me:"yoh come on grams,you wanted a simple yes or no..... And the answer is no, and Quinton is not like the other guys....he's different "

I rub his shoulder and we fake smile at each other

Quinton:"look,grams,I get where you coming from,a lot of men out here are always after one thing,but trust me if I was after that one thing, I

would've long got it and left, but that is not the case with your daughter over here, I'm not a guy who was into relationships but when I met Lisa all I wanted to do was just get to know her, she was just so mysterious to me and I was curious, so I drew myself closer to her, the more I spent time with her everyday the more I fall in love, Up until today I'm still getting to know her, everyday there's just something about her that makes me madly in love with her, so Grams my intentions with your daughter are way more than you think, she's still young and I understand she's not ready for some things, I'm willing to wait because.... Well because I just love her"

He looks at me and smile, I cannot believe my ears, damn he's good at this the way he's looking at me, you'd swear that he's really madly in love with me

Grams: "wow, ayi nyana unqabile nyan amadoda anjengawe anqabile (you are scarce

indeed,,men like you are rare) so how did you two meet?"

Us:"restaurant \varsity"

What the hell!

Quinton: "sweet pie, we met in varsity remember?"

Me:"oh yeah,that's what I meant"

Great I forgot my own story

Me:"yeah I remember it like it was yesterday ,Quinton being a young businessman, he came to campus to motivate us,he started asking us questions and I was answering and asking questions more than anyone that day...I guess I was inspired"

Grams: "or you were charmed"

I blush and giggle

Quinton: "not only was she the most beautiful girl there,she really captured my heart,I couldn't

focus on anything after that day,I couldn't get her off my mind...until I bumped into to her in that restaurant, remember babe?"

Me:"yeah,he asked to join me and payed for my lunch..we talked for hours and hours..I guess that's why it feels like that was the first time meeting him"

Thank goodness Quinton mentioned that,to cover up for my mistake

Grams is now smiling and nodding

Grams: "so Quinton, since you so madly in love with my granddaughter how soon are you planning on marrying her?"

Oh no

Quinton: "well..I...I really care for your granddaughter,and I was thinking on waiting for her until she graduates,I want her fully focused on her education and marriage being a big step I thought it would maybe distract her, having

her focus on being a wife and her books,it would put a strain on her,and I want nothing but the best for her....So grams with all due respect, can you please allow us to wait?"

My granny's smile disappears, she sighs

Grams: "I understand....I just wish I could also wait until that day.."

silence

Quinton and I look at each other with sad faces

Me:"oh..grams I..I'm sorry"

She puts her spoon down and looks at us

Grams(shallow smile): "I'm feeling tired...can we call it a night"

Quinton: "yeah,of cause"

I get up with her and lead her to her room,I open the bed covers for her,she gets in bed and I tuck her in

Grams: "can you please pass me my pills"

I walk to her bags and take out her pills for her, oh my so many pills it breaks my heart,I take them to her then head out to get her water I find Quinton clearing the table

Me:"I'll do the dishes"

Quinton: "I'll wait for you"

Me:"okay "

I walk back to the room and sit at the edge of the bed I give her her water and she drinks up,watching her take all those pills pierced my heart

Grams: "sulila kalok baba(don't cry baba) ,this too shall pass"

Me:"makhulu..did they suggest that you do operation? So that you will be cured?"

Grams: "yes,but its very costly and besides,its a brain tumor, I might die during the operation I

might live,its not a promised cure,I might even loose my memory, I can't afford it.."

Me:"but grams I could work something out, I can sign up for that scholarship to go study in Harvard law school overseas, they'll give me a huge amount of money there to take care of myself,imagine if I change those dollars into rands it world cover something worth the operation and I'd also....

Grams (interrupting): "shhhh Lilly.....come here"

I move closer to her and she embraces me,I hold back the tears

Me:"I love you grams,I don't want you to leave me this soon,I haven't healed dad's death,the wounds are still fresh,please let me do something, we'll even ask a loan shark,just anything "

She let's go after a few minutes

Grams:"don't do this to yourself nana, let's just make the most of this time,I know you and Quinton want to wait,but that will mean,I'll never witness the day you get married,I really don't want to leave you with no family....Let me talk to Quinton.. Please"

silence

I sigh

Me:"okay fine,you can talk to him"

Her face lits up ,I love it when she's happy,it makes my crippled heart dance

Me:"good night makhulu..*kissing her forehead*..sweet dreams"

Grams:"good night Nana "

I switch off her light,I watch her getting comfortable on the bed before closing the door.

I head to the kitchen I find Quinton running water in the sink for the dishes

Quinton: "hey,I thought I should start so far since you were taking your time"

Me:"well how thoughtful of you,thanks"

There's two sinks so I'm washing the dishes on one while he rinses and packs them on the dish rack

Quinton: "so how is she?"

Me:"she's fine I guess...although I'm not happy with the amount of pills she's living on"

Quinton: "what kind of cancer does she have?"

Me:"brain cancer "

Quinton: "why doesn't she do an operation, its still early she can still be cured"

Me:"I wish it were that easy Q ,those are really expensive, and it seems like there's nothing I can do,I'm broke,I would borrow from a loan shark but I'm afraid that will put us in more danger"

Quinton: "maybe I could help,the money I make from the club is not much but I'm sure I can...."

Me(interrupting):" No,Quinton, don't, you have your own family to take care of,you already have done more than enough for me..."

Quinton: "but Lisa I can...."

Me:" No Quinton, I said no,let's drop it okay"

He sighs loudly

Quinton: "so? Do you think the dinner went well?"

A smile creeps in my face

Me:"I have to give it to you...you quite the charmer"

Quinton: "well we all already know that"

He rolls his eye then blows off imagery dust off his shoulders

Me(singing):"He talk like this 'cause he can

back it up

He got a big ego

Such a huge ego

I love his big ego

It's too much

He walk like this 'cause he can back it up"

I was dancing with my shoulders while washing the dishes, he laughs at me then also sings

Quinton (singing):"I talk like this 'cause I can back it up

I got a big ego

Such a huge ego

But, she loves my big ego"

Him&I:"I walk like this 'cause I can back it up

I, I walk like this 'cause I can back it up

I, I talk like this 'cause I can back it up

I, I, I can back it up,

I can back it up

I Walk like this 'cause I can back it up"

He was doing very smooth dance moves but in a mischievous way making me laugh then we started dancing and while singing

Quinton: "you a wack dancer"

I laugh and splash him with water,he splashes back at me, we kept on doing that till the whole kitchen was wet

Me:"great now look at the mess you made"

Quinton: "you started it"

Me:"you made me start it"

We carried on cleaning the kitchen with him making jokes and telling funny stories, about himself which are pure lies and exaggerated

Me(laughing): "so you want me to believe that

you really have secret supper powers"

Quinton: "you'd be stupid not to...I mean look at this"

He takes off his wet shirt, and starts flexing his muscles for me making funny faces.....I love the way I forget all my depressing problems when I'm around this handsome fool....I mean fool around this fool

Me(laughing): "dude you look like you constipated"

We both burst into laughter

Quinton: "well its been a while okay...and normal girls would be drooling over all this"

He moves him body slowly and sexily ,okay does he have to look this hot,he should really stop doing that now

Me:"okay stop it now...geez,show off...just cause some of us can't move"

He comes closer to me and moves his face to my ear,making my knees weak

Quinton(whispers): "don't worry ..I'll teach you a thing or two,bub"

I take a deep breathe as I feel my stomach crunch like there's bubbles,I guess it what they call butterflies

Me:"let's go to bed"

He looks at me amused

Me:"I..I mean..to sleep..like let's go sleep,since its late and stuff..but like just to sleep...not that I want you to teach me a thing or two in bed..but like I meant..."

He was now laughing at me I punch his shoulder and pass him as I make my way to the room,I got in then took my big towel,Quinton comes in still laughing at me

Me:"mxxm it wasn't that funny... Argh you tricked me"

I was feeling a bit stupid and embarrassed, I went to take a shower,I heard the door open

Me:"someone's in here"

Quinton: "don't worry I'll take the bathtub"

Luckily the shower slide is not transparent, after a while I get out

Me:"please look away..I need to wrap my towel"

He looks away and I step out of the shower then cover my body

Me:"its safe now "

He looks my way

Quinton: "hey please pass me that towel"

I take his towel and go give him he takes it but holds my hand,for a while I freeze,I should stop looking at his body now,why are my eyes

disobeying me?

Quinton: "thanks,you can let go of the towel now"

He brings me back to earth

Me:"oh..sorry"

I let go and get out as fast as I can...what the hell is wrong with me? Control yourself Girl! For one day, This has already been one long weekend

- .
- .
- .
- .

guys I need more likes...please keep mentioning and sharing the page so I can continue the story happy...and all your comments matter so keep them coming.. thanks

[07/28, 11:05] W: Insert 9

LISA

I wake up early,so I can get started on breakfast, I first took a shower, then wore my short PJs again, I must say we couldn't sleep last night, I think its because we slept almost the whole

day,so we were just talking and laughing, I think we fell asleep after one somewhere there.

Anyway I'm now preparing breakfast, porridge then later I'll make English breakfast, Quinton loves porridge,he loves mixing it with butter and milk or peanut butter only,I taught him the peanut butter mix, but I only get to make it on some weekends because of school,I'm now mixing the pot when I feel strong arms snaking me from behind, my knees instantly went wobbly

Him(whispering in my ear):"good morning bub,mmh you making my favorite "

I close my eyes to the sound of his voice and the heat of his warm breath against my ears

Me:"g..good morning.... Yeah it'll be ready in a few "

I remove his arms from me and turn to face him

Me(whispering):"we don't have to pretend if

grams is not around "

Quinton: "but she's in the house, so she must expect to walk in on us, while we doing something people who are in love do,that's how we'll convince her...if we only touch and randomly kiss in front of her,that would be rude,and it would be obvious we just doing it for her to see"

Oohh yeah he has a point there

Me:"oohh you right,whereas if she walks in on us,it'll be proving that we really love each other without being rude and doing it in front of her"

Quinton: "exactly"

He says that as he pulls me closer to him our noses and foreheads touch

Quinton(whispers): "ready for our first kiss as a couple"

My heart is skipping quite a few beats,the

butterflies are back again

Me(whispers): "yeah"

He places his lips slowly and gently on mine,my eyes automatically close ,for a while our lips are just touching, His lips are so soft and warm. I feel his hand move from my back down he was almost by my butt when someone cleared her throat,we immediately stopped and I don't know when and how but I was very far away from him mixing my pots,we both turned to see grams walking into the kitchen and heads for the fridge without saying a word

I was kinda disappointed.. I don't know why...we were so close to kissing

Quinton looks at me and starts talking to me with his eye he clenches his teeth with his eyes popped out making that 'Uh-Oh' look

Me (clearing throat): "good morning grams"

Grams: "morning zithandani"(love birds)

She closes the fridge a bit disappointed

Grams: "anina fruit apha ekhapha ?" (Y'all don't have fruits in this house)

Me:"Eish, no...Quinton will buy it when he comes back from work,right honey?"

Quinton: "of cause.... Now would you hurry up with that porridge, I'm starving"

Grams: "don't let the man starve lily"

She smirks at me...heeee ayi umakhulu endinaye ngenye inhlobo

(My grams is really something else)

I just smile at her,then look at Quinton who has the same smirk

Quinton: "mxelele makhulu, akevah tuu" (tell her grams,she never listens)

Oh my Gosh he also speaks Xhosa!! So fluently, wow this guy is full of surprises,he always told me he only understands it but can't speak it,only

Zulu..akaloxoki !(Liar!) Now I have to act cool cause apparently as my man I should know everything about him

Me:"akevah nton ke wena...engath ngewuvala lomlomo wakho,tshin"(never listens to what? You better shut your pie hole)

They laugh at me ,I dish up and we all eat,grams was just dishing out my childhood stories, like how she once found me covered in butter in the kitchen sliding my body all over the place when I was three and she gave me one hell of a spanking,Quinton is laughing his guts out right now

Me:"but grams,why you gotta put out my business like that"

She laughs and walks out to her room

Quinton: "you bathe yourself in butter huh?"

Me:"mxm,shut up"

Quinton: "no wonder you like this"

Hey! What's that supposed to mean

Me:"like what?"

Quinton: "like this"

He looks at me up and down disgustedly

Me:"oh my gosh..like what? What's wrong with me?"

He chuckles looks at me up and down again then walks away

Me:"Quinton!.. What do you mean? No wonder I'm like what?"

I'm running after him to the room,he's by the wardrobe picking out clothes

I stand next to him

Me:"how am I? "

Quinton: "with what?"

He moves to the bed I follow him

Me:"like what did you mean? "

Quinton: "nothing"

He walks back to the wardrobe,he's about to turn to go to the bed but I block him

Quinton: "you in my way"

Me:"first tell me what you meant"

He moves closer to me

Quinton(softly):"I said..my way lisakhanya"

Me:"first tell me what you meant? "

He moves his face closer to mine...okay I think this is still part of the whole pretending game of ours..but why does he look so sincere, our noses are touching

Quinton(whispers): "you in my way bub"

I feel like my body is floating on air

Me(whispers): "tell me first"

He touches my lips with his thumb,he moves

his lips closer only an inch apart,he parts his lips ready to kiss me,my eyes close

phone ringing

I come back to my senses as his phone disturbs the moment, I move away,I hear him curse underneath his breathe as he walks toward the phone and picks it up

Quinton: "Minenhle...hey"

...

Quinton: "sure,I'm getting ready,I'll be there in a few"

I quickly walk out of the room,Quinton should've really took up a career in acting cause right now not only is he convincing my grams,he's also confusing me..and what the hell is my body doing betraying me like that, I can't afford to catch feelings, no I refuse,he's my friend and he's just helping me out,we can't complicate our relationship like that, we just doing this for

grams nothing more.

I go and clean the kitchen, he comes towards the sitting room where grams is chilling

Quinton: "I'll see you later gogo,I have to sort out a few things at work"

by the way if you in the kitchen the sitting room is very visible ,I hear him coming towards me in the kitchen,he hugs me from behind,he kisses my neck

Quinton: "I'll be back a bit late,have a few errands at work"

Me:"okay honey"

Quinton: "I love you"

He turns me around and hugs me

Me:"I love you too"

He looks at me and smirks,then kisses my cheek and heads out,

I breath out as if I was holding my breathe...well that was intense

Grams:"ayi uyakuthanda umtwana wabantu ndyakxelela(the boy is madly in love with you)..now this is what I call true love,the way he looks at you in the eyes,I know he would do anything to protect you,he's the one Nana, nguye umaqondana wakho(he's the one for you)"

I smile to myself if only she knew that this is nothing more but a big FAT LIE!

QUINTON

Well this has been a rather interesting week, living with Lisa has brought out a side of me I never knew exists, she makes me go crazy and want to do wild things like for example robbing shops, making fun of uber drivers oh and how can I forget, being her pretend boyfriend, I would have never in a million years think I'd do things like that ever, when I first met Lisa she was this down to earth girl, who knew nothing about the city life, she was lost and afraid, something about her bursary went wrong, I found her wondering in the streets right outside the club I work in, I knew she needed help cause it was late at night and she was carrying big bags, she seemed like she had nowhere to go, so as I watched her for a few

hours thinking maybe someone will come pick her up until I saw a gang of thugs surrounding her luckily I always carry my gun under my car seat so I went and scared them off you can never be too safe round here,I offered her a lift and she told me her story so being the gentleman I am I offered her a place to stay,I saw how uncomfortable she was around me at first so I gave her space to stay alone for a year while I crashed at my friend's Brandon, she was happy with that,remember the fake story I told her grams during dinner,well the story might be made up but its not completely fake,for instance the way I felt when I first met her,all that is true she was a mystery and I was curious, but I figured she's too good for me,I'm a Heartbreaker I'm not a serious relationship kinda guy and a part of me cares for her a lot and did not like to see her hurt specially being the reason of her hurt,the more reason to keep my feelings for her aside and just focus on

being their for her as a brother and friend,then I will know that I'll protecting her more than hurting her...the real truth about me is that I'm not..... No y'all not ready to know that.

Let's just say I grew up well off,but I just don't like the way I grew up,I love my family, but I'd rather be independent then dependent on people including my family.. I despise my father..he died in Jail after being caught by the police and arrested for killing one of the men that used to work for him in his diamond transportation business, the man betrayed him and was stealing from him bit by bit ,he found out and went after him and killed him,that was five to six years ago,in jail people who he had thrown in there ganged up on him and that was the last I saw of my father,I hate him,I hate everything he's put us through together with my brothers but mostly I hate his money all of it,its blood money and I want nothing to do with it.

Anyway I'm on my way to Minenhle my new girlfriend, I must say she is a very interesting lady, she got the body, the sexy swag and the beauty, she's from a rich family so I wouldn't say she's after my money, she even offered to pay for our dinner on the first date, so I guess she really likes me for me... or for my good looks, that are apparently the talk of town, I don't know I guess I'll find out as time goes, I think she's a keeper though, I really like her, she's sweet.... although I wish she made my heart feel like it's floating or give me smiles that send shivers down my spine or make me go insane just to the feeling of her touch or make me want to just stare into her eyes as I watch her laugh or make me want to listen to her crazy stories about herself... I guess I wish she made me feel like how Lisa makes me feel

I park my car by her drive way

She was already waiting for me by the door

wearing the most revealing dress ever,I walk up to her

Enhle:"baby!!"

She runs to me and jumps on me wrapping herself all over me

Me:"hey sexy "

I kissed her hungrily

Enhle:"I prepared you lunch"

Me:"but I want you right now"

She was about to say something I shut her up with a kiss and headed for the room,she didn't protest,I guess she also wants me,I was too on for foreplay so I just entered without warning

six hours later

We've been in bed for hours having sex

Me:"I have to get going "

I get up and put on my clothes

Enhle: "what's the rush, its only eight, and its not like you have a wife at home or a baby"

I chuckle

Me: "sorry babe, but I promised my roommate I'll be there before supper and I'm already late"

Enhle: "oh come on, they'll be many more suppers he'll survive"

Oh I didn't mention my roommate is a girl shit

Me: "you mean she'll survive "

Enhle: "what?..you live with a girl?"

She sounds shocked and angry

I go sit next to her, I was now ready to go

Me: "no baby..I mean yes, but I swear you have nothing to worry about"

Enhle: "you live with a girl who has a pussy and you telling me I have nothing to worry about?"

I laugh

Enhle (irritated): "nothing is funny about that"

Me:"look babe...uhm she's not my type,she's kinda of a farm girl,not classy like you,and argh you know how I like my girls,she's not even close to your standards, so seriously you have nothing to worry about "

I hate everything I said in that sentence, cause its so not true and if Lisa could hear what I just said it would hurt her deeply

A smile creeps in her face

Enhle:"really?"

Me:"you know I only love you"

She gasps

Enhle: "you do?..."

Me:" I do what?"

Enhle: "you just said you love me...its the first

time you said it"

That really slipped out I never say the L word

Me:"I guess I do....you different Enhle,and I've never been with a girl who loves me for me "

She comes to me and hugs me

Enhle: "I love you too baby"

We kiss

Me:"I have to go now"

She sulks

Enhle: "you should introduce me to your roommate sometime....(giggles).. I promise I won't make fun of her"

Me(chuckles):"okay...I would love y'all to meet actually... Look even though she's not my type,I still care for her,we've been through a lot so I want you to show her some respect okay"

She nods

Enhle: "yes sir"

We kiss again, before I head back home, I get there and the lights are off, I check the time and its half past ten, Minenhle lives quite a distance away, I open the door and lock it as walk in as quietly as I could, I see the TV playing but no one watching so I go switch it off, only to find Lisa sleeping peacefully on the couch, I bend to her level and watch her sleep, I remove the hair on her face and push it back to reveal her beautiful face, I pick her up as gently as I can, but her eyes open

Lisa(sleepy low voice): "Quinton...when did you?"

Me:"just now...shhhh"

I put her on the bed and tuck her in

Lisa: "your food is in the microwave"

Me:"okay, thanks ...goodnight bub"

She closes her eyes,I kiss her forehead then go
take a nice warm shower before heading for
bed

.

.

.

Just 500 more likes and we make a 1k....can we
do it?

[07/28, 11:05] W: Insert 10

LISA

"Lisa stay here..I'll be back yevah"

Me:"daddy don't leave me here ndyoyika(I'm scarred) those men have guns"

"I'll always protect you lily,don't be scarred all this will be over soon"

Me:"and we'll go home safely? "

We hiding behind his big van and dad is kneeling in front of me holding a gun,mom was inside the car,they said they were taking me to the park..this is not the park, I'm confused, I'm still a kid ,its so dark only street lights are on. I hear footsteps coming towards us

"Indoda ayicashi Mthethwa only cowards

do....now come face me like a man"

I can't see the man he's voice is coming from behind me,dad get up slowly then signals me to go under the car...I go under and hide,I can feel the uncomfortable heat on my skin

A loud commotion went on before I know it

BAAH! BAAH! BAAH!

gun shots are being fired...I scream as I get the fright of my life

BAAH!

More shot I remain intact under the car when I see his gun fall down followed by him kneeling, he lays on the ground and looks at me he tries to speak but it comes out as a whisper

Dad:baleka,...run

His eyes shut ,I start moving and run for my life, I can not die ,I'm running I'm screaming for help

"Heeelp!"

I instantly sit on my but,I'm sweating like crazy,what's up with me? I haven't had these dreams since I was a child..are they even dream if they actually happened? I don't understand, why are these nightmares coming back to haunt me ?

Quinton:"Lisa! Are you okay?"

I can't control my breathing my heartbeat is beating on fear

Quinton: "calm down,it was just a nightmare, you safe now"

He pulls me closer to him and hugs me

Quinton: "let's go get you water"

He gets up and helps me up as he leads me to the kitchen, I still have that image in my mind of my father lying there in a pool of his blood,his voice is still echoing inside my head

"baleka!.....run!" its like he's right here

I feel someone touch my shoulder I startle in fear letting out a panic sigh

Quinton: "its just me ..there's your water"

He gives me a nice cold glass of water which really helped me cool down to the heat I was feeling, I galp it down in one go

Quinton: "I think you need another glass"

He poured me more and I drank up

Quinton:"now come,let's get you off those wet clothes "

He holds me and leads me to the room he switches on the light and looks for something I can wear,he gave me his oversized basketball vest

Quinton: "I think this will be more comfortable and cooling"

I take off my clothes

Quinton: "whoa"

That's when I realized I just got naked in front of him, but right now that's the least of my worries, I realise I haven't said a word to him

Me: "thanks"

He switches off the light then head back to bed it was around 2am

Me: "please leave the lamp on"

Quinton: "okay"

I move really close to him and snuggle myself into his body, he holds me tight, now I feel much safer

Me: "don't let go of me"

He makes himself more comfortable and faces his body toward me with his one arm pillowing my head and the other around my waist then he pulls me into him tighter

Quinton (whispers): "Never"

My face is buried on his chest and he smells good...power,I wrap my legs around him as he puts his one leg in between mine ,I can feel every part of him and I feel like nothing will ever hurt me,I'm safe,I'm home.

Quinton: "don't worry you safe now...I won't let anything or anyone hurt you"

He kisses my forehead repeatedly, I tilt my head up a lil he kisses my nose,I tilt it up again and we gaze into each other's eyes,his lips smash into mine, I close my eyes as I enjoy his soft lips ,my tummy is in nots,electric waves running down my spine stronger than ever, my heart is no longer beating in fear but in excitement, our legs are moving all over the place,he gets on top of me and lays in between my legs as the kiss get heated,its now filled with hunger,longing,passion and desire ,I can feel his hard on,he was already only in his briefs cause that's the only thing he sleeps in,his hands are

running all over my tensed body and so are mine all over his muscled body, he squeezes my boob roughly but gently at the same time, he breaks the kiss and head down my neck kissing and sucking down my breast too, I was biting my nail suppressing the moans he was moving down to my nunu he slid down my panty slowly, everything was happening in slow motion, I don't know why I'm not trying to stop him,

"Uuhhh"

I feel him doing something amazing down there, I don't know what to do with myself, I grab onto the sheet biting my bottom lip closing my eyes tight as I try to suppress my urge to pee, but I couldn't anymore so I let it out and it felt good I think it was an orgasm, he comes back to my face and kisses me, I feel his manhood on my belly, he was butt naked

Quinton: "you sure you want to do this?"

I don't know what to say,a whole part of me is voting yes,I mean if I give it up to him,at least I know he'll never hurt me,since he's my friend and I already know he's in a relationship, he's the one of the few people I trust wholeheartedly,and,I trust he won't make me regret it

I nod my head

Me:"yes,I'm sure"

He places his forehead on mine,I feel him rub himself on my temple before slowly thrusting in...I scream as pain and pleasure fills me up

After a nice bath I head to the kitchen to make breakfast, grams is leaving today and I don't know whether I'm happy or sad.. I guess I'm happy that the pretending can now stop and we can go back to normal but I'm sad that grams is leaving I want to spend more time with her,but

not like this.

I'm now dishing up, I don't know why but I'm in a very good mood I'm even singing

Me(singing): I was gonna clean my room

Until I got high

I was gonna get up and find the broom

But then I got high

My room is still messed up and I know why

"why man?"

Quinton's says that part as he spanks my ass

Me:'Cause I got high

Because I got high

Because I got high

Quinton: I was gonna go to class

Before I got high

I coulda cheated and I coulda passed

But I got high

I am taking it next semester and I know why

Me:"why man?"

Quinton:'Cause I got high

Because I got high

Because I got high

"Nithanda insango na kulomzi?" (Y'all smoke weed in this house?)

We burst into laughter as my grams made her way to the sitting room while we were in the kitchen

Me:"its just a song makhulu"

I walked towards the fridge ,once you by the fridge the sitting room area is not visible... I was looking for water so that I make juice, I feel Quinton hold me from behind and bits my earlobe sending warm blood all over my insides

Quinton (whispering): "guess who wants to meet you"

Me (whispering): "who?"

Quinton: "Enhle"

Me:"oh? When?"

Quinton: "she asked for tomorrow and since grams is leaving I thought its cool"

Me:"yeah its totally cool,can't wait to meet her,the girl who made you fall "

I laugh silently

Quinton: "that's so not true"

He turns me around

Me:"about that bet,we never discussed it... I said she'll make a month and you said only two week...so what do I get if I win?"

Quinton: "what do you want?"

Me:"I want you to be my slave for a month"

He raises his brows

Quinton: "what if I win?"

Me:"what do you want?"

Quinton: "I want you to strip dance for me"

I laugh ..next thing I know his lips are on mine sucking each other,he pins me against the counter ,his hands slide inside my pants and grabs my butt cheeks

"Mmmh"

A moan slipped out my mouth and I broke the kiss

Me:"grams must be hungry"

"Kanti nenzani apho? Akuvuthwa na okudla?!"(what y'all doing there! Will food ever be ready!?)

We laugh and serve her her food and we all eat by the sitting room

Me:"I don't mean to rush you makhulu kodwa you should eat up fast,kukude eMthatha (Mthatha is far) and I don't want you travelling at night,who will give you a lift from the stop vele?I should call someone I know a dude who has a car he can....

Grams(interrupts): "I'm not going today"

We look at her

Quinton: "huh?"

Grams: "I'm staying for the whole week,there are things I still need to do here before I leave"

Me:"what?. .I mean like what grams?"

She can't be serious, I was hoping that after last night heated scenario would be the last time we sleep on the same bed and forget about what happened

Grams:"do I need a reason to spend more time with you?"

Me:"No grams,but its just,I I wasuhm who will take care of you..I mean cause like I have school and stuff"

Grams: "not to worry, its better here,then being alone there in my house at least here I can be with people just to talk to"

I feel my heart break by her words she must be so lonely there with no one to talk to and mom just coming back drunk or not at all is stressing her out

Me:"I understand grams....you welcome to stay longer"

Quinton: "yeah...uhm can I be excused?"

He gives me the 'we new to talk' look

He walks away to the room...I was thinking of something to say that will excuse me

Grams: "hamba uyothetha nomntu wakho, ndyabona ba nifuna uthetha,kaloku kukwakhe

apha...kodwa if akekho happy bandihlale ungazami umkumncenga ndizohamba andinaxaki" (go talk to your man I can see y'all need to talk but if his not happy with my extended stay don't try to convince him,I will leave,no problem)

Me:"nonsense, Quinton loves you, he doesn't have a problem with you being here longer trust me,I'm sure its something else,let me go find out"

I get up and kiss her forehead then head to the room and close the door

His sitting at the edge of the bed

I go sit next to him

Me:"I know hey "

Quinton: "now you told me only two nights"

Me:"Eish Quinton, I thought so too"

Quinton: "I don't know Lisa, this game we

playing, it doesn't feel safe anymore..."

Me:"are you bailing out on me?"

Quinton: "Lisa,we playing with fire,the longer your grams stay,the more dangerous all this becomes"

Me: "I know....but I can't marry a stranger I'd rather fake marry you"

Quinton: "Lisa,a lot of people will get hurt in the end of all this ...trust me its not going to end well"

Me:"you worried about Enhle?...don't worry you just tell her I'm your sister and that's our grams"

Quinton: "I can't I told her I live with a girl ,she would find it suspicious if I just say she's my sister after I convinced her that there's nothing going on between the two of us"

Me:"then just tell her I'm gay..yeah I have a girlfriend and me and you are just really close

friends"

He sighs and buries his face in his hands

Quinton: "more lies...this won't end well"

Me:"Quinton you promised me"

Quinton: "I know Lisa... But I just have a bad feeling about all this...just talk with your grams maybe she'll understand"

Me:No! You don't get it do you....my grams has forever been unhappy in this world....and this weekend seeing me happy with someone who will love me even when she's gone has made her very excited.... I've never seen her this happy..... You don't understand! "

I break down and cry...I can't deal anymore, he hugs me

Quinton: "shhh please don't cry bub....okay look...I'm one hundred percent behind you in all this,okay? I won't bail out now,I was just

worried"

Me:"we can pull it of Quinton.. I know we can"

He cups my face

Quinton: " it's okay lily.....I got your back...always
"

He kisses my forehead

Me:"and I got yours too"

We smile at each other,he pecks my lips then
we head back to the sitting room to welcome
grams for the rest of her stay

.

.

.

to be continued

[07/28, 16:52] W: continuation

LISA

(Short)

I'm in bed reading a novel by kat Martin,'beyond reason' is the title,its quite an interesting romantic book, I'm finding it hard to Concentrate though,Quinton is singing in the

shower at the top of his voice and I keep laughing at how horrible his high note is, I'm sure grams can hear him even someone walking past the house would hear him.

I hear the door opening I lower my book from my face and meet a fresh clean Roomie wrapped in a towel around his lower body exposing his tan body and water running down his abs. He was still singing the song we were singing in the morning dancing in a funny yet sexy way
Quinton (singing): "I was gonna make love to you

But then I got high

I was gonna eat yo pussy too

But then I got high

Now I'm jacking off and I know why"

" why man!?" I just had to say that part

Quinton:'Cause I got high

Because I got high

Because I got high

We laughed and he came towards the bed,he took his lotion and lotions his body,I stop staring before I start getting ideas, I'm just staring at this book now I can't stop thinking about last night's episode,I feel him get on the bed then I pretend to be more focused on this book, he grabs it away from me,then takes off my nerds....yeah i wear glasses only when I'm reading and writing though, he puts them on the headboard table

Me:"heeyy I was reading that"

Quinton: "no reading in bed,if you want to read you can go sit somewhere else"

Me:"But..."

Quinton: "no butts...its either you get your butt

out of this bed or sleep your butt down"

I huff as I reluctantly slide inside the covers

Quinton: "that's a good girl"

He goes switch off the lights then slides inside the covers,the room fills with silence,I guess last night's event is coming back on both of us,now I'm nervous to even touch him so I sleep as far from him as possible right at the far end and leave him at the other end,I close my eyes and try to sleep.

Its been five minutes now,he keeps shuffling and turning sighing and huffing as if something is bothering him...that's it I'll never fall asleep if he goes on like this I turn to face him then tap his shoulder

Me:"Q? What's up?"

Me:"you seem irritated, huffing twisting and turning, making loud sighs"

Quinton: "I don't know,I guess I can't sleep"

Me:"why? What's bothering you? Is it the whole grams thing?"

Quinton: "No...well a lil bit"

Me:"what is it mostly? "

He sighs then keeps quiet for a while he staring into my eyes,although the lights are off I can see him from the lights coming through the window the curtains are not that thick

Quinton: "last night"

I figured

Me:"you want us to talk about it?"

He nods

Me:"okay.....let's talk then"

silence

Quinton:"were you a virgin?"

I nod

Me(shyly):"yeah.....is there a problem? "

Quinton: "No..no that not a problem...actually that's a good thing,well for you..not for me..I mean like its.its..

I laugh

Me:" I get you,its not a problem..... Then what is the problem?"

Quinton: "firstly.. I think I should say thank you"

I raise my brows amused

Me:"for?"

Quinton: "for trusting me and giving me your virginity"

Me: "I wouldn't have chose anyone better...to think I almost gave it away to that jerk thato,who was probably going to give me some disease,nxa I hate him.....wait.....you don't happen to have the disease ? Do you?"

He switches on the lamp and we sit up

Quinton:"shit.."

My heart starts racing

Me:"what? What do you mean by shit!?"

Quinton: "I haven't told anyone about this..cause I was ashamed"

Me:"Quinton... Noo..you can't do this to me"

Quinton: "I'm so sorry Lisa, I got too caught up in the moment...I..I should've told you a long time ago"

I feel tears threatening me

Me(breaking voice):"Oh No Quinton...we didn't even use protection "

He starts laughing

Me:"what'd so funny...you happy that you not the only one infected now?"

He laughs even harder

I feel my blood boiling

Me:"you being cruel evil or just plain mean?"

Quinton: "I got you good this time"

Me:"what?"

Quinton: "remember how you pranked me?
Then I said I'd get my real revenge on you,well I
think this opportunity was a success"

Tears were already rolling down,I can't believe
this fool,how can he play like that

Me(crying):"that's so not funny Quinton! You
scared the shit out of me!"

I started slapping his arm really hard but I was
just hurting my poor hands

Me:"(crying): "you jerk.... That was evil..I saw my
whole life flash before my eyes"

He laughed and held my hand then started
tickling me

Me(laughing through the tears):"leave me alone!!
I hate you!! You big meany!"

He was on top of me tickling till I couldn't
breath

Me(laughing): "Leave me alone!!"

Quinton: "first forgive me"

Me:"okay okay I forgive you"

He stops

Quinton: "good"

Me:"let alone jokes..are you clean?..no offence
but you kinda a fuckboy"

He holds his chest

Quinton: "there you go breaking it again"

I laugh

Quinton: "don't worry,I wouldn't just sleep with
girls I meet in clubs and not protect myself..I've
never slept with any girl without protection. this
is Jo'burg so I wouldn't risk my life like
that...and I check every after three months,last

time I checked I was clean"

I secretly sigh in relief

Me:"now get off from me"

He gets off there was a bit if silence as I was still trying to catch me breathe and keep on giggling, I look at him and he's just staring at me with his lazy smile... There he goes again with that look that makes me shy

he looks at me like his looking at the most precious piece of jewel

Suddenly he has a worried face

Me:"what...what's that face?"

Quinton: "shit Lisa, we did the most stupid thing ever"

Oh wow,he regrets it,I should've known,he obviously loves this Enhle girl I'm so stupid

Me:"you think it was stupid? "

Quinton (confused): "what?..no..I mean we didn't use protection"

Me:"yeah so?"

He looks at me shocked

Quinton: "look don't get me wrong I love you so much but I'm not ready to have kids"

Me:"you love me?"

He raises his eyebrows in shock

Quinton: "I...I meant..No..

Something inside me died or fainted but its not functioning properly

Me:" oh"

Quinton: "I mean.. Lisa...look I ,that slipped out,I'm sorry I didn't mean it like that"

He didn't mean it...of cause he didn't mean it,he shouldn't mean it cause we only pretending when we say we love each other...we doing for

grams

Me(chuckles):"argh ayibo don't worry about it...it was a mistake we all say and do mistakes, and hey I didn't expect you to mean it...I mean you with Enhle and we best friends so that'd be crazy (fake laughs) am I right "

There's silence again but this time its really awkward

Me:"don't worry about pregnancy, a week ago or so before I came back from home, I went for the injection cause I wanted to surprise thato only to get the surprise of my life....so yeah Im not planning on getting pregnant anytime soon"

Quinton: "oh..."

Me:"I can't sleep.. So I'm gonna go watch TV now"

I take a small throe blanket and a pillow, I'm planning on sleeping on the couch cause with this awkward tension I can't deal ,I watch TV till

I fell asleep

.

.

.

almost getting there guys 280 more likes then
we make 1k

[07/28, 16:53] W: Insert 11

LISA

I wake up very early in the morning, I don't want grams seeing that I slept on the couch, this uncomfortable small couch ,my neck is killing me, I drag my feet to the bathroom and take a bath,I soak myself in there for a while and close my eyes

Me:"wow this tub is more comfortable than that couch"

"You didn't have to sleep there you know"

I open my eyes wide and they meet Quinton's.. I take my small towel and hide my boobs with it since the water is already hiding my lower parts

Quinton:"If you felt uncomfortable sleeping with me,I could've slept on the couch instead"

I keep quiet,I don't know what to say

Quinton: "I'll come back when you done"

He let's himself out I sigh

I should've known things were going to get awkward after sleeping with each other, but I didn't really think they would, I mean we've been kissing even a couple times before we started being pretend partners and we've handled it pretty well without complicating things, I just wish he never said he loves me or do I wish he never said he didn't mean it? No I wish he never said he loves me in the first place argh why is this even bothering me its not like I feelings for him

I get in the room

Quinton: "you done?"

I nod

He walks towards the door and stops when he reaches me

He is about to say something but he stops himself then continues walking out.

I get myself ready and dress up ,its a nice sunny day so I just wore my red short summer dress with ankle length gladiator sandals,I tie my hair in a loose pony tail, I put on red lipstick,powdered my face a bit then put some mascara. I make my way out I bump into him by the door, I move for him to pass but we move to the same side, we move to the same side again

I hold him and make me stop then move and carry on with my way to the kitchen, I make breakfast for grams first and put it in the microwave,I go check up on her as I wait for Quinton to get ready

Me:"morning grandmother "

She laughs a little and closes her bible then takes off her glasses and places them on the headboard table

Grams:"morning granddaughter "

I go sit next to her

Me:"how you feeling today?"

Grams:"I'm okay,although my headaches are getting worse specially in the mornings and I feel the urge to vomit "

Me:"oohhh umakhulu wam kodwa (oh my poor grams)....I made you breakfast, you should eat so that you take your pills..infact let me bring you your food now and water for pills"

I get out and fetch her food then pour her water

I turn to be met by Quinton...why is his presence suddenly suffocating me

Quinton:"I'm ready,we can get going once you done with what you doing"

I nod as I pass him I give grams her food

Grams:"thank you lily you such an Angel "

I smile

Me: "I have to get going now grams, I'll see you later okay?"

Grams: "khawuhambe uye eskoleni uyeke ukuthetha nam ngathi ndilusana" (would you go to school already and stop talking to me like I'm a baby)

I laugh

Me: "yoh ayi sorry ke magreeza..ndyalibala ukba awuqhelanga ukutheketiswa" (I forget you not used to being babied)

Grams: "amp! Suka!"

I get out laughing I find Quinton already in the car, we drive to campus in silence we get there

Quinton: "bye..have a nice day"

I just smile at him then walk away

I meet up with Yonela then we head to class

Yonela(whispers): "remember the transfer student?"

Me(whisper): "how can I remember him if I've never even seen him"

She rolls her eyes

Yonela: "argh mxm, anyway turns out he's doing his third year so he won't be in our classes"

Me:aaawww what a shame I was really looking forward to having him here with us"*sarcasm*

Yonela:"I heard he's supper hot,he's the talk of the campus this morning, too bad I didn't see him though"

Me:"I hope today you put on your best? "

She gasp worriedly

Yonela : "you mean its not even obvious, that I'm at my best level today?"

I laugh

Me: "I'm joking friend, you look hot, like hot sauce"

She laughs I'm very bad when it comes to complementing even dissing

Yonela: "you still suck at this"

I ignored her as I put on my nerds and concentrated back to the lesson

The day finally came to an end as we now coming out our last class, we still haven't bumped into this guy and yonela has been making us go around the whole campus so that we bump into him, I was kinda getting irritated

Me: "dude this is useless we don't even know how he looks we could've bumped into him so many times but we don't know cause we don't know him"

She laughs out loud

Yonela: "okay fine, but come on I'm sure we

would've noticed if his hot as they say he is...so far I haven't seen a hot guy we've bumped into"

I sigh

We were now outside campus

Yonela: "please wait here a bit,let me go get us some ice lollies in that shop there"

Me(smiling): "now you talking"

She hands me her small bag and heads to the nearby shop,by the way I'm using that bag we stole,its just so pretty,I laugh to myself every time I think about it can't believe the cops are not looking for us,hahaha

I find myself laughing

"I would also love to laugh a little today"

A smooth deep voice in front of me,I lift my eyes up and our eyes lock

"Care to share the inside joke?"

Damn! Is all I can say right now,he's looking straight into my eyes and I'm staring back,for a moment the world stops

Yonela: "sorry girl but there was only one vanilla so you will just have the....."

She trails off

Guy:"hello there"

Yonela: "h..h. Hi.."

We stare at him in awe

Guy:"are you ladies okay?"

I'm speechless

Guy:"oh okay... Anyway my name is Liam,but you can call me mncedisi"

We both stutter for a while

Yonela gathers up her courage

Yonela: "nice to meet you Mncedisi...my name is Yonela and this is my friend Lisakhanya"

Mnce:"nice to meet you both beautiful ladies,I'm kinda new around here,so I wanted to ask for the nearest town or something, I need to buy a few things for my apartment "

Yonela: "we could direct you but it would be better if I go with you since I leave in town vele"

I look at her..damn girl you don't waste time..I think to myself

Mnce:"that'd be even better, please tell me you also heading that side...Lisakhanya?"

Me:"uhm well..I I was kinda heading that way"

I point to the direction of home

Mnce:"that's a bummer I really hoped I'd get to talk to you more"

I looked at him and he was looking into my eyes for a moment our eyes lock

Me:"oh..uhm sorry maybe next time.."

Mnce:"yeah maybe I could be your ride

home,cause my apartment is also somewhere that side"

He points to the direction I pointed in

Me:"I already have a ride home,but thanks for the offer"

Mnce:"is it anything like that"

He points at a beautiful machine

Yonela: "wow I was wondering who drives that...damn you must be loaded"

He chuckles ,wow he drive an i8, unbelievable

Me:"wow..yoh well it nothing close to that"

He grins

Me:"but it takes me from place to place "

His smile disappears, good I can tolerate Quinton's ego but not anyone else's ,speak of the devil,he comes park right in front of me almost knocking Mncedisi since he was a bit

out of the pavement, but that was so unnecessary, he revved his car making a noise girls started screaming for him

Quinton: "Lisa, jump on"

Me: "well that's my ride, bye...it was nice meeting you Mercedesi "

I hugged Yonela

Mnce: "I'd love one too"

I was about to give him a hug when Quinton hoots the car a bit, and startles me

Quinton: "I don't have all day woman"

I jumped on and he sped off ,we drove in silence, he didn't have to be so rude

Quinton: "how was your day?"

I remain quiet

He sighs loud

Quinton: "how long are you planning on giving

me the silent treatment? Come on Lisa you haven't said a word since yesterday"

Me:.....

Quinton: "please the silence is killing me,I miss you,the bubbly you,talk to me,anything tell me what crazy thing Yonela made you do today like always or how your human rights lecturer was such a bore,please"

I sigh

Me:"I'm tired"

He parks the car at some park

Quinton: "okay..look,about what I said yesterday, I did mean it Lisa"

I look at him and he looks sincerely cute,I mean honest sincerely honest

Quinton: "truth is,we've been through a lot Lisa and we still going through some stuff,you always there to support me at my weakest and

you always here to celebrate with me at my happiest ,I love you,I love you as my very own sister and a friend"

Why is my chest painful now,could it be he just broke my heart by those last few words

Me:.....

Quinton: "I can't love you anything more Lisa, I love and care for you too much,you've seen my past relations with other woman,I'm a heart breaker and breaking your heart is the last thing I want to do"

I swallow the big lump in my throat

Me:"oh..I...

Quinton: "okay let me confess,I love you I've loved you from the very first day I saw you,but as I got to know you I grew to love you even more,one slitest moment when you sad always breaks me inside,and I knew if I make a move on you,I'd make you sad all the time cause I

know myself too well lily,I hurt people, specially girls,many have tried to get into a serious relationship with me and I have also tried too but it never lasts,I always mess up....I don't want to mess up with you and us being anything more would definitely mess us up...specially now that..."

He trails off

Me:"specially now that?"

Quinton: "remember the story you told me about your father?"

I nod

Quinton: "the way your father's killer died...."

He trails off again

Me:"yeah..."

He sighs then shakes his head

Quinton:uhm ohwell its just ...he deserved it,I hope his rotting in hell now"

That does not sound like what he was about to say,he wanted to say something else...one thing about studying law,I can read people

Me:"I guess so"

Quinton: "please can we go back to the way things were"

Me:"of cause...I'm so glad we talked about this...well you talked about this "

We laugh

Me:"from now on,let's just stick to the bond we had going and being my fake boyfriend "

Quinton: "that I agree with"

We smile at each other then share a hug I move my head from his shoulder and our eyes meet he places his forehead on mine and we look deep into each other's eyes

Quinton(whispers): "let's get home bub"

I kiss his forehead

Me:"that I agree with "

-
-
-
-
-
-

please try commenting more,I love reading y'all comments

[07/28, 16:54] W: continuation

LISA

We got home and we were welcomed by the smell of mouthwatering food,we head to the fridge first thing as usual, I grabbed water and Quinton grabbed an apple,we close the fridge with him following behind me as we head to the sitting room

Me: "hey grams"

She was lying on the couch

Grams:"senibuyile...niyahlala noko kwesiskolo senu"(y'all back...you sure take your time in that school of yours)

Quinton: "this is varsity grams, sometimes they

have night classes so this is pretty early"

Grams:"mmh...you also go to varsity ?"

Quinton:"yes grams I'm completing my masters in Aerospace engineering, while I work part time in the family business "

Grams:"that's nice...may I have a word with you"

Quinton:"sure thing grams"

He goes sit next to her, I follow and sit next to him

Grams:"in private please"

Me:"oh...okay "

I get up and go take a nice warm bath by the time I got in the room Quinton was already in the room,I felt his eyes on my body as I was lotioning myself,I took my panty and slid it on before dropping the towel so that I can lotion the rest of my body, I had my back turned on him as I put on my night dress then head to

bed,he seemed distant like his mind was somewhere else

Me:"sooo?.....grams huh?...she's quite something.. Am I right?"

I was trying my luck for him to tell me what they were talking about

He looked at me with a smirk

Quinton: "just ask me what she said..and stop roaming around bushes"

I laugh

Me:"I was not....and its not roaming, its beating...don't beat around the bush. Gosh you suck at these idioms"

We laugh

Quinton: "looks like I'll have to propose soon"

Me:"wow...that's uhm nice I guess"

He sighs

Quinton: "no its not,this will mean involving my family for the lobola and what not,we can't afford to expand this lie"

Me:"okay...this is becoming a mess...a very costly mess"

Quinton: "do you still wanna go on? Cause I'm still with you hundred percent like I said"

I shake my head

Me:"No...we need some time to think about this"

Quinton: "I can organise a fake family, I know people"

I look at him for a while ,is he for real,

Me:"that's just crazy, who would agree to be your fake family? "

Quinton:"I'm telling you..I know people who know people who know people who know me who I know"

I can't help but laugh

Me:"do you really think we can pull it off? I mean this is a wedding we talking about... A fake wedding "

He gives me a reassuring look nodding his head

Quinton: "we can...all we have to do is convince grams to have a really small and intimate wedding of only family in a church, non of those traditional big weddings and shit"

Me:"Eish.. I think that's what she wants though,the whole big white wedding with people from the neighborhood and traditional,all the works"

Quinton: "that will be too risky and would end up falling to wrong ears"

Me:"you right,I'm sure I can convince her to have a small wedding "

There was silence we both deep in our thoughts

,I think we taking this whole thing way too far now

Me: "oh my!"

Quinton (worried): "what?"

Me:"I forgot to eat"

Quinton: "mxm,really?"

I laugh at him then go dish up ,I find grams in the sitting room so I first walk up to her

Me:"makhulu,uright?"

She shakes her head

Grams:"after making dinner,I got dizzy and I think I lost my consciousness, my body froze and I fell,its getting worse Nana ,my eyes are giving me problems, when I was trying to read the bible it became blur even with my glasses on,I fall asleep a lot"

She's breaking my heart, how many times does one heart have to break for it to stop hurting so

much? I'm shattered

Me:"tomorrow we taking you to the doctor"

She shook her head

Grams:"no no ,don't, the doctor told me that these things would happen they just part of the symptoms, after I took my pills I was fine,don't worry Nana I'll be fine"

Me:"how can I not worry when you are dying right in front of me? I can't take it,I've had it with people I care of dying in front of me, why? Why me? Why do I get tortured"

I'm angry the tears are not even coming out

Grams:"don't do this to yourself lily everything happens for a reason"

Me:"what could possibly be the reason for all this? What?"

She kept quiet

I calmed myself down

Me:"did you drink your pills now?"

She nods

Grams: "Lisa, I like this Quinton of yours,he loves you so much its just too visible the way y'all love each other,he's a good boy and he'd do anything to protect you,but..."

She trails off

Me:"what's wrong makhulu?"

Grams: "I don't know I feel like I shouldn't trust him,there's something not right with his blood, he gives me goosebumps, a part of me fears him....I don't know why"

Me:"ookay...you scaring me,I don't know,well Quinton does have quite an intimidating persona,its just the way he is....its one of the things that made me fall in love with him"

We laugh

Grams: "I guess if it doesn't bother you then you

in good hands,just as long as he doesn't ever lay a hand on you..ngoba ndiyovuka encwabeni tana akhe azame nje yena uyandibona" (I'll rise from the grave,he should just try,he will see me)

We burst into laughter

Me:"ayi let me dish up for us...ubusow'dlile wena makhulu? "(Have you eaten already grams?)

She nods

Me:" okay,you will switch off the lights when you go to bed ke ..goodnight"

Grams: "goodnight Nana"

I dish up a lot for myself since I'll share with Quinton I take two spoons then head to the room

Me:"I got us some dzinarr"

I was expecting him to laugh or something but he had a sad face,I automatically became sad

too and my heart sank, I put the food on the table then got inside the covers

Me:"penny for thoughts? "

He remained quiet he was buried in his thoughts, I turned his face to look at me,he looked my way but couldn't give eye contact he is looking down

Me:"why the long face,what happened? "

He sighs heavily

Quinton: "I just got a call from the hospital"

Me:"is your mom okay,oh God please tell me she's okay "

He shook his head his lips curved upside down

I move closer to him

Me:"what happened? "

Quinton: "she's not getting any better,they say she had a seizure and they say if she continues

like this she might need a heart donor"

My heart broke into a million peaces,the glasses that had formed in his eyes break and one tear drops followed by two,I pulled him into my embrace that's when he let it all out he broke down ,I couldn't hold back mine anymore so we cried together in each others arms

Me:"don't cry Q,everything will be okay,you'll see"

He sat up straight then made me sit ontop of him my legs on either side of his thighs,we stared into each other's wet eyes

Quinton (,breaking voice): "I don't think so Liss...I think I'm loosing her this time"

Me:"come on Quinton have a little faith,they said she might need a donor which means she can still fight this,remember my dream?"

He nods

Me: "my dreams are usually warnings or signs of something that might happen"

Quinton: "so you can like see the future? Like a sangoma or something?"

Me:"Not exactly the future no,but I know when something tragic is going to happen... Now back to my point....remember I said your mom was blocked by mist and you couldn't save her?"

He nods

Me:"well it wasn't the white mist we know it was black....remember I said you said a prayer and the mist vanished"

He nods

Me:"what I'm saying is,stick to prayer Quinton I know you not a strong believer but please keep in faith, God is the answer,tell you what,everyday when we wake up and before we sleep we will pray together for your mother's

health for her to be healed...okay?"

He smiles and wipes my tears

Quinton: "and also for your grandmother too,if you believe God can heal my mom then I believe he can heal your grandmother too"

I smile at him and wipe his tears,he pulls me in for a hug ,which sent shivers all over my body,the longer the hug got the more my heart beated uncontrollably and being on top of his dick made things worse,so I let go cause I'm starting to loose it, he cupped my face and bought it close to him then pecked my lips,he looked at me like his memorizing my face then pecked my kips again and again we ended up kissing passionately he flipped me over and got on top of me,he started rubbing my punani making me moan,he stopped he looked at me and smiled then it disappeared

Quinton(whisper): "I'm sorry"

Me(whisper): "don't be,please"

I wanted him to carry on I needed him

Quinton: "I I can't do this,I'm sorry"

Me:"why?"

He got off me and switched of the lamp but the light in the room was still on

Quinton: "goodnight liss"

He kisses my cheek then turns his back on me

Me: "wow"

I got up and went to put my plate away I lost my appetite then headed back to sleep,I put a pillow between us,if that's how he wants it then that's how he'll get it

I felt the pillow move,he came closer and wrapped himself around me..I let him,why can't we stay away from each other,its like some

powerful source is pulling us to each other and another weak source is pushing us apart,he kisses the back of my neck

Quinton(whisper): "goodnight bub"

.

.

.

.

.

the more the comments the more likely I post again tonight

[07/28, 16:54] W: Insert 12

LISA

I'm put on my off shoulder short playsuit with black and white stripes and ankle white boots, fixed my face and hair

"Lisa I'm leaving you for real now!"

Me: "I'm coming, I'm done!"

I applied lipstick grabbed my bag then ran out he already started the car

I got in then drove to school rather slowly than I anticipated as the traffic was hectic ,looked like there was an accident

Quinton: "Dammit"

He hit the wheel hard making the car hoot

Me:"great I'll miss my first class"

Quinton: "this is all your fault"

Me:"excuse me,you the one who didn't want to wake up when it was prayer time,took you twenty minutes to wake up"

He chuckled

Quinton:"but you the one who took hours in the shower and on the mirror"

Me:"if you didn't battle in waking up we wouldn't be here,you took up most of the time"

Quinton: "and how long do you pray..a whole thirty minutes?"

Me:"oh so now I'm wrong for being spiritual? That shouldn't even be an issue"

Quinton:"I know its for a good cause but

seriously look where we at now?"

Me:"don't pin this on prayer Quinton, you also took your own sweet time in the shower, busy singing at the top of you horrible voice..."

He gasps and looks at me in disbelief

Me:"thats right I said it! Horrible I tell you...then you left your underwear just laying there with noone to wash and hang then on top of that the widows were closed the bathroom was sooo steamy and you didn't even bother to wipe the floor.....so me being your maid right? I had to clean up after you before I can take a shower, then I called you to wash your undies which I doubt you hang them outside or any of your towels,I don't know how many times must I preach the same thing to you over and over again the sun is out nje for mahala but noooo Quinton's underwear can't be hanged outside huh,do you know how wet things inside the house make an unpleasant smell? they need

fresh air weh Quintonoo but do you ever listen?
No! now I should be running after you like a
Nanny..... So if you wondering what made us
late,think about that!"

He was holding his as if he has a headache
while shaking his head

Quinton (mumbling): "we not even fake married
yet yooohh"

I huff

Me:"argh you such a bimbo"

Quinton: "finally! Peace....geez you can talk
woman"

Me:"ungandiqheli Quinton "(don't mess with me)

Quinton:" yeah whatever...still your fault though"

He chuckles

I feel like strangling that smug of his cute face!

Nx

Me:"one of these days I'll murder you!"

He just laughed at me

Yeah that was an argument by the way

I fold my arms and look out the window

I feel his hand squeezing my thigh

Quinton: "okay I'm sorry I shouldn't have pined this on you...let's just say its the accidents fault okay?"

Me:"whatever dude"

Quinton:"this outfit is too revealing "

Me:"so? its hot nje"

Quinton: "that doesn't mean walk around naked...I hope you not dressed like this because of that boy you were standing with the other day"

Me:"Mncedisi? oh please.....and its non of your

business who I fish for"

Quinton: "mmmh"

Silence filled the car

Me:"mxm,so weren't I supposed to meet Enhle yesterday?"

Quinton: "I told her this coming weekend I'll take us to a date,for dinner just the three of us"

Me:"that's nice that way she won't even meet grams"

Quinton: "exactly"

He says pointing at me

Me:"but I'll be like a third wheel"

He laughed

Quinton: "exactly"

He pointed at me again

Me:"y'all be busy kissing and giggling as if I'm not there"

Quinton: "exact....."

Me:" finish that word and you'll see my true colours "

I said annoyed he just laughed at me and turned up the volume our favourite song came on and we started singing along

Him:"yo ush"

Me:"what up kells"

Him:"Wanna introduce you to this girl. Think I really love this girl."

Me:"yeah?"

Him:"Man she's so fine"

Me:"straight up dawg"

Him:"She stands about 5'4", Coca Cola, red bone"

Me:"Damn!"

Him:"She drives a black Durango

License plate say "Angel".

Me:"What?"

Him:"Tattoo on her ankle

Plus she's making pesos.....Got a crib on
Peachtree" Me:"Peachtree?"

Him:"Right on 17th street

And I call her "TeTe".

Me: "Wait a minute hold on dog. Do she got a
kid?"

Him:"yep"

Me:"She loves some waffle house?"

Him:"yep"

Me:"Do she got a beauty mark on the left side
of her mouth?"

Him:"man!"

Me:"Went to Georgia Tech?"

Him:"yep"

Me:"works for TBS?"

Him:"yep"

Me:"Man I can't believe this shit. Damn!"

We got in campus and he switches it off

Me:"oh come on couldn't we at least finish the song"

Quinton: "we late Liss now get you sexy ass off my car I need to get to my campus"

I huff,he kisses my cheek, then I head to class,I won't even begin explaining how hectic school is,I already have two assignments due in four weeks time,we were waiting for our last class so we were now taking a walk around campus

Yonela:"girl did you see how hot Liam is? Can't believe he's South African yet his coming from overseas, did you notice his light brown hazel eyes? He's smooth caramel skin? The body,you

can just see that this guy is used to picking up heavy things...his car?"

Me:"dude,I noticed,I give it to him shame the niggas is hot",

Yonela:"you should've seen all the healthy things he bought yesterday, his so cautious about what goes in his mouth,I think he spent 5000 rand on just ten items"

Me:"yooh he's loaded hey"

Yonela:"girl didn't you notice the swag? The car? Loaded is an understatement the dude is filthy rich,I can just imagine the place he calls an apartment, must be a big mansion "

We burst into laughter

Me:" yah neh he's living the life...don't worry friend we'll also get there"

Yonela: "I think I'm in love Lisa"

I stop and look at her amazed she stops too

Me:"down girl!"

Yonela: "for real,he's everything I've ever dreamed of and yesterday when he asked me to help him with his groceries then we ate at steers it felt..."

Me:" like you were a couple? "

She nods happily

Yonela: "I thinks he likes me too"

Me:"wow,thats nice"

A part of me got disappointed, I don't know why

Yonela: "I better work on my move before these bitches snatch him"

I fake a laugh

Me: "you do that,crazy girl...would you look at the time we should get to class"

We went to class she was going on and on about this Mncedisi dude,she really likes

him,finally the day was over I waited with yonela where we wait for an uber to pick her up and Quinton to pick me up,the uber came first

Me:"aaww you going first today "

Yonela: "sorry girl,looks like you'll get to experience how lonely I get when Quinton picks you up first"

We laugh and hug then she drives away, I wait for like twenty minutes and still no Quinton so I call him ,he picks up after I've tried him twice

Me:"where the hell are you, its getting late dark and empty here"

Quinton: "oh shit,I didn't realise the time"

"Baby who's that?"

I hear a woman in the back ground

Me:"don't tell me you with a girl while I'm waiting here!?"

Quinton: " Lisa, I'm so sorry,please call an uber,

cause I'm so far and it will..."

Me:"fuck you Quinton. Nx!"

I drop the call and scream a bit out of frustration and stomp my feet

can't believe he ditched me for pussy

Me:aaaaarrrrgggh

motherfuckeerrrrssvdhvchvsvsvgsbshxvhshbk"

"Whoa..what is that?"

I look at the beauty parked in front of me

Mnce:"its really getting dangerous out here,for a beautiful Lady like yourself this place is not safe"

Me:"well thanks for stating the obvious "

Mnce(chuckles): "can I please give you a lift?"

Me:"what's in it for you?"

I raise my brow

He laughs

Mnce:"don't worry you don't have to give me anything you don't want to give me"

I smile then get inside, he speeds off,damn his car smells so fresh and rich

Mnce:"so how are you beautiful? "

Me:"I'm good I guess"

Mnce:"what happened to your ride?"

Me:"argh I don't wanna talk about it"

Mnce:"okay,is that your boyfriend? "

Me:"which one?"

Mnce:"the guy who picked you up yesterday? "

Me:"no he's just a friend"

He nods,he hasn't looked at me even a glance,I can't help but stare at his strong arms holding the wheel and the side of his face, he's neatly trimmed beared that lines up to his trimmed haircut

Mnce:"so your boyfriend lives around here?"

Me:"I don't have a boyfriend"

He glances at me then at the road quickly, a smile forms on his face

Mnce:"a beautiful girl like you,single? I don't believe it"

Me:"better believe "

Mnce:"then we have to do something about that"

Me:"we?"

He chuckles

Mnce:"not right away though"

Me:"are you asking to be my boyfriend mister?"

He laughs

Mnce:"if I was,would you say yes?"

I laugh

Me: "No"

Mnce:"ouch...then I wasn't"

We laugh

Mnce: "can I at least take you out for dinner sometime?"

Me:"I don't know"

Mnce:"please,I'm begging here"

Me:"since you begging... I'll think about it"

Mnce:"I can live with that,can you not keep me waiting "

Me:"I can take as long as I want"

He chuckles

Mnce:"of cause that's what I meant"

I laugh at him

Me:"after the next three houses is my stop"

He stops the car by the gate,I see Quinton is

already home,well Mncedisi took the very long way here

Mnce:"you live with your friend? "

Me:"yeah,he's my roommate "

He frowns

Mnce:"I don't know how I feel about that"

Me(angrily):"its not for you to judge or feel anyhow,if you have a problem then deal with it,cause you don't know half of the story and you already feel things"

He raises his brow shocked

Mnce:"I didn't mean it like that...please I'm sorry,its just I was shocked..I'm sorry its not my place to judge please forgive me"

Me: "I hate people who make up their own conclusions without knowing the whole story"

Mnce:"it was wrong of me,and I apologize "

I sigh and calm myself down

Me:"its okay,you forgiven"

He touches my hand which was on my thigh,takes it and kisses it,my hearts melts

Mnce:"thank you let me make it up to you,tomorrow after classes I'll pick you up"

Me:"uhm,I don't know, in the middle of the week?"

Mnce:"just for a short time"

We looked at each other for a while I sighed

Me: "I guess I'm too curious to say no"

He smiles showing all his perfect teeth

Mnce:"can I have your number...please"

I give him my phone he dials his number then calls himself

Mnce: "so what should I save it as? Future bae?"

future wifey? future maybe?"

We burst into laughter, the way he quoted that from the song midnight starring

Me: "whatever suits you"

Mnce: "future wifey it is"

He's crazy

I laugh and open the door

Me: "bye Mncedisi"

Mnce: "goodnight beautiful "

I close the door I stand by the gate and watch him speed off.

I head inside, I see him by the sitting room just watching the blank screen and my blood boils as the anger comes back, he looks at me

Quinton: "Lisa..oohh I'm so glad you safe"

Me: "are you!?"

I storm off to the room, he comes in as I was

undressing about to go take a shower

Quinton: "look,Lisa let me explain.."

I wrap my towel

Me:"no need for that"

I walk to the bathroom and get inside the shower,the door opens

Quinton: "Enhle called me she told me she had a problem and it sounded so urgent so I drove to her and ended up not attending my last class,she was in a car accident"

My eyes widen feeling sorry for her,but then I remember in the background she sounded fine.

Quinton: "but it was a minor thing she bummed a car while she was parking her car she didn't get hurt,so after that I was angry at her for calling me for something so ridiculous, I took her to her place,she apologised and one thing led to another,I totally lost track of time"

Me:"no you didn't loose track of Time you forgot about me"

I feel my heartbreak, its doing that a lot nowadays

I hear the shower slide open and I feel him behind me,he hugged me,luckily his wearing his briefs

Quinton: "I'm so sorry Liss ,I didn't mean to hurt you"

A few tears escape my eyes as I feel butterflies in my tummy

I turn to face him And we hug intensely as the water hits our body he picks me up and wrap my legs around him he pins me against the wall he moves his face closer I stop him

Me:"we can't do this"

Quinton: "just one kiss"

Me:"please put me down "

He outs me down

Me:"Quinton, we friends, friends don't do these kind of things,you made it clear that you only and ever will love me as a sister, this is not how brothers treat their sisters,this has to stop,I can't take it anymore,you make me too weak,and we cant be friends with benefits, I don't believe in that"

He sighs

Quinton: "you right...I'm sorry,I just I can't resist....I'll keep my distance,I'm sorry"

We gaze at each other

Me:"if we around the house we can touch each other like that and stuff for grams to walk in on us or hear us"

He nods we carry on bathing together, laughing and singing

We now all freshened up and in our sleepwear

Me:"let us pray"

We kneel down next to the bed hold each others hands and start praying we prayed for quite a while

Us:"Amen"

I look at him and he had tears I wiped them then we got in bed

He was now telling me his funny unrealistic stories

Me(laughing):"how old do you think I am Q"

He laughed

Quinton: "I'm serious, I really did punch him he flew across the every wall of every class all the way to the third class"

I laughed even harder he is so serious

My phone rang while we were laughing

Me(laughing): "hello"

"Someone is in a good mood"

I adjusted myself

Me:"oh Mncedisi?"

Mnce:"or future hubby"

I giggled,Quinton looked at me with his one brow up I rolled my eyes at him

Me:"why you calling so late?"

Mnce:"I just wanted to say goodnight "

Me:"goodnight "

Mnce:"okay the truth is I just wanted to hear your voice"

Me:"I knew it"

I giggled again, what's up with me

Quinton clears his throat

Me: "now you heard it"

Mnce:"yeah,sleep tight beautiful and dream

about me"

Me:"I'll try but no promises"

I hang up and looked at Quinton

Quinton: "who was that?"

I laugh

Me:"no one"

Quinton: "new boyfriend?"

Me:"I said no one"

He squirts his brows

Quinton: "we hiding things now"

I get in the covers and turn my back on him giggling,he turns me and starts poking my tummy making me laugh

Me:"stop"

He continued

Quinton: "first tell me who was it!?"

He was now tickling me I'm laughing uncontrollably his on top of me

Me(laughing):"okay okay I'll tell you!! "

He stopped and got off me

Me:"he's a new transfer student, he gave me a lift today when you forgot me"

His smile disappears

Quinton: "please stop putting it like that"

Me:"sorry,but yeah"

Quinton: "what's his name?"

Me:"Mncedisi "

Quinton: "from?"

Me:"ayibo what's with the 3rd degree questions "

Quinton: "come on fill me up on the details phela chommie"

I burst into laughter

Me:"yoh ayi ngeke...goodnight chommie"

He groaned and we slept ,gosh this dude can't sleep properly, its either his all over the bed or his tangled up on me,yesterday he almost pushed me off the bed

"don't be scared baby....I'll always protect you"

"baleka....run!!"

I opened my eyed wide my heart beating fast again my rib cage...okay I wasn't even in deep sleep yet..but I heard his voice.. I moved closer and snuggled on Quinton, he had his back on me,he felt my hand then squeezed it gently, I slept peacefully after that

.

.

.

keep sharing the page guys we almost there 1k

[07/28, 16:55] W: Insert 13

LISA

Yonela:"so how's the whole pretend boyfriend thing going so far?"

I sigh

Me:"don't even ask"

Yonela: "that bad? Well it was my idea so I deserve to know"

Me:"everything is slowly becoming a mess, grams extended her stay,and I don't think she's leaving anytime soon"

Yonela: "oh no,that can't be good, why?"

Me:"she wants Quinton to propose so we can get married ASAP"

Her jaw drops

We only had two classes today,we came out early but we still chilling in campus buy the bench

Yonela: "oh no! This might be risky than I thought"

Me:"tell me about it, now we will need a fake family for negotiations and a very small fake

wedding "

She hits my shoulder with her eyes popped out

Me:"ouch "

Yonela: "dude,this is a disaster, the more people y'all involve the more dangerous this becomes"

Me:"tell me something I don't know "

Yonela: "just come clean with your grams girl,then tell her you don't want to get married she must just forgive you for not being able to fulfill her wish"

Me: "are you crazy? After we've come this far with this whole pretending thing, it will crush her that I lied to her,she won't be able to handle the truth, she'll die earlier cause of heart attack, No,anything but the truth"

Yonela: "shit,okay just tell her y'all not ready for marriage"

Me: "tried that, didn't work"

Yonela:"do you think y'all can pull off the wedding without anyone knowing?"

Me:"I sure hope so "

She looks at me for a while

Yonela: "don't you feel a little remorse about all this,I know you studying law but since when have you become this resistant to lying, its like you not even a bit worried about this whole thing"

How can she say that

Me:"I don't believe you,you the one who came up with this big brilliant idea,now you here telling me I should be feeling bad about this? Please don't start with me"

Yonela: "and I regret ever coming up with the idea,I thought it would only be a few days,your grams leaves and you carry on with life ,I didn't know she'd force marriage even with your fake boyfriend"

Me:"that makes the three of us,we also didn't know,but hey its happening and we just have to go with the flow"

She sighs

Yonela: "so where are y'all going to get a family for Quinton?"

I shrug my shoulders

Me:"nam andaz(I also don't know) he said he knows people who know people who know people who know him who he knows"

She laughed

Yonela: "I bet he said it exactly like that"

Me:"you know him"

Yonela: "did he tell you the reason why he fetched you late yesterday?"

Me:"mxm did he even fetch me at all?"

She gasps

Yonela: "what? Why?"

Me:"cause of his girlfriend "

Yonela: "yoh he ditched you for his girlfriend?
He must really love this girl,I have to meet her"

Me:"mxm,I'm meeting her this coming weekend,
heeyy you should come with me I can't deal
with being a third wheel specially for Quinton "

Yonela: "I wonder how long will it take for y'all to
realise y'all really love each other,its cute at how
blind y'all are but sometimes its heartbreaking
like right now"

Me:"mxm there's no love here trust me..."

Yonela: "so what did you end up going home
with yesterday?"

Me:"oh uhm I kinda bumped into Liam "

She looks at me shocked

Yonela: "he gave you a ride?"

I nod

Yonela: "aand?"

Me:"nothing "

Yonela: "oh come on,he didn't say anything....
about me?"

Me:"we didn't talk much"

Yonela: "just like how he didn't talk much the
time I was with him...I thought he would at least
ask for my number but dololo"

Me:"oh..you want his number?"

Yonela: "durh did he give you?"

Me:"yeah...there let me give it to you"

Yonela: "wow so he asked for your number?"

Me: "yeah,but its not like I wanted it....082..."

Yonela:" No,I don't want it,its obvious he wants
you not me"

Me:"don't be like that,I don't want him anyway

I've got way too much going on for me"

Yonela: "I bet he even asked you out?"

I looked away from her

Yonela: "and you agreed?"

I remained quiet

Yonela: "so you do want him,for the fact you even took his number, wow"

Me:.....

Yonela: "after I told I I think I'm in love... Its okay you can have him,to think I even broke up with Chris last night"

Me: "you did what?"

Yonela: "yeap,it was all for nothing, thanks a lot friend"

Me:"come on yonela I'm not even dating the guy and I didn't even agree to that stupid date he asked me"

Yonela: "did you turn him down?"

Me:"well I still have much power to turn him down"

Yonela: "you'd do that?"

Me: "of cause if you love him so much, I don't see why not"

She smiles

Yonela: "you know what,don't turn him down, you can turn that date to 'operation hook up yonela' "

I burst into laughter

Me:"if that's what you want,you got it"

Yonela:"you the best!"

We hugged

Yonela: "let's get going, the sun is blazing"

We walked out of the school premises

Mncedisi's car parked right in front of us,shit

He gets out and comes towards us

Him:"ladies"

Yonela: "hey"

Me:"hi"

Him: "how are y'all?"

Yonela:"we good"

Me:"fine"

I totally forgot about him picking me up today

Him:"so ready to go...future wifey? "

Oh no,tell me he did not just call me that no no
no

Me:"uhmmm...."

Yonela: "oh future wifey?"

I look at her

Yonela: "wow"

She storms off

Me:"yonela! Wait!"

I attempt to go after her when he stops me

Mnce:"did I say or do something wrong...if so,I'm sorry"

I sigh defeated

Me:"no...you did nothing wrong,let's just go"

He took me to San deck hotel in sandton

Me:"wow,this place is beautiful "

Mnce:"for a beautiful Lady, you deserve to be taken to beautiful places"

We walked inside and took the stairs then we were in some room,this is the most beautiful place I've ever seen

Me:"Wow,this is...wow"

He puts his arm over my shoulder

Mnce:"I'm glad you love it, this is where I'm staying till I get a place"

Me:"oh,didn't you say you have an apartment? "

Mnce:"this is it..for now..come let me show you where we'll be chilling "

We went out to the balcony ,oh my this place gets even more more beautiful, there's a nice pool or is it a jacuzzi? Beautiful pool couches and a braai area also a nice table that was already decorated with two glasses and a bottle of champagne and a bunch of fancy food I didn't know

Me:"I thought I was still thinking about the date?"

He chuckled

Mnce:"oh this..this is nothing like that, its just me making up for being a jerk yesterday"

Me: "wow if this is how you apologise for being a jerk..boy you should be a jerk all the time"

He bursts into laughter and I join in

He pulls out the seat for me

Me:"mmh gentleman "

Mnce:"I try"

He prepared some fancy food for us,I don't even know the name of half the things in this table ,only recognized the chicken

Me:"uhm this all looks....healthy"

Mnce:"wait until you try this Salt-and-Pepper Chicken with Spring Quinoa Pilaf"

What the fuck did he just say the only thing I understood in that sentence is chicken, wow

Me:"mmmh okay"

Such a small portion I don't think we eating to get full here

Me:"are you done dishing up?"

Mnce(chuckles):"yeah..dig in"

Fork and knife okay I can do this ..its fork on

right and knife on left ? I tried it and I
strangled,this is so embarrassing

Mnce:"come let me help you with that"

He gets up and walks towards me he stands
next to me then bends down he wraps his arms
around me the takes my hands making them
switch the knife to the right and the fork to the
left,I cant even concentrate with him breathing
on cheek I can hear my own heart beat I'm sure
he can hear it too the way its so loud

Mnce:"then you hold the chicken with the fork
while you cut with your right"

He helps me cut, his arms are so strong, his
cologne mmmh lord have mercy

Mnce:"just like that....you got it?"

He asks as we stare at each other still holding
me

Me(whisper):"yeah,I got it"

He doesn't take his eyes off me,I feel my face automatically moving closer,my eyes glued to his pinkish lips,our noses touch I pout my lips ready to kiss him

I feel him brush my lips with his finger

Mnce:"I want us to save it,for the date?"

I smile as I feel my cheeks heat up

Me:"you mean the one I'm still thinking about? "

Mnce:"thats the one,Saturday night?"

Me:"I don't know,I don't think its a good idea"

He moves away and sits on his seat

Mnce: "why not? I mean you single I'm single,so much in common"

I laugh

Me:"really now?.....well its just my friend really likes you a lot "

He creases his brows together

Mnce:"sorry but I'm straight njenge ruler
mshana"(as a ruler)

I burst into laughter

Me:"no no man not that friend,the other one
Yonela"

He laughs

Mnce:"oohhh besindithukile mfondini"(you
scared me man)

Mnce:"but I really like you.....don't get me wrong
I like her she's really cute and bubbly,but I
always had my eyes on you from the very
start,and I would love to take you out "

I sigh

Me:"look Lee....

He chuckles

Me:"what?"

Mnce:"nothing, I just like the way you called me"

I smile my cheeks are so literally on fire I swear

Me:"anyway as I was saying Lee ...

He has a big childish smile plastered on his face making me laugh

Me:"gosh now I forgot what I was going to say!"

We laughed

Mnce:"you were gonna say..oh what the heck, Lee let's do this! "

I burst into laughter at the way he was talking like a girl

Me:"I don't sound like that"

Mnce:"want proof?"

Me:"shut up!"

I just indulged in my food and it tastes so good, my eyes would literally close as I enjoy every bite, but it finished in just a few minutes

Me:"is this how much you eat all the time?"

He nods

Me:"do you even get full? "

Mnce:"yeah, it's not about being full,its about being satisfied "

He pours us some champagne

Mnce:"this shall fill you up"

I take the glass I usually see on TV how slow they drink and how they should hold the glass,towards the base of the stem between your thumb, forefinger and middle finger. I look at how he's holding it Yep just like them,this guy is too fancy I don't think I could reach his standards I feel like I'll have to level up with him all the time

I take a sip then put it down

Mnce:"Moët & Chandon Impérial Rosé"

Me:"huh?"

Mnce:"that's the name of the champaign, do

you like it?"

Me:"oh...yeah,I love it,its so fruity"

Mnce:"I thought you'd like it"

We continued talking and laughing, we are now standing by the parapet of the balcony looking at the breathtaking view

Me:"so tell me Lee...what brings you back to South Africa if you say you grew up in England?"

Mnce:"the weather there is freezing cold"

I laugh

Me:"oh please..I'm serious "

Mnce:"just kidding, well its kind of a family thing"

Me:"wanna tell me about it?"

He sighs

Mnce:"I have to prepare myself to take over

family businesses "

Typical rich kids

Me:"you don't sound so excited about it?"

Mnce:"I am,its just there's things I'm forced to do before I can take over "

Me:"and you don't like those things?"

He shakes his head

Mnce: "at all"

Me:"are they illegal ?"

He shakes his head

Mnce:"not at all"

Me:"are you going to tell me what they are?"

Mnce:"well first of all I have to spend my whole life with someone....

The door bell rings,disturbing him

Mnce:"probably room service let me go get it"

He disappears inside ,I decide to get my phone from my bag

Me:"whoa!!"

So many missed calls fifty three all from Quinton,I immediately call him he picks up

Quinton(worried):"Lisa are you okay,oh my God where are you are you safe I tried calling you I even sent a bunch of texts,it was getting late I even called yonela she said some guy picked you up,please tell me you safe "

Me: "Quinton! Calm down,I'm safe"

He is breathing heavily

Quinton: "oh my lily,I was soooooooooo so so so worried about you,if something had happened I think I would've committed suicide"

I laugh a lil

Me:"I'm totally fine,and stop with your drama yoohhh"

Quinton: "argh where are you? I've been trying to reach you but your phone took me straight to voicemail, I wanted you to come to the hospital with me"

His voice was now filled with anger

Me:"hospital? What happened?"

Quinton: "your grams is in hospital, what are you busy doing there,are you with that guy?"

"I was right I rented some.....

I signal him to shut up

Me:" Quinton what happened to grams....just send me the location I'll be right there"

Quinton: "now you realise you have people to worry about? Nx"

He drops the call

Mnce: "everything okay?"

Me:"No,you need to get me to the hospital now!"

He didn't ask further questions but grabbed his car keys and we rushed out, a WhatsApp came from Quinton sending me the location I closed my eyes

Dear God please let makhulu live ,please father not this soon, please reveal your miracles tonight Lord, I put all my faith in you God in the name of the blood of Jesus Christ

Me: "Amen"

.

.

.

Goodnight

[07/28, 16:55] W: Insert 14

LISA

I run inside the hospital like a psychopath leaving Mncedisi in the car, I didn't even ask questions as I immediately spotted Quinton by the waiting area ,I ran up to him he sees me and stands up,he meets me half way with his arms open,I throw myself into his arms, he holds me for dear life as he picks me up a lil

Quinton: "ohh bub I was so worried about you"

He let's me go

Me:"what happened? Where's grams?"

Quinton: "she had a seizure,found her on the floor"

My lips curve upside down as tears threaten, he has the same expression

Quinton: "its was so heartbreaking Liss, I thought she was dying"

His facial expression changed to anger

Quinton: "where the hell were you! Why didn't you tell me not to pick you up,that you had plans? damn Lisakhanya do you know the trauma of thinking something horrible might've happened to you,how do you expect my life to go on without you! Or grams life,how could you be so selfish?!"

How could he say that

Me(breaking voice): "I'm sorry"

I break down,he comforts me

Me:"I should've been there,she probably forgot to take her pills,I was supposed to be there to remind her"

I burst into a loud cry

Quinton: "its not your fault, I'm sorry I shouldn't have bursted out like that, I was just so concerned which made me a bit angry"

Me:"I know but..."

Someone clears his throat

Mnce:"sorry to interrupt,Lisa is everything okay?"

Quinton: "and you are?"

I nudge him cause I know he's about to get rude just like how he was always rude to thato and the guys before him

Me:"I don't know Mncedisi, we still waiting on the doctor to tell us something "

He looks at me with pity

Mnce:"I'm sorry,is there anything I can do"

Quinton: "if you some kind of Jesus I guess there is something you could do...either than that,you useless"

Me:"Quinton! "

I warn, he rolls his eyes

Mncedisi comes and sits next to me,I'm now in the middle of these two men who seem to care about me

Mnce:"come here"

He wraps his arms around me and makes me lay on his shoulder

The doctor comes towards us ,I quickly stand on my feet

Me:"Doc,is she awake,breathing? "

Doc:"she's fine for now,she experienced a Tonic-Clonic seizure,Loss of consciousness and body tone, followed by twitching and relaxing

muscles that are called contractions which led to Loss of control of body functions, she also experienced a short 30-second period of no breathing and that's why she turned a shade of blue"

Quinton: "that's terrible, doc can this cancer of hers be cured?"

Me: "even if it can be cured, we'll never afford it"

Mnce: "I would love to help with that"

Me: "I don't think so"

Quinton: "I'm sure its nothing I can't handle"

Me: "Quinton we talked about this"

Quinton: "Lisakhanya this is not up for discussion, I want to do it for grams not for you, its her life on the line here not yours"

Mnce: "he's right, its time you think about her"

Doc: "I'm sorry to ruin the moment but I'm afraid with her type of tumor it might not be curable "

Quinton: "what kind of tumor and why can't it be cured?"

Doc:"These are the most malignant tumors. They reproduce rapidly,and easily grow into nearby normal brain tissue. With your grandmother looks like it has already spread a lot,even if we do do the surgery it will be very very risky as these tumors form their own new blood vessels, this is almost an impossible surgery to carry out with 85% chance that she won't make it and will be very costly on your pocket"

Mnce:"money is no....

Me:"No,can you all just stop! Please! Doc can I please see her"

Doc:"of cause she's awake follow me"

We followed behind him

Mnce:"uhm Lisa,I think I should get going "

Quinton: "that's the smartest thing you've said since I've known you"

I give him a warning look

Mnce:"looks like you have a problem chap?"

Quinton: "is there something you'd like to do about it.....chap?"

Mnce:"you should watch your mouth"

Quinton moves closer to him

Quinton: "or what?.....chap?"

I Gert between them

Me:"would you two cut it out,if y'all want to fight please go do it outside "

I look at Mncedisi

Me:"thanks for the great evening, you can go"

I turn to Quinton

Me:"please stop with your childishness, we have bigger problems to worry about "

Mnce:"I'll call you"

He comes closer and hugs me

Mnce:"hang in there and take care "

He glares at Quinton and he returns the dead glare he walks away

We get inside grams ward I march up to her and squeeze her gently in a hug

Me:"oh makhulu I'm so glad you okay,I'm sorry I wasn't there"

Grams: "I'm happy you here bhabha"

Me:"I was supposed to be there,to remind you to take your pills,this all my fault,now look where we are,I'm so selfish "

She rubs my back as she shushes me

Grams:"its not your fault Nana, I'm sick its just the way things are,don't blame yourself yevah ke Nana "

I let go of her Quinton bought a chair for me so I sat next to her holding her hand

Grams: "looks like I'll die sooner than I expected"

Me(breaking voice): "No no please don't say that,you not dying now,it was just a seizure,you still have some time"

Grams: "Quinton told me about his mother,when I die please give my heart to her"

Me:"grams...you not dying... not now"

Grams: "of cause not I just need to rest"

She closed her eyes, my heart skipped a beat in fear

Me:"No! Makhulu please don't die! Please "

She opened her eyes

Grams:"ayi suka Lisa ndithe ndifuna uk'lala tshini andifanga"(I said I'm resting I'm not dead)

Me:"oh... I thought ...

I hear Quinton chuckle, grams also joins him, I find myself smiling

Me:"oh I knew that"

Quinton: "yeah right"

I laugh a lil bit they laugh more we all end up laughing

The mood changes as if nothing bad ever happened

Me:"I'll sleep here"

Grams:"phi ngoku?"(where?)

Me:"right here in this chair"

Grams: "sugeza wena apha, kwedini kawuthathe eligeza nigoduke" (don't be crazy, boy,take this crazy person and go home)

Me:"but I want to be here this time"

Grams"I'm in the hospital Lisa, I'm sure the

doctors can do way more than you can, just go get some rest, you have school tomorrow "

Quinton: "your granny is right, let's get going she needs to rest in peace"

Me: "What?!"

Quinton: "oh shit I mean she needs to rest, like without us, like disturbances, in quiet, she she needs to sleep, not as in forever but..."

We burst into laughter, he scratches his head with a confused look on his face

Me: "okay Quinton we get it, grandmother, I'll see you tomorrow "

She nods as she closes her eyes

Me: "that was quick"

Quinton: "the medication must have gotten to her"

We leave her ward and drove home in silence

I just finished taking a shower ,Quinton was now taking a shower

I close my eyes and horrible thoughts run through my mind

My best friend probably hates me,I chose a boy over her,someone I met five minutes ago,then I ditch Quinton to spend my whole evening with him,then I totally abandon my grams now she's in hospital because I decided to bitch around with a guy I barely know,Quinton was right I'm selfish

I feel someone wipe my tears ,I open my eyes to be met by the most captivating grey eyes

Quinton: "I'm getting tired of this Lisa"

Me:"of what?"

Quinton: "tears,since we've moved in together only bad things have been happening, first your grams,then my mom,then the big lies,your nightmares,non of these things happened

before I moved in"

Me:"what are you trying to say?"

He shrugs his shoulders

Quinton: "I don't know maybe I'm just imaging things, but I'm sick and tired of seeing you cry,its slowly breaking my heart,I hate it,I miss your laugh,your silly not so funny jokes that I only find funny"

I gasp

Me:"heeyy my jokes are funny for everyone "

Quinton:"oh yeah right of cause they are"

He laughs at me

He gets inside the cover and I sit up

Quinton: "okay tell me a nice joke now"

Me(laughing): "oh you gonna love this one"

He rolls his eyes

Me:"knock knock"

Quinton: "who's there?"

Me: "Europe"

Quinton: "Europe who?"

Me:"No...Ur a poo...hahahahhahahahah"

I burst into laughter but he had a confused look

Me:"get it? Europe who... No, Ur a poo"

He looks at me and shakes his head then
laughs at me really hard

Okay I know he's not laughing at my joke

Me:"mxxxm,I'm never telling you jokes again "

I fold my arms and look the other way

He turns me around but I keep my head down

Quinton: "that was the funniest joke I've ever
heard Liss"

Me:"oh please,you couldn't hide the confusion "

Quinton (laughing): "No,that wasn't confusion..

I'm telling you bub Kevin Hart got nothing on you"

I look up at him and a smile creeps in

Me:"really?"

Quinton: "Girl I need some more of them jokes come on"

Me(excitedly): "okay okay,you'll love this one"

I see him try to hold in his laugh as he nods

Me:"you know Quinton its times like this I wish I had listened to my mother"

He looks at me confused

Quinton:"why? What did she say?"

Me:"I don't know,I wasn't listening "

We burst into laughter, this time he was really laughing at the joke and not me

Quinton (laughing): "ooohhh I didn't see that one coming"

We continue laughing, I notice I was laughing alone he was just smiling and staring at me

Me:"what?"

Quinton:"this is what I missed,I wish things can stay this way forever "

Me:"just me and you and my Jim Cary spirit"

He laughs

Quinton: "okay easy I said better than Kevin Hart... Jim Cary? Girl you pushing it"

We laugh I had tears from laughing so hard next thing I know I have hiccups

Quinton: "let's get you some water"

He goes out to get me water, a message comes through my phone,I check it

Mnce: "I hope everything went well with your grandma,I can't help but feel to be blamed for keeping you away,I'm sorry,I really care for you Lisa, I don't know why but I really have strong

feelings for you,goodnight khanya"

I put my phone away after reading it

Quinton: "there you go"

I smile

Me:"thanks"

Quinton: "uuhh I have a game in mind"

I gulp my water put my cup away then sit on my knees

Me:"what do have in that mind"

Quinton: "let's play,would you rather questions"

Me:"I love that game okay you go first "

Quinton: "wait I have rules"

Me:"oh God, okay"

Quinton: "if you fail to answer the question you take off a piece of clothing"

Me:"haaa okay let me get more clothing on

then"

He was only in his briefs so he puts on just a shirt, I had my short PJs on so I wore a bra and a jacket,he laughed at me

Quinton: "wow seriously?"

I jump back on bed

Me:"yep seriously "

Quinton: "Would you rather Swim 300 meters through shit or dead bodies?"

Me(disgusted): "sick! Neither"

He raises his brow

Me:"sorry but shit? Naah... Dead bodies? Yoh Never!"

I take off my jacket

Me:"Would you rather Eat shit that tasted like chocolate, or eat chocolate that tasted like crap?"

He laughed

Quinton: "I'd rather take off this shirt,sies"

I laugh at him

We continued playing he was asking really hard questions, I even took out my bra just now, his eyes were glued to my boobs

Me:"eyes up here baba "

He ignored me I slapped him a lil he looks up at me

Me:"hello my face is up here"

Quinton: "oh is it?"

We laugh I'm now only left in panty his in his briefs he's been answering all my questions

Me:"mmh Would you rather Look like a fish or smell like a fish?"

He thought very carefully, I couldn't stop laughing

Quinton: "damn I can't be looking like a fish,that'd be weird, let alone smelling like one that's just plain disgusting... Eish"

He took off his briefs yooohhh help my eyes!

I kept closing and opening my eyes but they would land on his big buddy

Quinton: "don't be scared,it don't bite,well that's if its not horny"

My cheeks heat up I block my face with my hands

Me:"I'm not playing anymore "

Quinton: "uhm liss?"

I peak through my hands

Quinton: "your boobs are waking up things that bite"

I gasp and hid my boobs he laughs at me

He comes closer to me

Quinton (whisper): "I have another game in mind"

He has a naughty smirk on his face as he looks at my boobs in admiration

Me(laughing): "you'll have to catch me first"

I make a run for it,I wish I could say I got far as out the door or out the bed,he just jumped on me

.

.

.

.

.

I'm soooo excited guys we made it to 1k thanks to all of you who spread their love for this story kusazobamnandi apha!!.

[07/28, 16:56] W: Insert 15

LISA

"Lisakhanya....Princess your life is in danger"

Me:"Dad? What are you doing here? Aren't you supposed to be in heaven?"

"I can't rest my baby, I have to protect you"

Me:"from what dad?"

"From the people you call your friends...Run
Lisa, you not safe"

Me:"don't worry Dad, Quinton will protect me"

He shakes his head his face turned angry

"I SAID YOU NOT SAFE!! DON'T YOU LISTEN!!
GET AWAY FROM THEM!!"

Me(crying): "please go,you scaring me"

"I'm not going anywhere!"

He is standing by the door of our room

Me:"GO PLEASE! JUST GO! GO AWAY"

"LISA! wake up,Lisa!"

Me:"please go away!!"

"Lisa its me,wake up"

Someone shakes me ,I sit up,I'm breathing

heavily and all sweaty

Quinton: "it was just a dream liss"

My dad is still standing there

Me:"please go dad please you scaring me"

Quinton:"it was a a dream..

Me:"No there he is there...look!"

I point towards the door his covered in blood

Quinton: "there's no one here Lisa"

Why can't he see him

Me:"he's right there dammit! He's right there!"

He gets up and switches on the light

Quinton: "Lisa its just me and you here"

He disappeared

Me:"he's gone"

I burst into a loud cry,I saw him,he is angry at me

I feel someone pull me closer into his embrace

Me: "he was there Quinton I swear, he was standing right there I saw him, I saw him with my own two eyes, how come you didn't see him!!"

Quinton: "shhhh calm down Liss"

I break out of his grip, tears streaming down my face

Me: "Leave me alone! Why didn't you see him!!"

Quinton: "Lisa there was no...."

Me: "Get out!"

Quinton: "what..liss"

Me: "I SAID GET OUT!"

he looks at me with pity then gets up and walks out

I throw a pillow at him

Me: "I'm not crazy! I know what I saw!"

He looks at me once more then heads out the door closing it behind him

I cover myself with the blanket and break down, I miss him, I miss my father, I saw him he was standing right there with blood all over his body

I get off the bed, make my way to the bathroom, Its still in the middle of the night, I wash my face, I'm already naked so I just wore my PJs, I can still feel my cookie burning, Quinton fucked me like crazy tonight, I failed to resist him..again, I hate how he makes me so weak, emotionally and physically, now I feel bad for shouting at him, these nightmares are driving me crazy. I walk around the house looking for Quinton but he's not here, I notice the door a bit open so I head outside only to find him sitting on a brick in front of the house smoking his cigarette, I sit next to him on another brick. We sit there in silence.

Me: "I'm sorry about earlier "

He puffs out thin line of smoke facing up,I wish he didn't have to look this cute while doing that

Quinton: "I guess I understand"

silence

he carries on enjoying his smoke even making those hissing sounds, this guy loves nicotine

Me:"can I try that?"

He looks at me then shakes his head

Quinton: No,you can't, you under age you shouldn't even be drinking alcohol"

Me:"oh please, dad, I'm turning eighteen in two weeks time so its the same as if I'm eighteen "

Quinton: "not the same"

Me:"argh just give me that"

I grab it from him,look at it for a while,before bringing it close to my mouth

I suck in as much as I can, now I'm coughing

like crazy

Quinton takes his cigarette from me

Quinton: "I told you,you too young for this"

I wait for him to finish, he flecks it off

Quinton: "let's go back to bed,we have a long day tomorrow"

Me:"you mean today"

He chuckles then we go back to bed,I tell him all about my dream

Quinton: "what do you think this dream means?"

Me:"I have no idea"

Quinton: "do you think the friends his talking about could be me?"

Me:"it could be anyone,you,yonela...well yeah that's about it,but why would he be protecting me from y'all when you are the two people that are always there for me more than anyone,y'all

like my second family "

Quinton: "maybe I should move out"

Me:"No! You not moving out,I need you now more than ever"

Quinton: "that's not the only reason I need to move out"

Me:"why? What's the other reason? "

Quinton: "I can't resist you Lisa, we always get tempted to sleep with each other,and you not even my girl,I feel like I'm using you and that's something I don't wanna do"

Me:"and you just cheated on your girlfriend, I'm sorry"

He cups my face

Quinton: "please never apologise for that,this might be wrong but liss I don't regret it at all"

Me:"you don't? "

Quinton: "Never,I'll always be thankful for the time you gave me your innocence, and for last night's awesome time,and for waking up next to you everyday"

Me:"I don't regret it too"

And I love you so muchbut we can never be

Me:"please don't move out"

Quinton: "no I won't, I'm going to propose to you today when your grams comes back,during dinner I'll propose"

Me:"oh I can't wait to be Mrs O'Brien "

He smiles

Quinton: "it suits you perfectly"

We have that eye contact moment

Me:"let's sleep shall we"

We get in the covers we turn our backs on each other....I feel him move around, next thing his all

wrapped against me,I smile to myself then doze off

Me:"come on yonela you've been giving me the silent treatment the whole day now"

Yonela: "I have nothing to say to you Lisa"

Me:"come on nela, let's not allow a boy to come between us,anything but a dick"

Yonela: "cause you want to keep all the dicks for yourself right?,Quinton's dick,I liked thato first but you had to date him right? I've been talking about this transfer student way before he came I loved him before I even met him you thought I was crazy, then he comes and I tell you I love him,what do you do,make him your future hubby? You always getting the cute ones,you pretend you don't want them but no deep down you a thirsty bitch...in high school you acted all holly but I see the city has

revealed your true self,I won't be surprised if you catch the virus,cause after all this is The city of gold"

She's literally squeezing and squashing my heart right now

Me:"I don't believe you....you know what yonela,if you love Mncedisi that much that you would talk to me the way you talking after so many years of our friendship then you can have him okay! I don't care,if you so desperate and obsessed about this guy you can have him I'm not going to stand in your way,I broke up with thato weeks ago,you've never once shown that you had feelings for thato you the one who pushed me into dating him in the first place,so you can have him too...as for Quinton we both know he's a player if you want him so bad go take him I'll even hook you up he'd be glad to have some fresh pussy throwing itself on him,have them all Yonela I don't care,I have

greater and more important things to worry about than fighting for dicks"

Yonela: "yeah right more important stuff? Like what? Lying to your sick grandmother playing fake families with Quinton..... Mmmh I wonder how your granny would feel if she finds out her innocent little angel's secrete"

She gives me an evil eye

Me: "you wouldn't dare!"

She comes closer to me breathing on my face

Yonela: "wanna try me?"

Me:"what do you want from me yonela?"

Yonela: "I want you to stay away from Liam and while you do that make sure he comes for me"

Me:"I'll stay away from him...but what if he doesn't want you?"

Yonela: "then you better make sure he does"

Me:"I can't force him to love you yonela"

Yonela: "just like how you can't force me to not tell your grams all your dirty....."

I grab he shirt then pin her against the nearest wall

Me:" listen to me carefully, you gonna stay far away from my grandmother, you tell her a word that's going to break her heart or even come close to her,if anything happens to her because of your mouth,I swear to God Yonela I will kill you,with my own bare hands....if its boys you want go get them I won't stand in your way!"

I let go of her then walked away,we were still in campus and some saw us but I couldn't care less,the day proceeded after a long day it was time to go home

I'm now waiting for Quinton to pick me up...I guess now I'm friendless

"Why the long face?"

I get startled by the sound of his voice

Me:"oh Mncedisi"

Mnce:"hey,how you doing "

Me:"I'm okay I guess"

Mnce:"you sure? How's your grandma?"

I sigh

Me:"she's fine she'll be discharged today"

Mnce:"I'm glad to hear that,Lisa I'm really sorry about keeping you away"

Me:"its not your fault its not like you kidnapped me"

Mnce: "and I meant what I said to you..in the text"

I look up at him,gosh I forgot how handsome he is

Me:"Mncedisi,I'm sorry but I'll have to reject that date"

He frowns

Mnce:"but why? come on khanya,I know these feelings are mutual, you can't tell me you don't feel even a little feeling for me"

Me:"even if I do,I can't be with you,I don't want any enemies...a lot of girls around here want you and you know it,if a girl like me could have you,I'll be hated more with reason more than I was hated without reason"

Mnce:"now who could possibly hate an adorable doll like yourself,people will be jealous no matter who you date,don't allow haters to dictate how you should live your life,who to love and not to love,you'll end up living life trying to please your haters then realise at the end that you never got the chance to live your own life cause you were too busy trying to get the approval of your haters....trust me
sweety,haters will always be hating nothing you do or say will ever change that,no matter how

perfect you can try to make yourself,they'll always find something to bring you down... "

Me:"I hear you but Mnce we can't....

He holds my hands then lifts up my face to look at him

Mnce:"please Lisa,please give me a chance,I know I'm not perfect but I want you to experience all the love I have in me to give to you"

Our eyes lock for a brief moment I see the sincerity in his tiger brown eyes

I chuckle

Me:"my best friend(well ex best friend) loves you Lee and she hates the fact that you want me, I think she just broke up with me a few minutes ago because of you,I told her I'll stay away from you that she can have you,please go to her she really likes you"

Mnce:"dammit Lisa I like you,okay,even if I don't get to be with you I won't go to her because I do t have feelings for her,I have feelings for you,I want you....

He pulls me closer holding me around my waist... We in public by the way

Mnce (whispers):"I need you "

My heartbeat excelerates as our faces are only an inch apart

Mnce(softly): "just one chance,I'll treat you like the beautiful Queen you are.....all I want you to say now is yes before I let go of you if you say no...I'll never bother you again"

My body is getting too heavy for my legs

Me(whispers): "I...I,..

Mnce:" just one chance please"

Me:"fine....but..

Mnce: "Yeeaaaah!"

He picks me up and spins me around

Me(giggling): "put me down marn!"

He puts me down

Mnce:"I swear you won't regret this"

Me:"but I want us to take things slow okay?"

He nods excitedly like a little boy

Me:"like very slowly Lee, as in our first date can't be this weekend"

He frowns still like a little boy making me laugh

Me:"and as for sex,you'll have to be really patient "

Mnce:"okay can we not discuss this here,can I give you a ride home?"

I was about to answer him when Quinton's car parks right in front of us

Mncedisi was still holding my hands, I move them away from him quickly

Me:"I'll see you around "

Mnce:"can I at least get a hug from my beautiful girlfriend "

Oh yeah..he's my boyfriend now,I don't know why that didn't register in my head

I hug him, he gives me a tight squeeze picking me up a little

Quinton hoots

We let go of each other

Me:"bye "

Mnce:"kiss?"

I give him the look

Mnce:"fine...I'll call you later neh?"

I nod as I get in the car and Quinton speeds away

Me:"hey you "

He ignores me

Me:"hello Quinton? "

No word from Quinton, I wonder what I did this time

Me:"yo Ambrose"

He looks at me then back at the road

Me:"bad day?"

He sighs

Quinton: "hey Lisa"

Me:"okay why you being so cold to me?"

Quinton: "I'm sorry guess I had a long day"

Me:"tell me about it"

Quinton: "you look like you enjoyed your day with that cheese boy of yours...what's his name..mncence?"

I burst into laughter

Me:"yoh Ayi Quincy ha.a stop it"

He laughs

Quinton: "who's Quincy?"

We both laugh hard

Me:"and who's mncence? "

We crack up and laugh more gosh that sounds so wrong mncence!!

We get to the hospital where we are told to wait

We sat there laughing and talking about silly stuff when the doctor makes his way to us

We stand up

Doc:"she will be ready just now,but there's just one problem "

My blood drops from the expression on his face

Quinton: "what is it?"

Doc:"the cancer is getting worse,she's only left with approximately two or three weeks"

My heart sinks

Doc:"if y'all do the surgery, there's a high possibility she might die during surgery and a very little chance for her to survive, or you can decide not to do the surgery which is what I recommend, then spend as much time as you can with her,make the most of the time she's still alive"

silence

Doc:"I'm deeply sorry I know this is not easy for y'all, are there any questions you'd like to ask?"

Quinton shakes his head

Me(shakey voice):"can we go take her?"

Doc:"yes,the same ward"

He nods and walks away, we turn to look at each other with the same sad facial expression my mouth is shaking I want to cry

Quinton: "just try to hold them in for now

bub,we'll cry later,let's jiuust try stay strong for grams right now"

I push my tears back

Me (whispers):"yeah"

He hugs me for a while then we head to her ward

She was looking all jolly and beautiful like she had no worries

We drove home making light conversations here and there.

I cooked a nice warm meal for dinner

I'm still cooking when I feel someone wrap his arms around me

Me:"hungry already? "

Quinton: "hungry for you yeah"

I giggle as the butterflies come back

Quinton (singing): "do you mind if I talk to

you?.....and do you mind if I touch
you...there"

he slides his hand down my tummy and cups
my punani, making me loose my breath as I
gasp

Me(whispers): "stop"

he chuckles then walks away,I freeze for a while
as my body cools down

I dished up and set the table

We are now around the table eating

Quinton clears his throat we look at him

Quinton: "there's something I'd love to do,that
I've been longing to do for a very long time"

I look at grams and she has a big smile on her
face

Quinton: "Lisa,its no lie that I fell in love with you
from the very first moment I layed my eyes on
you,this may sound cliché but you took my

breath away,from our first encounter at the restaurant, I knew you were the kind of woman I'd love to spend the rest of my life with.....and I don't want to waste anymore time"

He gets on his knee,my heart beats faster,I'm so nervous

Quinton: "Lisakhanya Mthethwa,would you make my dreams come true and please marry me?"

Grams:"Yes!!"

We look at her and burst into laughter

Me:"you heard the woman,yes,yes I'll marry you
"

He slides the beautiful ring in my finger....wait a minute this looks familiar

Me:"Quinton! Is the ? The?"

He nods

Me:"how did you.....

I stop as soon as I remember that he's supposed to be rich

He gets up we share a kiss he squeezes me tight

Quinton: "I love you so much"

Me:"I love you too"

Grams:"ncaaaaah this is the happiest day of my life"

That was music to my ears

We carry on having dinner laughing and reminisce on past stories

My phone vibrates in my pocket I take it out and check,its Mncedisi, I reply with a text

"I'll call you later"

I put it away,I look at Quinton who gave me one disappointed look then carried on eating

Grams: "usakhumbula kodwa Lisa ?" (do you still remember Lisa?)

I laugh

Me: "yeah worst day of my life"

Quinton wasn't himself anymore now his laughs were just pure pretence

Quinton: "please excuse me"

Me: "where you going babe?"

Quinton: "I just remembered I have to get something in the office"

I can't believe he's going to Enhle right now!

Argh!

Grams: "yoh usebenza nzima umkhwenyana" (hard working husband you have)

.

.

.

.

.

is Lisa making the right choices????? what would you do if you were her?

[07/28, 16:56] W: Insert 16

LISA

I'm woken by my phone ringing

I toss turn and groan before stretching my hand all over the bed searching for it, I guess Quinton didn't come back since he left last night, I'm sick worried about him, where is he, how did he sleep, is he okay, is he safe, who is he with, where did he go, why did he just leave like that, is he mad at me, did I do something that made angry? Oh God I hope he's in one peace wherever he is.

Got you! I put it on my ear

Me: "mmhm?"

"Sorry did I wake you up beautiful?"

Me: "heeyy Lee, no actually I'm sure I was about to wake up anyway"

Mnce(chuckles): "do you know what time it is?"

Me: "mmmmh eight? Nine?"

He laughs a little

Mnce:"its quarter to one"

I lazily get up to sit on my butt

Me:"oh no! I overslept "

Mnce:"ngenye inhlobo yentombi elala kude kubethe lamaxesh!! Ayi ayi makuvukwe tshini "

I burst into laughter

Me:"you sound like my grandmother right now"

Mnce:"Eish that can't be good....uhm baby cela uvuke ngoku sthandwa Sam sekusile"

Oh my his deep low voice is to die for

Me:"mmh that's more like it"

We laugh

Mnce:"beautiful, I need to see you"

Me:"I'd like to see you too,but today I'm just not feeling well"

Mnce:"what's wrong? Do you need the doctor? I can take you if its serious"

Me:"No,its nothing serious, just a headache I'm sure its because of sleeping too much"

Mnce:"do you have other plans today?"

Me:"tonight,yes but during the day,No"

Mnce:"then get your sexy ass up,then clean it up,so that I come and pick it up"

I burst into laughter, oh my! I think I might just like this guy

Me:"Yes Sir!...just one question "

Mnce:"I'm not telling where I'm taking you....but either than that ask away beautiful "

Me:"oh come on,you know that's exactly what I wanted to ask"

Mnce:"then I'm sorry I can't tell mi alma"

Me:"what was that?"

Mnce:"was what?"

Me:"mi something....the last part"

Mnce:"the last part of what?"

Me:"Argh mncedisi you know what I'm talking about"

Mnce:"you've totally lost me now babe"

Me:"mh mh mh nxa arghhh never mind "

Mnce:"you seem frustrated,what's the matter?"

Me:"go to heaven!"

Mnce (laughing): "wow so soon? But I just met you"

Me:"shut up Lee"

Mnce:"make me Lee "

Me:"you can't call me Lee, you Lee "

Mnce:"but you Lisa short for Lee "

Me:"and you liam short for Lee "

Mnce:"I guess this was destiny.. Match made in heaven"

Me(blushing):"don't sweet talk me,I'm still frustrated "

Mnce:"when last did you have sex?"

I laugh

Me:"I'm not sexually frustrated Liam

Mncedisi.....uhm Surname!"

He bursts into laughter I find myself laughing at my clumsy mouth

Mnce (laughing):"Surname? Really? "

Me(laughing):"you never told me your last name nje"

Mnce:"you so cute,you know that"

Me:"cats are cute Liam,teddy bears are cute,babies are cute"

He laughs

Mnce: "okay you so adorable"

Me:"that's one and the same thing "

We laugh

Me:"bye,you finishing my airtime"

Mnce:"last time I checked I'm the one who called?"

Me:"oh yah,well you finishing your airtime "

Mnce: "ncwaaaah look at you caring about my airtime"

Me:"oh boi I can already imagine that googly face you making "

He laughs

Mnce:"look at you already getting to know me"

Me:"weeeh ayi uligeza bye"(you crazy)

Mnce:"look at you already figuring out my personality "

Me:"look at me about to hang up !"

He laugh out loud

Mnce:"see you in a few minutes Mi Alma"

Me:"there it is! that word again what does it mean!?"

...

Me:"hello?"

...

Me:"Lee? You still there?"

I check my phone, wow that idiot dropped the call,mxm I'm so going to get him,I know a few languages too you know,for instance,like.....well like the ones I'll google before he comes LOL

Wow I feel like my mood has been pumped from zero to hero

I get up all excited even humming, clean our room,I freshen up,now I'm looking for a nice sunny day out outfit, I decide to wear my short Pink floral print off shoulder long sleeve high waist romper, its shows just about enough skin my shoulders and chest and my beautiful legs

and thighs,I put on my white strappy sandals,tied my long hair into a messy bun,fixed my face,then finished off with deep rose plum matt lipstick.

I take a good look at my self,I must say I look flames,I gab my small handbag then head out the room,I find grams in the sitting room

Me:"good afternoon grams"

I sit on the single couch while she was resting on the bigger couch

Grams:"Molo nana, eeh wavele wa vuka somhle kangaka kuyiwaphi?"(you just woke up and you already looking this pretty,where you off to?)

Me:"nawe uyabona nje ukba ifridge is empty I want to do a little shopping"

Grams:"unyanisile ke kwelocala(you got that part right) the fridge and cupboards are empty....ugqibele ebuyile umkhwenyana?(did hubby come back last night?)

Me:"yeah he came back very late then went to work early"

Grams: "mmmh....when you come back we need to talk"

Yooohh this doesn't sound good

Me:"sounds serious?"

Grams: "its very serious and you won't like it"

Me:"mmh please just tell me now"

Grams: "No I don't want to ruin your good mood,go do that shopping, buy me something nice too"

Me(smiling): "of cause,how can I not"

My phone rings

Me:"hello"

Mnce:"I'm by the gate...should I come in?"

Me:"No,I'll be right there"

I drop the call

Me:"the uber is here,let me get going, I should be back before or just after six"

I peck her forehead the head out, he was leaning against his car facing the gate,he grins as his eyes meet mine, I stand in front of him he pulls me in for a hug,his Cologne fill me up making me weak to the knees

Mnce:"you look so hot right now"

Me:"you not so bad yourself"

Mnce:"I try"

Try!!!? This dude looks like a million dollar you can just smell the money on him, he's dressed in a white shirt with the crane birds all over,I notice he has a tatoo on his chest probably his whole chest but I can only see a little bit of it as only two buttons are unbuttoned, red shorts which hold him perfectly not too tight,I can't help but notice the big bump where the guy in between his leg stays LOL *wink wink* and

white air Jordan.

We are now in the car,he's playing boring music,rap

Me:"let's switch off the radio "

He chuckles

Mnce:"guessing rap is not your thing"

Me:"not really "

Mnce:"me neither "

I laugh

Me:"then why you playing it?"

Mnce:"I thought you'd find me cool if I play this kind of music "

Me:"aaww you were trying to impress me?"

he chuckles,nods then smiles shyly while concentrating on the road

Damn! Is what I thought about this guy when I first saw him and honestly I'm still saying it

....Damn!

Me:"please don't stress yourself about trying to impress me Lee,just be yourself and introduce me into your world where you are being you, focus on keeping me smiling and happy and I'll do the same,as long as we make each other comfortable on being ourselves around each other,just give me your love,trust,honesty,communication, company, and loyalty, with those six things,I'll be the most impressed girl in the world"

Mnce:"noted Mi Alma"

He takes my hand and places it on his cold lips for a while

He takes me to some beautiful park we had a picnic, it was so amazing I felt like I was in a romantic movie, we had so much to talk about,we laughed almost the entire time we even played food fight with grapes though,I've

never felt this happy in a long time,I forgot all my problems.

I asked him to take me to the mall we are now doing some grocery shopping

Me:"No Man we don't need that"

Mnce:"come on how do you live without oreos....they sooo delicious with milk,trust me I make sure everyday in midnight I wake up for them"

He's so childish Just like Quin...argh why am I even comparing them

Me: "okay they delicious now put them back"

He ignores me he kept throwing in a lot of junk and things I didn't need, I let him be I'll just leave them by the till

We got to the till I just took the stuff I needed from the trolley and left all his junk he was throwing in, he didn't complain he just gave me

an 'you so evil' look

I paid for my things and he paid for his junk.

Its now around seven he is parked by the gate

Me:"this was one of the best days of my life...thank you"

Mnce: "I wish we could repeat it"

Me:"me too"

We stare at each other

Mnce:"you beautiful khanya"

Me:"you handsome Liam"

he smiks

He brings his face close to mine I meet him halfway and we kiss,for a good five minutes

Me:"goodnight Lee "

Mnce:"goodnight Mi Alma "

Great I forgot to google a few words to confuse

him with,Eish next time

I walk out and he opens the door for me

Me:"I can get used to this"

He laughs

Mnce: "I should help you with the plastic bags"

I glance at the house and Quinton's car is parked outside

Me:"uhm I'll manage"

Mnce:"nonsense, there's like twenty bags here,I shouldn't even ask to help you"

He opens the boot and we take some plastics
Eish what will I introduce him to grams as?

We first packed the plastic bags in front of the door he went to fetch more

Me:"hey but these are your plastics "

Mnce:"well I just realized I already have all these things so can you please have them instead?"

Me:"you were buying them for me in the first place right?"

Mnce:"okay you caught me"

We laugh as I open the door

My eyes meet his as I open the door

Mncedisi helps me with the plastics inside

Me:"hey Q"

He nods, okay? I guess grams is in her room"

Mncedisi:"sup man"

He ignores him and just gives him a nasty look

He turns to look at me

Mnce: "I'd help you unpack if you want?"

Me(giggling):"times up Lee"

"Nguban owo?" (Who's that?)

We all turn to look at her

Me: "oh grams,this is,is my uber driver"

I look at mncedisi who was a bit confused but returned normal once he looked at me for a while

Mnce:"yes,uhm I was just helping mam with her plastic bags "

Grams: "ooh okay,ungwaphi wena nyana?"
(Where you from son?)

Me:"yooh makhulu,he has other clients he has to rush for"

I say as I lead him out,I close the door as we outside,we now by the gate

Me:"I'm sorry about that I...."

Mnce: "I understand, you not ready to introduce me to your grams,its okay"

Me:"you understand? "

He nods

Mnce:"you can take as much time as you want,remember, I agreed in taking things slow"

I sigh in relief

Me:"thanks"

He pulls me into his strong buff arms I have to tiptoe so that we can be on the same level, he kisses my forehead

Mnce: "we'll chat all night right?"

Me:"you bet "

We share one last deep kiss before he leaves.

I close the gate then turn towards the house only to notice Quinton in front of the house smoking ,he startled me

I walk towards him then past him,I was about to open the door

"Nice car he got"

I stop and turn to look at him

Me:"yeah,its nice"

Quinton:"so y'all dating now?"

Me:"yeah,kind of"

Quinton: "kind of?"

Me:"we are"

He puffs out smoke

Quinton: "you like him?"

Me:.....

He looks at me

I nod

Me:"yes,I like him"

Quinton: "a lot?"

Me:"I guess so"

Quinton: "you love him?"

Me:.....

He looks at me again

We gaze into each others eyes

Me:"I.. Its still too early to tell"

Quinton: "you happy?"

I nod

Me:"yeah"

Quinton: "he makes you happy?"

I don't know why my chest is so painful like my heart is suffocating

Me:"yes,he makes me happy"

That came out as a whisper

He flecks his cigarette and squashes it with his shoe

He comes closer to me

Quinton(whispers): "then if he makes you happy....I'm happy"

He pecks my lips slowly,I feel my body going through all kinds of exotic feelings

Quinton: "you might wanna put on your ring before going inside"

He leaves me standing there dumfounded,I take it out from my small handbag and slide it in.....I guess we not going to that dinner with Enhle today.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

After unpacking the groceries I head to grandma's room she is sitting up inside her covers ,I sit at the edge of the bed

Me:"did you drink your pills?"

Grams: "ewe (yes)"

Me:"what is it you wanted to talk about?"

Grams: "you can't marry Quinton"

My heart skips a lot of beats

Me:"why not?"

Grams: "the Johnson family called me, they told me,when I signed the employment contract there was an agreement in it that,I would give them one of my granddaughter's in the future to marry one of the future grandson'sat that time I needed a job,and I was also not that educated so I signed anything they made me sign, I'm sorry baby,at first when I told them I can't allow that to happen,they let me be,that's why I allowed you to marry the person you love,but now,they say their son is back from overseas, and he needs a wife as soon as possible,they threatened me Lisa...*crying*..I'm sorry mntanam"

I feel warm liquid running down my cheeks

Me:"wow..so now I'm forced to marry him,even

if I don't want to...I have no say"

Grams (crying): "its all my fault"

I get inside the covers with her and we hug each other

Me:"no...its not your fault,it's okay grams,I'll break up with Quinton and marry to this estranged familyplease don't cry makhulu,you said so yourself, this too shall pass"

I'm trying to be as calm as I can about this for the sake of my grams

I comfort her till she falls asleep,I tuck her in kiss her then head to bed

I find Quinton pressing his phone,I change into PJs then get in the covers

I turn my back on him,before I know it,I can't hold them in anymore

I burst out into a loud cry, I feel Quinton quickly

getting up and lifts me to sit up, I cry on his chest, I can't take it anymore this is just too much for one person, I'm officially broken, into a zillion peaces

Quinton: "talk to me bub"

I get off his chest I even have hiccups from crying, my nose is running too

Quinton: "come here"

He pats his lap, I sit on his lap, he takes off his vest

Quinton: "blow"

He makes me blow my nose on his vest which is so disgusting but that's the least of my worries

Me: "its over Quinton "

He looks confused

Me: "the whole pretending thingy, its all over, we don't have to pretend anymore"

Quinton: "what!? She knows the truth?"

I shake my head

Me:"No! I have no choice, I have to get married,whether I like it or not I have to marry into the Johnson family! "

He doesn't ask any further questions he pulls me into his embrace

Me:"there goes my dreams,there goes my independence, there goes my freedom,there goes my youth!!....aahhh"

Quinton: "shhhhh I'm sorry babe,please calm down"

Me(crying):"I can't!! I'm hurting!! Its too painful Quinton! My grandma is dying and I'm being thrown to the wolves...I'll never get to fall in love....I'm cursed! Actually I'm a curse!"

Quinton(crying): "don't say that....oh god,do you want ice cream?"

He doesn't know what to say,he's panicking and looks as hurt as I am

Me:"No,I want to die too,I'm tired of people dying leaving me to suffer,I want to die too"

Quinton: "No..no you can't die,then I'll suffer"

Me:"why? Why would you suffer,you have your perfect family,beautiful rich girlfriend, you don't need me,I'm just a burden to you,I've always been ever since I got.....

Next thing I know his lips smashes into mine, he pulls out

Quinton: "because, I love you Lisa....I'd suffer because I love you so damn much!"

Tears were running down his face

Quinton: "I've never loved anyone like the way I love you"

Is it just me or has he been repeatedly saying he loves me all I one sentence

Me:"why now? Why you only telling me this now?"

Quinton: "there's too many reasons, some you not ready to know....but there's many times where I wished to tell you Lisa"

Me:"you could've just told me! We could've got so much time to be together,before this whole marriage thing,although we would've been broken but at least we would've shared some romance, now its too late,its too late"

He slides in the bed sleeping on him back,I sleep ontop of him

Quinton: ",maybe we were just never meant to be together Lisa, maybe there's more to us not being able to be together than this"

Me:"but I love you Quinton, I love you with all my heart,I've never had this much connection with anyone,we love each other,is our love not strong enough to fight against all odds?"

Quinton: "I wish I could answer you my love"

We carried on crying in silence,I can feel every part of his body on mine

Chest to chest, tummy to tummy pelvic to pelvic, our hearts are beating to the same rhythm, I can't believe mine is still beating.... All the foreign feelings come back,I feel his crotch getting harder,I press my thighs together as I feel a really warm itch down there,He flipped me over and pleased himself all over my body,kissing every part of it,kissing, licking,touching and sucking,at this moment I feel like I'm in paradise, in our own world just the two of us, he is about to thrust but stops and looks me in the eyes intensely, the lights are on,I want to see every emotion he feels

Me(whispers):"Make love to me Q"

With that said he thrusts in gently but my moans shout otherwise

this is probably the last time I get to experience
Love

.

.

.

.

.

.

As we wait for the turn of events 

[07/28, 16:57] W: Insert 17

LISA

I've been up for quite a while now, and I can't take my eyes off him, he's sleeping so peacefully, I feel relieved from watching him sleep, he looks so innocent and cute, I can sense the comfort on his face and smile, he opens his mouth a bit then snorts, I can't seem to take my eyes off him, he's so relaxed and innocent, I wish I could do this my whole life just watch him sleep... a frown forms on his face, maybe he's having a bad dream

Quinton (sleepy): "please...."

He keeps quiet

Quinton: "don't..... Don't do it..... please ... you"

hurting her

His starting to sweat so I shake him

Me:" Quinton.. Wake up "

Quinton: "please..don't..... Don't do this...No

Me:" Quinton! Wake up!"

he was moving around and sweating I think he's crying

Quinton: "You..killed her....Nooo!..

I shake him harder he opens his eyes wide looks at me for a while then sits up

Quinton: "are you okay?"

Me:"I'm fine"

Quinton: " you hurt?"

I shake my head

Me:"No,I'm fine,just a dream"

Quinton: "I'd never let anything or anyone hurt

you, you know that right?"

Me: "I know Quinton, in your dream, was someone hurting me?"

He looks at me then nods

Quinton: "but I'd never let someone hurt you like that Lisa"

I move close and comfort him in my chest

Me: "I know you would never, it was just a dream"

Quinton: "protecting you is the only thing I've ever done, the only thing I'll ever do, I'd never ever hurt you specially physically let alone anyone else hurt you"

Me: "who was hurting me?"

Quinton: "I didn't see the face...don't worry it was just a dream..right?"

Me: "yeah"

he kisses my forehead

He gets off the bed

Quinton: "okay,let me go make us breakfast"

Me:"wenanana!"

He laughs and puts on his briefs before heading out

I take my phone... There's a few text from Liam and two missed calls

I call him he picks up almost immediately

Lee:"hello"

I should break up with Liam,my life is too complicated

Me:"hey you,how are you"

He sighs

Lee:"Lisa I know that you want us to take things slow and you probably not sure whether you love me yet,but the least you can do is try give me just a lil bit of your attention "

Me:"I'm so sorry mncedisi,I just had a lot going on last night"

Lee:"you could've at least texted goodnight or 'I'm busy' "

Me:"I feel like such a jerk right now, please forgive me"

Lee:"now how can I not forgive a beauty like yourself"

Me:"you're a god sent"

Lee:"sent to you"

Me: "yeah"

He sighs heavily

Me:"what's the matter?"

Lee:"maybe we shouldn't go any further Lisa, I think we should break up"

Me:"wh..what? Why? I said I'm sorry nje...I won't do it again"

Lee:"its not that.....remember what I told you about,that I have to take over the family business soon "

Me:"yeah"

Lee:" I.. I'm forced to do something I don't want to and this will definitely break us up"

Me:"I don't even wanna ask....I'm also forced to do something I don't want to do,I also think it would be best if we broke up"

I hear him sniff

Lee: "I really hate being from a rich family"

Me:"I wish I was from a rich family, maybe all this wouldn't be happening"

Lee:"I'm sorry that we can't be together, I don't want to hurt you"

Me:"I wish things could've been different "

Lee:"I know it was a short period of time but Lisa I really love you"

Me:.....

Lee: "sorry but its the truth,I love you and there's nothing I can do about it"

Me:"uhm...

When will this end,the heartbreak?

Lee: "I hope we can still be friends though"

I don't think I can handle anymore friends

Me:"I wish we didn't have this convo over the phone"

Lee:"I want to hold you"

Me:"to feel you "

Lee:"to kiss you"

Me:"let's meet"

Lee:"we can't.... I'm headed to P.E right now"

Me:"right now?"

Lee:"yeah...I'll see you when I get back"

Me:"when?"

Lee: "I don't know"

"And breakfast is served"

Me:"I guess I'll see you then,bye"

Lee: "bye beautiful"

I hang up

Quinton: "was that your boyfriend?"

I sigh

Me:"ex boyfriend "

Quinton: "I'm sorry to hear that"

He couldn't hide the spark in his eyes

Me:"oh please,I know you wanna celebrate "

He laughs

Quinton: "not true,but if that's what you want"

Me:"shut up and feed me"

We eat with him feeding me

Me:"ha.a stop it man!"

He keeps missing my mouth

Quinton: "your mouth is so tiny babe,I can't see it"

Me:"my mouth is not that tiny,and stop eating my food uyaphanga"

Quinton: "ndyaxolisa ke thambo lam le polony"(I'm sorry my polony bone)

I burst into laughter..even though I don't want to laugh he always makes me laugh

Me:"polony? Really now"

Quinton: "yeap my polony bone"

Me(laughing): "you crazy"

Quinton: "you drive me crazy"

I giggle and we carry on eating

Me:"Quinton? "

Quinton: "yes bub"

Me:"where were you yesterday? And the night before?"

He sighs

Quinton: "I went to Enhle"

That stung

Me:"oh,well I was just worried about you,you didn't tell me"

Quinton: "I'm sorry,my night didn't go very well actually"

Me:"what happened? "

Quinton: "I guess after I proposed to you,that whole scene,made me realise that,I wasn't pretending anymore,everything that we've been doing saying we pretending, I wasn't, I never pretended a single thing,all the things I said to your grams,the times I'd say I love you, the random kisses in the kitchen, I did all those things wholeheartedly, I've never been that

happy in my whole life, every time I'm with you I'm happy, I feel the need to protect you, when you with some other guy I feel jealous, that night my plan was to go and break things off with her cause I realised I'm not ready for a serious relationship, I didn't call her or tell her I'm coming, and guess what?"

He chuckles

Me: "what!?"

Quinton: "I busted her cheating"

I gasp

Me: "whoa...that's bad.."

Quinton: "you won't believe with whom?"

Me: "who?"

Quinton: "Brandon"

I did not expect that

Me: "Brandon? Your best friend Brandon? "

He nods and chuckles

Quinton: "best friend? Yeah right"

Me: "so much betrayal"

Quinton: "I really thought she was different somehow and just maybe she really loved me like she said she did"

Me: "I'm sorry Q"

He smiles

Quinton: "I guess you the only person I'll ever trust in this world"

Me: "and your family"

Quinton: "I don't know, if my dad could do that to his own family, I don't know if I can fully trust family"

Me: "you never got to finish the story about your dad"

Quinton: "not today, today I want us to have

fun,before they take you away from me"

Me:"I can't help but feel like crying "

He holds my hands

Quinton: "don't worry,you won't last long there...I'll come for you"

Me:"how?"

Quinton: "I'll find a way"

Me:"soon?"

Quinton: "yeah,soon"

Me: "then we can be together"

He nods

Quinton: "forever"

Me:"you promise"

Quinton: "I promise"

We were sitting at the edge of the bed,he made me stand to sit on his lap

Me:"let's run away...we'll go far far away and start a new life there"

Quinton: "what about school?"

Me:"I'll quit and get a job,lots of people can make a living without education, at least I got matric"

he just smiles looking at me

Me:"I know I'm being naive.. but I just wish to get away from all of this"

Quinton: "I love you bub"

Me:"I love you more"

He presses his warm soft lips on mine but not kissing me,we stay like that for some time,its like he was pouring his heart out to me without Using words just his heart beat and breathing said it all

Quinton:"before you go i want you to know the truth about me"

Me:"that's so scary"

Quinton: "please don't freak out"

Me:"mmh I don't know..."

Quinton: "everytime...."

Me:" every time what?"

He sighs heavily

He's really creeping me out

Quinton:"every time I poop,it reminds me of you"

Me:"argh....sick man!"

I punch him repeatedly on the chest

Quinton(laughing); "I'm joking..geez can't you take a joke"

Me:"that's not a nice joke"

He's laughing so hard right now ,I just fold my

arm and look at him

Quinton (laughing): "I'm sorry bub,it was just a joke"

Me:"and you say I have lame jokes"

He calms down and looks at me with that stupid grin on his face

Quinton:"I'm way better than you"

Me:"you didn't see me laughing now did you?"

Quinton: "that's because it was a roast"

Me:"I can roast too"

He laughs

Quinton: "okay,let's hear you try"

Me:"uhmm..you so fat...you could sell shade..ooooohhhhh"

Quinton(laughing): "but I'm not fat"

Me:"come on I thought we were roasting each other"

Quinton: "okay,so its like that....well...I'm sorry, was I meant to be offended? The only thing offending me is your face"

He laughs

Me(gasps):"Jesus loves you... but everyone else thinks you're an asshole"

Quinton:"I don't know what makes you so stupid, but it really works"

Me:"I'm sorry I didn't get that – I don't speak idiot"

Quinton: "It's better to let someone think you're stupid than open your mouth and prove it"

Me:"It looks like your face caught fire and someone tried to put it out with a hammer"

He laughs I hope he's running out cause I am

Quinton:"If I had a face like yours I'd sue my parents"

Me(gasps):"are you saying I'm ugly?"

Quinton: "give up?"

Me:"mxm The only way you'll ever get laid is if you crawl up a chicken's ass and wait"

His mouth hangs open

Quinton: "you mean I won't get laid anytime soon"

Me:"unfortunately we don't have chickens around here"

We laugh

Quinton: "okay you win...I'm out "

Me:"When you were born, the doctor came out to the waiting room and said to your dad, "I'm very sorry. We did everything we could. But he pulled through."

Quinton: "I said you win"

Me:". "I thought of you today. It reminded me to take the garbage out"

Quinton: "Lisa,enough"

Me:"You're so ugly when you look in the mirror,
your reflection looks away"

He starts tickling me

Me(laughing): "stop"

Quinton:"I warned you"

Me:"okay! I'll stop..please stop"

He stopped I got off his lap,I walk towards the
door I look back at him before heading out

Me:"Do yourself a favor and ignore anyone who
tells you to be yourself. Bad idea in your case"

I make a run for it after that, I heard him follow
me but I quickly get into Gram's room I close
the door laughing

Me:"morning makhulu"

Grams:"you seem cheerful today"

Me:"its all Quinton's doings "

Grams:"so you haven't told him yet?"

Me:"I have"

Grams: "how did he take it?"

Me:"Not well at all,but he tried to understand that I don't have a choice"

Grams: "I'm sure y'all both hate me"

I sit next to her

Me:"Never,I couldn't hate you even if I tried,don't worry grams,I'll make sure this marriage don't last,if its the last thing I do"

Grams: "please don't do anything stupid"

Me:"don't worry about it...so when am I going there anyway?"

Grams: "tomorrow morning"

Me:"what! So soon? couldn't they wait for the holidays? "

Grams: "they know about my cancer, they said it

will only be fair if I'm also there to witness the day my granddaughter gets married"

Me:"this is just too much now"

Grams: "I'm sorry for getting you into this mess"

Me:"makhulu....are you sure you didn't know what you signed yourself into? Like they never mentioned it to you "

Grams: "they always said as long as I'm working for them I'm in good hands I'm like part of the family,they didn't treat me like a maid,they treated me like family,when it was time for me to retire they told me not to worry I'll always be part of them and my family will always be protected, at that time I thought they really did that cause they are good people I didn't know it was all part of the contract"

Me:"and I'm sure this contract can't be terminated by your death since the agreement doesn't need you it can only be terminated by

my death....great"

Grams:.....

Me:"did you drink your pills ?"

She nods

Me:"so I'm getting married this weekend?"

I hate the Johnsons and their stupid son for being born

I laugh in disbelief

Me:"arranged marriage? I thought we were in the twenty first centuryoh wait we are,arranged marriages are now done by contracts"

Grams:"I wish there was something I could do to stop all this madness, you too young for this"

Me: "its okay....I'll survive"

I get up and head to the bathroom,I need to freshen up,after a nice cold shower I dress up

then head to the sitting room

Quinton: "ready to go?"

Me: "yeah sure"

We are now driving to somewhere...I don't know what's up with people and not telling me where they taking me

We were driving through very classy suburbs

Me:"okay...this place is not for people like us..what are we doing here?"

I felt so small with all the fancy flashy cars driving by and we in this skorokoro

Quinton: "promise not to get mad?"

Me:"I can't do that,if its gonna make me mad I'll get mad "

Quinton: "just today,please don't"

Me:"okay if it does make me mad,I'll pretend I'm not"

Quinton: "promise?"

Me:"promise...now what is it"

He keeps quiet as we park in front of a very beautiful big gate

He pressed some buttons then pressed his thumb for long

"Access recognized"

Some woman talks from the machine looking thingy he was pressing,the gate opens

Me:"woooow"

The front yard alone was so beautiful and big with something like a water fountain in the middle with trimmed small trees here and there and flowers ,the driveway to the house was quiet long, we parked in front of this big white three story mansion with three sexy cars parked in front of the house

Me:"oh my great God, what is this place?"

He walks out and comes open the door for me I got out and we made our way to the entrance he opened the sliding door

Me:"we can't just badge in here...Quinton? "

My eyes wonder around admiring every single thing in this house from the sparkling floor to the mesmerizing roof

Quinton: "welcome to my home"

I looked at him amused then burst into laughter, I stopped when I noticed a big picture framed of his whole family,Next to that one was of himself alone wearing a very polished suit

Then another one of a handsome young man who looks like him next to that one was a picture of Candra in the most beautiful dress next to her was another handsome man who looked older then Quinton

I looked at him and he had a nervous smile

Me:" You serious!?"

He nods

No way he can't be serious, he's poor...he is very very poor...I'm dreaming again! Quinton is Poor.

I notice Candra walking down the stair

Candra:"Bro! You finally bought her home!"

what the hell is going on??

Me:"Quinton? "(Whispering)

Candra came towards me and gave me a hug, we are now sited in this beautiful big yet very simple lounge,it had too little but was so beautiful

Candra got up to go get us something to drink

Quinton:" I know you have many questions for me right now"

Me:"you better start talking"

Quinton: "I'll explain everything, but all I'll tell you right now is that, this is my home, where I grew up"

Me:"I don't understand, you told me..."

Candra:"here are your drinks oh and would you like some hors d'oeuvre?"

She was asking me..I feel so embarrassed right now, what in the living world is that

Me:"I..uhm..excuse me?"

Candra: "hors d'oeuvres would you like some?"

It sounds like she's saying order

Me:"I'll have a sandwich thanks"

I saw Quinton's face turning red trying to hold in his laugh

Candra looks at me confused

Candra: "uhm..oh..okay"

She walked back to the direction she came from

Me:"what's so funny? "

He burst into laughter

Quinton (laughing): "yohh bub you killing me"

Me:"mxm,take me home"

I stood up

Quinton (laughing): "come on...wait..I'm sorry"

Me:"what was Candra really offering me? "

Quinton:"hors d'oeuvres....they are appetizers, a sort of snack"

Me:"oohh"

He made me sit down.. I feel so embarrassed and small right now

.

.

.

.

to be continued

[07/28, 16:57] W: Insert 18

LISA

After we had some snacks "hors d'oeuvres" lol they were delicious, it was just fried chicken on a toothpick or as she calls it " Peanut Chicken Skewers With Chili Mayonnaise" argh rich people, Candra got a call from her boyfriend and excused herself so its now just me and Quinton, he showed me around the whole house, its so big, everything is white and gold shiny and sparkly.

We are now at the back yard, its soo huge ,there's a chilling pool area, and a big yard with nicely cut grass, there a basketball court and also a cricket pitch, we carry on walking

Me: "damn this place is magical, looks like a palace"

Quinton: "yeah it does"

Me: "Quinton, why did you tell me you were poor when growing up?"

Quinton: "well we were once poor, only got this

rich when I was ten"

Me:"but still you grew up rich,all this time we were suffering,you rich"

Quinton: "Lisa, you don't understand, all of this,there's nothing nice about it"

Me:"what do you mean? Are you out of your mind,Quinton we used to starve for almost the whole year with absolutely nothing to eat,we almost got kicked out of our apartment cause things were so bad,I sacrificed my bursary money so that I help with rent,my Granny's pension would only last us half of the month,the money you made at the club was so little it finishes just on the service of your scrap car,we'd sleep with bread and butter for months with no tea,if you didn't get the raise you got this year we would've moved to a smaller and cheaper apartment, we almost sold your car,remember?... I don't get it Quinton why would you let yourself suffer so much when you

can have anything you want in this world,a mother that loves you,a sister that's very fond of you and two brothers and a big ass house, why,why would you not take advantage of your privileges? "

We stop walking he looks at me

Quinton: "remember I told you my dad was involved in shady businesses?"

Me:"yeah"

Quinton: "my dad was a ruthless man who cared about nothing but his businesses and money and taking care of his enemies, he took care of his family,yes, but never showed us fatherly love like the one I saw on movies or other kids at school,when it was career day ,children would come with their fathers and mothers who were doctors,lawyers,policemen and all that ,my mother she would come but leave early because of business, my dad just

made it clear that he has no time for that crap and never will,he had so many enemies,sometimes they'd have their gun fights right here in this very luxurious yard,you see the beautiful grass we standing on,lots of blood has been spilt in this very luxurious premises even inside the house,I hate this place Lisa, it holds many bad memories, I that luxurious house,I hate that pool,I hate the air of this place,I hate everything my father has ever accomplished from his dirty businesses"

My body cringes, as I think of the people who might've died here, I hate people like Quinton's dad

Me:"so that hatred is the cause of you moving out?"

Quinton: "Yes, I wanted not to do with the money,during high school dad taught me everything about his businesses, so that I could one day take over he taught all of us except

Candra since she's a girl,he died when I was doing matric thank goodness I was not forced to do illegal things anymore"

Me:"wait,when he taught y'all, you mean like y'all were really working for him and doing all those stuff?"

He nods

Quinton: "yes, Lisa, a lot of blood runs through these hands"

He pulls out his hands to me

Quinton: "sometimes, I want to chop them off"

I hold his hands and lock them with mine

Me:"you can't blame yourself for your Father's selfish ways"

Quinton: "now you see what lies behind the flashy luxurious life?..blood and hatred, no happiness, no love,no comfort,no sleep,no peace"

He pulls me closer to him and locks his arms around my waist

Quinton: "remember our would you rather game?"

Me:"how can I forget"(laughs)

Quinton: "I've got a few would rather for myself"

I raise my brow smiling

Quinton: "I'd rather be poor and be happy than rich and grumpy, I'd rather be poor and have a peaceful sleep than rich and always haunted by nightmares, I'd rather be poor and be loved than rich and be hated,I'd rather be poor and have you by my side than be rich and have a gold digging whore who'll love my money more than me.....you see bub,I'd rather suffer and work my way to the top the right way than get there using people's tears and blood"

My body cringes again when he says blood,....what the hell--

Me(whispers): "Quinton...."

Quinton:" what's wrong? What do you see"

Me:"behind you...he's back,look he's right behind you..."

My dad is standing there looking the same with blood all over him

He looks behind him

Quinton:"there's no one there"

He disappeared

I sigh and my breathing goes back to normal

Me:"nevermind I'm ...I don't know what's up with me"

He hugs me

Quinton: "was it your father again?"

I nod

Quinton: "I think your father doesn't want you to be with me"

Me:"what? No its not you,why wouldn't he wat you,you've been nothing but good to me"

Quinton: "ever since I've moved in you've been having nightmares and bad things have been happening, we fell even more in love,now many things are ruining our chance at love,your dad keeps telling you to run away,I think he means from me"

I shake my head

Me:"No,those are only nightmares and that run away, its what he said when he died he was telling me to run away from his killer,I don't know why he's on my mind again, maybe its cause I miss him,but he is not at peace and I don't want him to visit me while he's still in darkness, he's freaking me out"

Quinton: "he said he's protecting you from the people you call your friends"

Me:"you know what happened the next day after

that dream?"

Quinton: "what?"

Me:"yonela showed her true colours to me,she proved that she was never a friend to me she's always been jealous of me,insulted me in ways I could never imagine,she even threatened to tell grams the truth about the whole pretending thing all because she was jealous and wanted Mncedisi to date her instead of me"

Quinton (shocked):"what!?! Yonela? Your best friend yonela?"

Me:"yeap... Best friend huh yeah right"

Quinton: "the friends we have"

Me:"so I think that's the friend he was talking about not you,I mean,you,it just wouldn't make any sense"

Quinton (fake smiles): "yeah I guess so,tell me,if you were to know your father's killer,how would

you feel or react?"

My body boils as anger fills me up

Me: "I'd be furious at him, I hate him with all my being, if I were given the chance I'd kill him with the same gun he used to kill my father"

Quinton: "what about his family? Would you hate them too"

Me: "everything of this Quinton, his wife, how can she marry a monster like that, his children if I'd come across one of them, I think I'd give him or her a beating just so they can take it for their father since he's no longer alive, I hate him, I'm glad I don't know how he looks or else I'd hate everything that resembles him"

My breathing was heavy, I'm so angry I hate that man who killed my dad in front of his wife and kid how cruel can one be

Quinton: "whoa, that's deep... come on let's get rid of these bad vibes, let me show you

something cool"

I've calmed myself down

Me:"you mean there's something more cool than that cinema and game room and everything else you just showed me in that house"

He laughs

Quinton:"yep, follow me"

I follow him to the other end of the yard where there is a wooden house more like a cottage he leads me inside I'm hit by the smell of fresh hay

I hear several horses whinny from the enclosed walls

Me:"oh my! You have horses?"

Quinton: "as you can see"

I look around each closed up in a stable

Quinton: "come have a closer look"

I get closer the horse peeks its head out over the wooden door

Me:"wow she's a beauty..what's your name girl"

Quinton chuckles

Quinton: "its a boy actually"

Me:"oh,but its so cute,damn if I were a female horse I'd have a major crush on him"

He laughs

Quinton: "thank god you not....his name is trigger,this is my favourite horse out of all I practically raised him,this guy knows all my secrets and embarrassing stories as a teenager"

Me:"if only he could speak, oh trigger,you would tell me everything "

Quinton:"never,he's too loyal to me,right trigger"

He neighs

I copy him

Me:"nieeeeghhh"

Quinton laughs at me then joins me together with the horse making horse sounds

Me&Q&Trigger: "niieeeeeeeeghhh"

We burst into laughter, except the horse of course, that'd be scary lol

Quinton:"wanna go for a ride!?"

I jump excitedly

Me:"thought you'd never ask !"

We first feed him hay then he takes him out

He picks me up and I jump on he sands next to the horse and slowly walks him

Me:"this is so nice,I've always wanted to ride a horse"

Quinton: "for a first timer,you a natural"

I don't know what happened I was fooling

around with the ropes on its neck I think I pulled it but right now I think I'm gonna die, trigger is running like crazy he even tripped Quinton and he fell behind

"Heeellllpppppp!! Somebody!!!! Quinton!!! Stop this horse now!!! Stop stop stop!!"

Tears are streaming down I'm holding on as tight as I can but my butt is slipping I might fall anytime, I might die anytime

"Quuuuuiintoooooooooon!!"

He is running after us like crazy if I wasn't worried about dying right now I'd be laughing at him

Trigger stopped... Finally I can----

Trigger: nniieeeeegghhh!

He lifts his front legs up before I know it I'm on the ground fell flat on my tummy gosh it hurts so much

Trigger just stood there

Quinton (breathing heavily): "bub! You okay??"

Me:"what kind of question is that!? Nxa of cause I'm not okay I'm fucken hurt!..aahhh"

My head pains the most it really banged hard on the ground

He picks me up and we head back to the house which was a long distance he keeps stopping trying to catch his breath,its so cute, he looks so fine right now,can't believe I'm drooling yet I'm in so much pain

Me:"hhllii ahh.....ouch...easy "

He was rubbing some herbal stuff on my knee which also got scratched

Quinton: "sorry bub..almost done"

He finished at last

Me:"I'm never riding a horse again! "

He laughs

Quinton: "come on they not that bad"

I look at him in disbelief

Me: "not that bad?"

Quinton: "I'm kidding geez don't bite my head off"

Me: "mxm, I'm in pain please spoil me"

I kinda get too babyish when I get injured I demand nursing and care

Quinton was offering me all the junk I could think of ,it was getting late and we were just chilling at his house,luckily I asked our neighbor to check on grams now and then and I called her to check if she's okay

Quinton: "there's one more place in the house I want to show you"

Me: "okay "(excitedly)

He stands up and walks leaving me behind, he looks back as he realises I'm not following him

Quinton: " are you coming? "

Me:"you don't expect me to walk myself now do you...need I remind you that its your favourite horse that...

Quinton: "okay okay,gosh I've heard enough of that incident for one day"

He comes and reluctantly picks me up, he made me wrap my legs around him

Me:"couldn't you pick me up bridal style? "

I could feel his crotch

Quinton: "whats wrong with this way?"

He was walking which was making things worse cause our things were bumping each other as he was going down the stairs

Me:"its a bit intense"

Quinton: "I like intense"

I think I'm getting wet

Me:"well I don't "

We reached a place like a basement it was so dark ,then the light went on

There was bottles of wine all around

Quinton: "welcome to the cellar,this is moms collection"

Me:"wow this room is beautiful, so much wine"

Quinton: "yeaah, we used to come down here and steal a few whenever my brothers and I would throw a house party when the rents where not around"

Me:"heee kanti you were mischievous, I should've known"

Quinton: "babe,I was no saint I also had a rebellious side like any other teenager"

Me:"I bet you'd bring girls down here to impress them so you can shag"

I smirk

Quinton: "yeap, you caught me, I'd get them drunk then shag them....so would you like a glass?"

He smirks

Me(laughs): "not going to work with me"

Quinton: "I'm joking, I've never bought girls down here or anyone,this place is strictly family"

Me:"but I'm not family "

He comes closer

Quinton: "you my family bub, and soon enough,we'll start our own family"

I feel butterflies as the thought passes my mind

Me:"about that glass? Does the offer still stand?"

Quinton: "hawu vele phela,nawe uyaz"
(obviously,)

He pours us some wine we drink,it was
amazing

Me:"are those grapes?"

I see a bunch of grapes in a wooden basin

Quinton: "yep"

Me:"so many"

Quinton: "for the wine"

Me:"y'all make your own wine?"

He nods

Quinton: "mom makes it that's one of her
businesses, mom only runs legal businesses"

Me:"that's why you love your mother so
much,she's the only one who played the good
parent role"

Quinton:"although she wasn't that good,for even

marrying a man like dad but yeah I love her"

There was also squashed grapes , I was still looking around when I felt liquid on myself it was grape juice from the squashed grapes

Me:"what the hell"

Quinton (laughs): "oops my bad"

Me:"ohhh you gonna get it now"

I scoop a handful and throw it at him right on the face

Me(laughing): "yeess...you messed with the wrong girl"

He started laughing hard and we threw grapes at each other we made a mess all over the place,our clothes and body were covered in grape juice

Me:"noo not my hair.... Oh that's it!"

I ran after him he runs upstairs until we were by the kitchen I cornered him he was stuck

Me:"got you"

I threw myself at him and he picked me up, we were kind of tipsy from all that wine

He kissed me

Quinton (whispers): "No..I got you"

We kissed more hungrily, one thing led to another

Quinton:"don't cry bub,I'll come for you.."

Me(crying):"I don't want to go,I don't want to get married"

Quinton: "I'll fight for you I promise,if its the last thing I do"

Me:"I miss you already"

Quinton: "I miss you too,but babe you'll be back soon they cant keep you away from school for long"

Me:"I hate them Q I hate them with all my might"

He squeezes me in a hug once more,I've already packed,they even sent a driver to come pick me and grams up,grams was already in the car I was still saying my goodbyes to Quinton,we didn't even sleep last night we talked and made love the whole night

Quinton:"just promise me one thing "

Me:"anything "

Quinton: "well I can't say don't have sex with the guy,cause I know that will happen sooner or later..just be patient, make sure he's not infected"

M:"it won't, I won't let it"

Quinton (sighs):"in all you do please promise me this....you won't fall for the guy"

Me:"of cause not,I only love you and I only

always love you"

Quinton: "I need you to promise me liss"

Me:"I promise"(crying)

Me:"promise me in whatever you do,you won't ever fall in love with another girl"

Quinton: "I promise...my heart only beats for you"

We share a kiss filled with passion and lots of emotions

He pulls out

Quinton: "take care of yourself bub,this is not goodbye"

Me:"its a see you later"

He pecks my lips

Quinton: "I love you so much"

Me:"I love you way too much"

We kiss again, we both don't want to let go

"We have to get going mam"

The driver interrupts

Quinton: "bye bub,have a safe trip"

I Peck his lips repeatedly then got inside the car

Me:"bye Q"

Quinton: "wait"

He takes out something from his pocket

He gives me the ring that he proposed with that night along with the necklace...by the way this is the same ring and necklace I saw in that shop and liked them,the night when we robbed a shop,when we were drunk as hell,yep that's the ones

I burst into tears as he helps me put on the necklace

He kisses me

Quinton: "don't cry please,you breaking my

heart"

Me:"I'm sorry...bye Quinton"

The car takes off and off we go...a place I thought I would never start my life there again back to eastern cape,I don't know why but it feels like I'm leaving the city forever...no way! I'm coming back,one way or the other!

I look back and I can't see our house anymore

I can't stop the tears from falling

Grams:"please stop crying Nana, kuzolunga,let's just keep in faith"

I just want to touch him one last time, once more,all of yesterday's events come flashing back,when he showed me his home,the grape fight,meeting trigger,trigger dropping me,the love making.. Oh god what kind of punishment is this? Just when we found each other

.

-
-
-

P.E here we come!!

[07/28, 16:58] W: Insert 19

LISA

I'm woken up by someone shaking me I open my heavy swollen eyes, I cried till I fell asleep

Grams:"we almost there Lisa, do you want something to eat"

She passed me KFC paper bag I shake my head

Grams: "you have to eat something Nana"

Me:"no I'm fine grams"

Grams:"I know this is not easy for you,you really loved Quinton but we have no choice Lisa "

I feel the tears threatening

Me:"I know..I just miss him so much,I love him grams,now I'll have to marry a total stranger which I'll never love"

Grams:"as time goes you will grow to love your husband it will take a while to forget about

Me(interrupts): "How can you say that...I love

Quinton grams I'll never ever forget him,I can forget everyone else but I'll never forget him,he's my everything, he was there when I had no one,if it wasn't for him, I wouldn't be here,you wouldn't even have a granddaughter"

The glasses finally break and the tread stream down

Grams: "uthetha ukthini ukba I wouldn't have a granddaughter?" (What do you mean?)

Me:"he saved my life from the first day I got to Jo'burg, he took me in when I had nowhere to go,he showed me love when I had no one, he's just always been there,I love him,I loved him from the very moment I laid my eyes on him,I'll always and forever love him"

Grams: "saved your life? "

Me:"my bursary never offered me accommodation, I didn't tell you because I didn't want to stress you,I had nowhere to go,I spent

the whole day and night wondering the streets of braamfontien I almost got mugged and gang raped but Quinton came just in time and saved my life then offered me a place to stay"

Wait a minute did I just tell grams the truth about how we met?

Grams: "but that's not what y'all told me? So you've been staying with him since you got to Jo'burg?"

Me:"yeah,we didn't tell you cause we didn't want to stress you, you old now grams anything that stresses you could kill you, some things are best you don't know"

Grams: "I'm handling it pretty well now aren't I ..please next time when you in trouble tell me"

I nod

Driver:"and we here"

He parks in front of this big house,the walls are

not that high and they transparent so the house and everything is visible,wow its beautiful

The gate opens and we drive in and Park in front of this big two story mansion as beautiful as this place is,I'd rather be in our wack pitiful apartment with Q right now

We head toward the door I notice a gorgeous middle aged woman with a big kind smile coming toward us

Woman:"Molweni yuuhh anda vuya ukunibona"(hello,I'm so happy to see y'all)

Us:"molo nakuwe"(hello)

She hugged makhulu then squeezes me too

Woman:"awusemhle ugqitha izthombe bendikubona kuzo"(you even more beautiful than the pictures I saw of you)

Me:"Enkosi mah(thanks mah)

Woman: "my name is Lizeka Johnson you can

call me Lizz, please follow me....Josh please take the luggage to their rooms"

We head inside,whoa this place is breathtaking, so sophisticated.

She leads us to the sitting room

Mrs Johnson: "dinner will be ready in a few,knoba nilambe" (y'all must be starving)

Grams:"beske sathenga into yokudla endleleni so ayi noko siright"(we bought food on the way so we still good)

Mrs Johnson:"are you okay baby girl? Your eyes are swollen "

I smile

Me:"I'm good mah ,just a minor allergy, and I think I'm a bit tired,Jo'burg is far"

Mrs Johnson: "mmh okay,after dinner I'll show you straight to your room"

Me:"I'd like that.. Uhm mah can I go freshen up

before dinner?"

Mrs Johnson: "of cause, follow me"

I got up and she led me through the passage

Mrs Johnson: "you'll meet my other children, they went out but they'll be back any minute now"

We still walking this house is big

Me:"okay mah,you mean all your children? "

She looks at me and smiles

Mrs Johnson: "are you trying to ask me about your husband to be?"

I fake a laugh

Me:"you caught me"

Mrs Johnson: "he went to work with his father,they might be back very late"

Me:"oh okay"

Mrs Johnson: "don't worry,I just know he'll love

you,you so beautiful"

Me:"thank you mah"

Mrs Johnson: "please I'm too young to be called mah ,I told you,you can call me Lizz"

I'm so not comfortable with that she's still an alder

Me:"okay mam Lizz "

Mrs Johnson: "that's better Lisa.."

We finally reached the room it is so big ,grey red and black were the main colours, very boyish but nice room

Mrs Johnson: "this is your room, hope you settle in well,and please try not to take too long honey, the others will be here any minute now and dinner is almost ready"

Me: "I'll be quick"

She smiles at me

Mrs Johnson: "I like you Lisakhanya you so young sweet and beautiful, I know you'll fit in perfectly in our little big family"

Oh but I'm not here to stay unfortunately

Me:"I like you too mam Lizz"

She smiles then turns her heels and walks out,I breath out the second she's out,whuu so much dominance her presence was suffocating me,she's beautiful shame,very beautiful, I hope the son at least took her looks, so this room is an ensuite bedroom,there's a huge sliding door that separates the bathroom from the room,I get undressed and head for the shower.

I take my suitcase then take out my long PJs eastern cape weather doesn't mess around it is darn cold at night summer or no summer,

I wrap my gown too,comb my hair and tied it neatly up, I look around the room a bit,there's a balcony, a very nice view, I look inside the closet

and there's clothes, they must be the so called husband's of mine...I head down stairs I hear people laughing and talking as I get closer

They all become quiet when they see me they all sitted around the table

"Come sit next to me!"

A little adorable girl shouts, she looks five or six ,I smile and sit next to her

There were four girls and one guy

Mrs Johnson: "everyone this is the Lisakhanya I've been telling y'all about, Lisa these are my children, my children introduce yourself once again for Lisa"

"Hey Lisa I'm Noluthando but you can call me thando, I'm the princess of this house"

She's so cute she looks my age or one year younger

"I'm lethu the second to last born, its nice to

meet you Lisa I can't wait to take you out for girls day out"

Sh giggles she looks like the glammer of this family she's very beautiful with her big amber eyes

Me:"nice to meet you too"

"I'm Sandra"

She says softly,okay she must be the quiet one

Me:"nice to meet you Sandra"

"Mna ke ndigu Lwazi the second born ,the coolest brother ever,right ladies?"

They laugh some agree and some don't but jokingly

There's just this one girl,she's been quiet looks like the eldest sister she's so beautiful with her Brazilian weave

Mrs Johnson: "ayibo wena,wathula nje..kawuyeke ukba muncu uzazise"

"Argh mah, I'm so not in the mood for this, can I be excused"

She got up and left before her mom could protest, yooohh the cheek

Lwazi: "don't mind her, she just got dumped by her boyfriend "

Mrs Johnson: "ayi wena suthutha indaba zikasis wakho" (stop broadcasting your sister's business)

Lethu: "by the way that's our big sis Minenhle but we all call her Enhle"

My heart beats a bit fast as Quinton's girlfriend comes across my mind, but I brush it off, that can't be her, she's in Jo'burg

Me: "it's really nice to meet you all"

Thando: "wait until you meet our oldest brother and dad "

We carry on eating and talking, they were asking

me and grams million questions

"y'all forgot about me"

that was the adorable girl besides me

we all laugh

Me:"oh hey what's your name cutie?"

"my name is snakhokonke! I'm this much old"

she holds up five fingers

Me:"woow so much! I wish I was that much old too"

she giggles,oh my gosh she's so adorable, but who's child is she? cause thando said she's the last born ?

I carry on eating faking smiles here and there,I hope they not too visible that I'm faking

My mind is not here at all,I want to escape already, I need to hear Quinton's voice telling me that he'll come get me from this place

I hear shouting coming from the kitchen where the main door is, it sounds like two men arguing

Lethu: "oh boi there comes the dramatic duo father and son"

She rolls her eyes

"I did warn you about golf but noooo let's not listen to the foolish son he knows nothing"

"Oh shut up, if you weren't busy trying to charm that girl maybe you would've scored a few goals, you weren't concentrated"

"Oh please dad, you know that's not even half of the truth"

They began laughing as they got closer, I was just concentrated on my food

Mrs Johnson: "if it isn't my two favorite boys"

"Hello fam, oh I see we have guests"

Mrs Johnson: "guests? Nonsense, that's family, that's Lisa and Victoria her grandmother, remember she used to work here"

"How can I forget"

I lift up my head and smile at him my eyes instantly lock with his...wait wait I think my eyes are deceiving me, this can't be, he's also looking at me confused

Mrs Johnson: "Lisa this is my first born

Me&Him: " Lisa\Mncedisi?"

What the hell is he doing here, he can't be..... No!

ndavele ndaphiswa ngumcamo (suddenly I feel the urge to pee)

Me:"uhm...I ..I need the bathroom... Excuse me!

"

I literally run out and make my way to the room

.

-
-
-
-

to be continued..

[07/28, 17:00] W: continuation

LISA

I don't know how long I've been sitting on this toilet but it been quite a while, I'm too nervous to come out, what if this time I'll feel the urge to poop? I can't believe this, Liam is going to be my husband? This can't be good, he's my ex..this must be the thing he's forced to do that he was talking about.. Okay, I can read between the lines but this hehehe ayi I never saw it coming, it would've never ever crossed my mind, I don't even know how to feel about this whole thing anymore, oh gracious God I need to call Q and tell him, oohh but he'll be so mad when he finds out its Liam, he already never liked him now it'll make things worse but still I have to tell him

"Hello, sweetie are you okay in there?"

That sounds like Lethu

Me:"uhm yeah I'm fine,I'll be out just now"

"Okay sweets, I was getting worried"

Me:"I'm fine..."

I opened the door

Me:"and I'm done"

Lethu:"about damn time,I'm sure you feel like you've lost hundred kgs"

We laugh

Me(laughing): "I think I'd be dead if I lost that much"

She laughed harder yoooh she has a weird laugh which was making me laugh more till we reached everyone, we sat in our places,I didn't even want to make eye contact

Thando:"isn't Lisa too young to be my brother's wife?"

Okay she's a brat

Lethu:"ayibo love doesn't go by age"

Love? Lol I don't know about that

Mr Johnson: "ayi mam Victoria, wazala apha intombi yakho ndyakxelela" (your daughter gave birth to a beauty I tell you)

Grams:"ndyambogela,sizala inkosazana zodwa kwaMthethwa"

Mr Johnson: "aahhh oNyobose madoda oJobe ayi ndizophela apho"

They burst into laughter

Mrs Johnson:"sekuzogqibezela unyana kaloku"(my son shall carry on)

Mr Johnson: "kawutsho kaloku nyana nanci intombi,qhasa kaloku" (come on son there's your girl,praise her)

I look up at him he has a lazy grin, I always seem to forget how cute this guy is,the father is a coloured but he looks white even his hair is of

a white person ,but he speaks fluent Xhosa he is so handsome he doesn't look a day older than thirty

Lee:"come on dad, why do you like embarrassing me ?"

Lwazi(chuckles):"yeah dad, wazini uMncedisi ngezithakazelo,azithethwa ezozinto le eEnglande ebalungwini"(what does mncedisi know about clan names,they don't talk like that in England, white people places)

They laugh a bit

Lee:"khawuvale lomlomano wakho,suphapha"(you better shut you mouth and stop being forward)

I find myself smiling at their craziness

Lethu:"so bro,what do you think of our new sister in law?"

Lee:"I think she's very hot"

I look up at him,I find him staring at me,I look back down,we were now waiting for desert

Lwazi:"she's more than hot bro,she's sexy,she's beautiful she's.....

Lee:"okay, I get it,let's leave those compliments to the husband.....

They laugh

Gram:"imani..ayibo yaz manxa ndikhumbula,loMncedisi engayhi sendke ndikubone nje?"(wait a minute,I just remembered this Mncedisi I think I've seen you before)

Oh dear God she has

Gram:"eGoli a few weeks back,you bought back Lisa from shopping? You said you were an uber driver? "

Shit shit shit...okay now I feel the urge to poop, is it getting hot in here ??

Thando:"Uber!?! Never not my brother "

Lethu:"so y'all have met before? "

Mr Johnson: "don't tell me she's the girl from Jo'burg you've been talking about?"

Somebody please come and rescue me..Quinton!! Where are you when I need you!?

Grams:"yes the other night he dropped off Lisa when she came from shopping, he said he was her driver,when Lisa was still engaged to Quinton "

Nooo!!

Mrs Johnson: "oh Quinton,I remember you telling me about him gogo,sorry that things had to end like that Lisa"

Lee:"Engaged? "

Fucken hell! Is this some sort of moment of truth?

Enhle comes back

Enhle:"I heard Quinton's name?"

Lethu:"oohh yeah isn't that your ex boyfriend? "

Mr Johnson: "wait wait wait a minute, let me get this straight.... So, Lisa was engaged to Quinton..... Which this Quinton is also Enhle's boyfriend... At the same time this Lisa was also dating my Son? While engaged to Quinton? who was my daughter's boyfriend? and now she's gonna marry my son? whom happens to be her ex fiancé's girlfriend's brother? who will now be her sister in law?"

I know I shouldn't be feeling like laughing but I am a bit

The room falls silent as everyone got their eyes on me, right now would be a good time for this floor to open and bury me deep deep into the world of the unliving

Enhle:"wait? So you are the Lisa he was planning on introducing me to? The farm girl

roommate? "

Did she just call me a farm girl?...okay let's brush that off,I think now would be a good time to tell the truth,if I'm lucky this family will want nothing to do with me and they'll send me packing, oh my God this can actually be my ticket out of this house for good! Wow God works in mysterious ways indeed!

Grams:"Lisa, please tell me what's going on?"

I sigh

Me:"okay I'll tell y'all everything....when I first got to Jo'burg I had no place to stay so I bumped into Quinton when he saved my life from thugs, he took me in and offered me a place to stay for free in his apartment he let me stay alone for a year till I was comfortable around him,he moved back in his flat with me this year,and we've become the best of friends,so then my grams told me she is dying soon I was devastated,

Quinton was there to support me as a friend, we never dated, around that time that's when he was dating Enhle, he wanted us to meet but something always came up that's why enhle and I don't know each other, as days went by staying together we grew closer, so then grams told me I have to get married to a stranger in the Johnson family, I couldn't allow that, I'm too young for marriage, I can't possibly get married, I had dreams and a game plan sorted out and marriage would ruin that, so I lied to grams and told her I don't want to get married cause I'm already in a relationship with a rich guy since I figured I'm being sold to a rich family, I lied about having a boyfriend and his wealth, when grams wanted to meet this imaginary boyfriend of mine, I asked Quinton to be my pretend boyfriend, just until this whole thing about me getting married to a stranger blows off, so we became pretend couple, grams was insisting Quinton and I should get married so he

proposed we were even planning a fake wedding if it goes that far and he was 100% behind me, I just wanted to make grams happy, that was the time I met Liam at school he caught my eye and charmed me, since in my mind I was single I took my chances with him and found that I really like him, but back at home I was catching feelings for Quinton for real all the pretending didn't feel like pretending anymore, we were both catching feelings, and the chemistry between us was too loud, while that was going on my grams told me I can't marry Quinton cause she just found out that she signed a contract which y'all didn't bother to explain to her, that her granddaughter will have to marry in this family, so we had to break things off, the pretending, that's when I thought my life is over I cried the whole night Quinton was there to comfort me as always, that's when we confessed our love for each other, but it was too late..."

I look at grams who looks very disappointed

Me:"I'm so sorry makhulu,but I didn't want to get married, and at the same time I wanted to make you happy"

Enhle: "you such a hypocrite! Quinton was right about you,you just a low life low class bitch who's been nothing but a handful to him, you lying Quinton never loved you,he always told me how you so irritating and always want him home early and how his sick n tired if having to report to you everywhere he goes,he never loved you girl,his way out of your league..

you are just degrading his life and you holding him back..

He's mine and I'll make sure I get him back ,nxa!"

She storms off..wait,did Quinton really say all that about me? No,he wouldn't,wow that really stung,I don't know what to feel anymore

Mr Johnson: "yoh that is one twisted up story"

He chuckles, then starts laughing a bit he laughs even more, the wife joins in, lwazi also laughs next thing I know everyone is laughing even grams, okay I'm confused, I look at Liam he is not laughing at all he just looks irritated

He excuses himself

Mrs Johnson: "your story makes a lot of sense my baby, if I were in your shoes I'd have probably done the same thing"

Lethu: "wow this is all just so coincidental damn"

Me: "can I please be excused"

I didn't wait for them to answer I made my way to the bedroom and threw myself in bed they took that well than I expected, I'm never getting out of here, I can't believe Enhle is Liam's sister, this is so messed up, why am I so cursed, what should I do in order to be happy

My phone rings disturbing my miserable thoughts

Me:"hello?"

"Hey bub,are you okay? You seem down?"

I feel a little excitement in me

Me:"Oh Quinton, everything is such a mess"

Quinton: "what happened my bub"

Me:"you won't believe who I'm getting married to "

Quinton: "do I know him?"

Me:"Yes ,you do"

He goes quiet

Quinton: "I hope its not that thato boy?"

Me:"No but you close"

He keeps quiet

Me:"its Mncedisi,the guy I just dumped"

He remains silent

Me: "I know I didn't expect it too, and you know what's worse? Grams recognized him from the other day before I knew it bha bha the whole truth about our pretending is out our fake planned marriage, I really thought they would hate me or send me home once they know the lies I'm capable of but I guess that was nothing compared to how evil they are"

He remains silent

Me: "hello? Quinton you there?"

Quinton: "yes bub, I'm here, I'm just shocked, ...whoa so our secret is out, did Grams take it well, I'm sure she hates me, I lied to her face"

Me: "well I don't know if she's just fronting for the Johnsons or she's taking it well, I think Liam didn't take it well he looked mad even excused himself "

Quinton: "as long as grams didn't go all heart attack on us...I couldn't care less how that mnceshisi feels"

I giggle

Me:"I just want to get out of here, feels like I've been here for years"

Quinton: "hang in there baby I'm already working on it...please do me a favour and always wear your necklace with you,wherever you go,as a reminder of how much I love you and that I'm always there with you wherever you go"

Me:"aaawww,that's so sweet babe,I'm actually wearing it right now,I'm never taking it off only when I bath...I miss you so much"

Quinton: "you missed by me love, I'm craving for your lips right now and your touch"

Me:"you turning me on Q"

Quinton: "wish I could run my hands all over

your sexy turned on self"

A moan escapes my mouth ,my tummy is in not
as I feel bubbles

Me:"please let's not carry on with this
conversation "

He laughs at me

Me:"oh I almost forgot to tell you...you won't
believe who is part of this family "

Quinton: "who ?"

Me:"Minenhle"

Quinton: "as in Enhle?"

Me:"yep that one,she's Mncedisi's sister"

Quinton: "what? No"

Me:"I'm telling you,so now when the truth came
out she was furious, since I also mentioned that
we kind of fell in love,she was fuming "

Quinton: "you told her we love each other?"

Me:"yeah,well not her only I was telling the story to everyone, I had to let them know that my heart is with someone else so if I never love their son at least they know why"

He sighs

Quinton: "you shouldn't have mentioned that we are in love"

Me:"why?"

Quinton: "that will kind of mess up my plan to come get you...oh bub..but its okay I'll come up with something else"

Me:"I'm so sorry,at that time it seemed like my one way ticket out"

Quinton: "I guess Enhle is not taking the break up well? not that I care anyway"

Is he checking up on her through me?

Me:"I don't know and I don't care,we didn't get off on the right foot and I don't think we'll ever

get along..you won't believe all the lies she made up about you"

Quinton: "lies? What did she say?"

Me:"she told me how much you dislike me,that you said I'm a low life low class bitch who's been nothing but a handful to you,how you are so fed up with me that you have to report to me everything you do that I'm just degrading your life and I'm holding you back in life cause you have to feed me...

I feel tears threatening my voice breaking

Me:"argh just said a lot of mean things,I hate her,but I know she was lying cause she's jealous maybe...right?"

He remains silent

Me:"you didn't really say those things about me....right?"

Quinton: "uhm...look Lisa..."

Me:"oh no..(gasps)..you did..she was right.."

Quinton: "bub listen to me,I didn't mean....I just said those things so that...."

Me(whispers):" but you said them.....she was right....I.. I thought you love me?"

Quinton:"Liss please listen to me... I love you..I."

Me: "No,people don't say those things about people they love...argh I can't do this right now"

Quinton: "bub...."

I drop the call and cry my lungs out,I hate myself,obviously it was too good to be true,all that love was too fairytale for a girl like me,I'm not deserving of love,only heartache and endless problems

" Lisa? Are you okay?"

I hear the door close,I'm sleeping on my tummy with my head buried in my arm

I shake me head,I'm crying out loud

I feel him sit next to me

Lee:"I know this is all too much,I can just imagine it must be more hard on you"

Me:"I'm tired Lee, I'm tired of everything, I'm tired of living "

Lee:"hey don't say that,please stop crying..come here"

I sit up and look at him he passes me tissue to blow my nose then pulled me close to him,I cried on his chest

Lee:"I never wanted to get married Lisa, specially at this age and definitely not arranged for,but it happened and a part of me is very excited to know that its you,I'm not perfect Lisa trust me I have my flaws,but I still feel the same way I felt about you when I first saw you,I want us to put aside our differences and work towards making ourselves happy and not anyone else,now that we are forced to get

married I'm not going to treat you any different, the rules we set out when we were dating still apply, like taking things slow, I'm not going to rush you into anything you not ready for, we still going to go through the phase of getting to know each other, I'll give you those six things you asked from me..what were they again? Oh ..love, trust, honesty, communication, company, and loyalty, with those six things, you'll be the most impressed girl in the world...remember that?"

I chuckle between the hiccups and tears

Me:"you really a good listener"

Lee:"its hard not to listen to a Beauty like yourself"

Me:"I'm sorry for all the lies"

Lee:"its totally understandable.... But I'm gonna need you to at least please try to uncatch the feelings you caught for your friend"

Haaa no I can't do that,I love Quinton to the grave,although I'm still very mad at him

Me:"I will,I'll try to be the best wife I can be"

Lee:"please don't try too hard you still too young for that,I'm also allowed to cook for you,although you will do it most of the time,sometimes if you too tired we can go eat out or order in,we will go out on a lot of dates,you don't have to change the way you dress,just know imma kill a nigar that tries his luck, they can drool but that's all they'll ever do not allowed to touch"

I laugh

Me:"okay...yes Sir "

Lee:"let's make this one of the best marriages in the world..shall we?"

Me:"yes we shall"

Lee:"okay first of all so that we don't feel like we

totally forced,we have to feel like we have a say,so let me do this"

He makes me stand on the bed then he gets down on one knee

Lee:"Lisakhanya Mthethwa,would you please make me the luckiest man on earth and be my wife? "

He whispers underneath his teeth "please say yes please say yes"

I burst into laughter

Me:"Yes Liam Mncedisi Johnson, I'll be your wife"

He picked me up and jumped on top of the bed and we fell he fell ontop of me

Me:"ouch you so heavy"

He kissed me all over my face

Me(giggling): "stop..get off me!"

Lee(kissing my face):"thank you---thank you--
thank you! "

He got off me

Me:"geez man,you so dramatic "

He laughed then went to the bathroom to take a
shower,he's not going to sleep here is he

Me:"are you sleeping here!?"

He was in the bathroom while I was shouting
from the room

Lee:"No! I'll sleep in the guest room,apparently
we not allowed to sleep together till we married
"

Me:"and we taking things slow!"

He chuckles

Lee: "and that too"

I laugh as I check my phone and I have
messages from Yonela

"Lisa,I'm really sorry about the way I treated you,can we please meet,there's something you have to know about me,the real reason that has made me so bitter towards you,when you have the time please tell me,I really want us to fix things I never meant those mean things I said ...I miss you so much"

I sigh and throw my back on the bed, thixo cela undibonise ukukhanya nendlela elugileyo (God please show me the light and lead me through the right way) I don't know who's got my back and who doesn't anymore,I'm alone

.

.

.

.

.

who's really got Lisa's back?..keep reading and

we'll soon find out....Lol don't let the Profile pic fool you

[07/28, 17:00] W: Insert 20

LISA

I'm woken up by a ringing phone I grab it and check the time,its still midnight and its Quinton,

what's does he want in the middle of the night

Me:"low"

Quinton: "sorry to disturb your sleep"

Me:"what do you want Quinton? "

Quinton: "I can't sleep"

Me:"so? Why don't you call Enhle and sweet talk her about hating me cause she desperately wants you back"

Quinton: "please don't say that Liss... All those things I said about you to her were just to protect her insecurities, I never meant them,I love you and I regret saying all those mean things, she's crazy Liss everytime I'm with her she'd ask me to say something mean about you so that she doesn't get jealous of you"

Wow she's a physcho bitch

Quinton: "Liss I made sure I wash my mouth every time I came back from her,if you noticed

when I come back I'd first brush my teeth before talking to you,I hate myself for every bad word I've ever said about you,please forgive me bub"

Me:"I don't know Quinton, you might not have meant them but they sound so true,they were not made up"

Quinton: "bub,they are not true,you the total opposite of all that,you don't degrade me,baby ever since I met you I've been upgraded you made me wanna become a better man and you still do,you came into my life and I had nothing much to offer to you but you always thanked me and appreciated all the little things I offered made me feel like I gave you the world,you don't hold me back instead you inspire me to do great things,yes you from the farms but, you the beautiful kinda farm girl like Hanna Montana.....

I giggle

Quinton:" and when I said low class low life,I meant you not forward and you not a gold digger who likes expensive things,you're a down to earth kind and caring soul....you see Lisa, all those things I said about you I made them sound bad to Enhle but deep down while I was saying that,this is what I really meant...I know it doesn't justify me bad mouthing you cause the fact still remains is that those were not nice things to say, she was just so jealous that I live with a girl,and when I'd say nasty things about you she'd become more comfortable and I didn't want her coming close to you, threatening you anyhow..... I'm so sorry my bub,please find it in your big heart to forgive me? "

I remain quiet....I've already forgiven him,but I want him to beg me,I love it when he begs

Quinton: "bub...please I'm sorry,I didn't mean it,please I can't have a peaceful sleep while you still angry at me.."

I keep my mouth shut

Quinton: "come on my Queen,I love you and only you,I'll never say mean things whether its to protect you or not....I'm already tortured enough by not having you here by my side,I can't have you not by my side and angry at me at the same time, that's heart abuse....bub.

Me:...(I sigh)...

Quinton:" bubby wam?? Thambo lam le polony?....sqede Sam?"

I'm blushing like crazy now.

Yeah that's what I wanted

Me:"never again Quinton "

Quinton: "never ever ever ever ever again... Ever!"

Me(laughing): "don't forget Ever!"

Quinton: "and the ever ever"

Me:"ever"

Quinton: "forever and ever"

We burst into laughter

Quinton: "yesss finally I can get my beauty sleep"

Me(giggling): "that's so gay dude"

Quinton(girly tone): "whateveeeeer"

I laugh out loud

Quinton: "ohhh my bub is laughing, this is the best midnight ever"

Me:"goodnight idiot"

Quinton: "first kiss your idiot"

Me:"mmmmnnnnccwwaaaaaa!"

Quinton: "oh yes,that was the best kiss I've ever received in my whole life"

Me:"the best ever!?"

Quinton: "the best ever ever ever ever ever!"

Me:"will remain the best forever and ever ever! "

Quinton: "and will I ever get my sleep now...ever?"

Me:"never ever"

Quinton: "gosh is this usually how much it hurts to miss someone?"

Me:"it hurts so bad.. But I'll be coming back soon,after this weekend when they done with the lobola thingy"

Quinton: "argh I hate this"

Me: "I hate it too Quinton, whatever you planning better do it fast"

Quinton: "I'm still digging up some information about them,my guy will tell me everything about them in a weeks time"

Me:"so long!?"

Quinton: "apparently they are very secret,they are not easy to hack,I've already tried and I almost got busted they highly secured"

Me:"which means they must have a lot to hide..."

Quinton: "exactly, that's why I'm so worried about you in that family.. I don't trust them"

Me:"they seem like a good family though"

Quinton: "that's what they seem like..I just don't trust them,specially that mncahi...argh whatever his name is"

Me:"why? Cause you don't like him?"

Quinton: "not just that..not because he's with you. I just don't trust him, I don't know why"

Me:"I guess we'll soon find out"

Quinton (yawns):"yeah I guess so"

Me:"goodnight love bug"

Quinton: "mmmh don't hang up please"

Me:"you still wanna talk?"

I hear him a just himself as if he is getting comfortable

Quinton: "please sing for me, till I fall asleep"

Me:" you such a baby Q"

Quinton: "I'm your baby,now come on,sing for me bub"

Me:"which song?"

Quinton: "anyone babe,please make it long...make sure I dream about you"

Me:"hehehe okay,how about my I wanna grow old with you?"

He chuckles

Quinton: "Mmmh must be romantic, let me hear it...if I go mute on you,it means I'm already dreaming about you okay?"

Me:"okay....close your eyes and listen carefully
my sunshine "

He laughs then sighs heavily

I slide down the covers and sleep comfortably I
close my eyes as I put my phone on my ear and
start singing softly

Me(singing):"Another daaay Without your
smile.....

Another daaay just passes by

But now I knooow

How much it meeeans

For you to staaay Right here with me

The time we spend apart will make our love
grow strongeeer

But it hurts so bad I can't take it any longeeer

I wanna grow old with yoou

I wanna die lying in your arms

I wanna grow old with you

I wanna be looking in your eyes

I wanna be there for you

Sharing in everything you do

I wanna grow old with you

Quinton(interrupting): "now I wish you were
right here next to me"

Me(singing):A thousand miiiiles

between us now

It causes me to wonder how

Our love tonight remains so strong

It makes our risk right all along

The time we spend apart will make our love
grow stronge'er

But it hurts so bad I can't take it any longe'er

I wanna grow old with you

I wanna die lying in your arms

I wanna grow old with you

I wanna be looking in your eyes

I wanna be there for you

Sharing in everything you do

I wanna grow old with you

Quinton(interrupting): "Bub..I miss you so bad now"

Me(singing):Things can come and go

I know but Baby I belieeeve

Something's burning strong between us Makes it clear to me

I wanna be looking in your eyes

I wanna be there for you

Sharing in everything you do

I wanna grow old with you

...

Me:"I love you Quinton "

Quinton:.....(snors)..

I giggle he's sleeping

Me:"sweet dreams love bug"

I don't drop the call,it will drop itself when his
airtime finishes,for now since I can't watch him
sleep,I will just hear him sleep

I'm now finishing off dressing up,I didn't know
what to wear considering I'm in the house of the
in laws,so I just put on my long green floral
dress,I put my green light scarf around my head
as a doek then left some of my hair showing,I
left my face as it is with no sort of make up,its
not like I'm going anywhere and if they not
happy with me with no make up hooray all the
more reason to send me home.

I make my way to the dining room where everyone is enjoying breakfast I greet everyone then join in as I sit next to Snakho again

Snakho: "look Aunty Lisa...I'm finishing my food"

Me: "wow you sure you ate all that by yourself? "

She nods repeatedly

Snakho: " daddy says if I finish all my food,I'll have some chocolate "

Me: "really? Will you share with me?"

She makes a thinking face making me want to laugh

Snakho: "okay!"

I clap my hands excitedly

Me: "YaY!"

Snakho: "but you must finish your food first,so you can be a big good girl like me"

I laugh

Me:"okay let me get started then"

They were laughing at our conversation

Lwazi:"I see my princess likes you"

Oh so its his child

Me:"I like her too"

Grams:"Lisa,fanele uziqhelise ukuvuka kuqala kunamntu wonke,kaloku nguwe umakoti bek'fanele basiphekelwe nguwe isidlo sasekseni"(Lisa you should learn to wake up earlier than everyone else,since you are the wife,you should've prepared breakfast)

Me:"oh..I'm so sorry,it won't happen again"

Mrs Johnson: "its okay dear we have enough helpers anyway,and besides you still young you'll learn as you go"

Just then the four daughters make their way to the table looking drained as hell still in their PJs

Them:"morning fam!"

They sit and breakfast was served to them

Enhle:"wow you still here?"

Mrs Johnson: "Hlehle be nice tuu"

Enhle:"whatever "

She rolls her eyes,mxm

Lethu:"oh Lisa when you done here can you please get yourself beautiful I want to take you out SHOPPIIIING! "

I laugh

Me:"I don't know,I have so many things to do"

Thando:"but sis Lethu you said it was just going to be our day today"

Lethu:"come on thando,we've had so many 'our days' today I want to show Lisa around...so much to do? Like what?"

Me:"I have to do the makoti duties"

Lethu:"oh come on you not even married yet..."

Mah?"

Mrs Johnson: "oh please Lisa don't stress yourself with that,you ladies go have fun"

"Fun? Did I hear people talking about having fun without me?"

Mcedisi makes his way towards us looking dashing in smart casual as if he's going somewhere he comes towards me and talks to Snakho

Lee:"Nakho.. Can I please sit here?"

Snakho: "No..this is my place!"

She folds her arms...hehehe the drama ! She's so adorable

Lwazi:"come sit next to your king Princess "

Snakho: "but I want to sit next to Aunty Lisa!"

Lee: "but Aunty Lisa is my princess"

Snakho: "are you her Prince?"

He nods

Snakho: "hhmmm okay!"

She jumps off to sit next to her dad

Lee: "finally... Good morning Princess"

He kisses my cheek

Me:"good morning "

Lethu: "Lisa and I are going to the mall"

Lee: "interesting, wish I could tag along
but...work"

Lethu: "you weren't invited anyway"

I laugh

Me(softly):"oohh buurnn"

We all laugh

Lee:"oh so its like that now? I wonder where will
you get the extra cash"

Lethu: "oh come on I was joking you know you

always invited.... But Eish you have to work"

Lee:"mxm not getting any money from me"

Lethu: "Lisa work your Princess magic on your prince tuu"

I look at him he looks at me with a silly grin

Me:"my Prince...(I whisper in his ear)..I need lingerie..sexy lingerie "

He smirks and chuckles

Lee:"fine I'll transfer y'all something "

Lethu: "oh my,what did you tell him?"

Enhle:"please don't share that info,I don't wanna throw up"

Thando laughs

Lee:"don't piss me off Enhle, nxa...excuse me fam I have to get going before dad calls"

He pecks my forehead

Lee: "I'll see you later"

He walks away

We carry on sitting there over light conversations

The adults and Iwazi with snakho excused themselves it was just us girls around the table

Me:"hey Sandra,you awfully quiet,don't you want to join us when we go to the mall?"

She shakes her head

Sandra looks beautiful and creepy she's so dark she likes black,yesterday she was wearing black even today she's wearing black PJs

Me:"come on it'll be fun,please"

Sandra:"no"

Its like she has no emotions at all

Me:"why not do you have other plans?"

Sandra: "no"

Me:"then you should come with us"

Enhle: "argh are you deaf or something? She said no,now leave her alone"

Me:"I was talking to Sandra"

Enhle: "well I'm telling you,bitch"

Lethu: "ayi Enhle kawume tuu(stop)

Thando:" why you defending her? She can take care of herself "

Lethu: "Lisa let's go to my room"

I follow her to the room,are all bedrooms here enherits? Its beautiful pink and white

Lethu: "please don't pay much attention to my sister,she's just bitter"

Me:"don't even stress about that,I'm not there anymore"

Lethu: "good...I don't know why but I like you,I feel like we will get along"

Me:"I like you too,let me go get ready while you

freshen up "

I go to my room and change into something that says "mall" which would be night waist jeans and a white tee, left my hair loose and applied lipstick after fixing my face I go to Lethu but bump into thando on my way

Me:"oh sorry..(laughs)..clumsy me"

Thando: "yeah clumsy you,not only deaf but blind too"

She looks at me up and down

Thando: "soon she'll get bored of you then come back to me"

Me(confused): "what are you talking about"

Thando: "I've always been her favourite and always will"

She clicks her tongue and walks away

Okay what was that about?

I find Lethu all ready she puffs me some of her perfume then we make our way out

Lethu: "jump on!"

Wow I did not expect her to be driving this car an Audi R8 V10..shit!

I get in

Me:"wow your car is so nice"

Lethu(laughing): "don't be silly,this is dad's car we just borrowing it"

I laugh

Me:"whitout his permission? "

Lethu: "well I'm taking advantage at the fact he likes you so he won't mind"

She giggles and speeds off,the speed of this car is out of this world

I didn't know lethu was such a shopping freak,my legs are killing me we've been in and

out a thousand shops, but now we grabbing something to eat at spur

Me: "this is our last stop then home"

Lethu: "come on there's this.."

Me: "No no lethu we've been here for hours, we going home"

She huffs and we carry on eating over light conversation

Lethu: "so then he chose her over me, can you believe it? After everything I've done for him? Ungrateful prick"

Me: "do you feel like he owes you, for everything you've done for him?"

Lethu: "hell yeah if it wasn't for me he would be somewhere I don't know"

Me: "what if he was forced somehow to choose the other girl.. would you still hate him?"

Lethu: "yes, cause if he loved me he would've"

done anything to choose me"

I sigh

Lethu: "are you worried about your friend?..Quinton?"

I nod

Me: "I'm afraid he'll hate me at some point, that he'll get tired ofnever mind "

"Well well well if it isn't the precious Johnson princess"

We look up at the person, wow what a beauty

Lethu(irritated): "what do you want Lulama"

Lulama:"that's how its like now,now that I'm not with your brother anymore you don't want anything to do with me?"

Lethu: "just leave man"

Lulama:"we used to be so close Lethu, I didn't know breaking up with your brother means

breaking our friendship "

Lethu: "its not just that,you know what you did,how you betrayed our trust..I'm surprised you still alive after the betrayal you done toward my family"

Lulama: "I know I was wrong,but Lethu I want to make things right with Mncedisi,I love him so much and there's something important I have to tell him"

I choke on my food,I cough till I was better then sip on my juice

Lethu: "I don't see how's that any of my business....just stay away from my bro he's happy without you and he's getting married to this beautiful lady here,so just buzz off and get a life"

Lulama: "he's getting married? To her?"

She bursts into laughter

Me:"Lethu I think we should leave now"

Lethu: "good idea"

We stand up and leave her standing there

Lulama (shouting): "I'll get him back,you just watch!"

We pay the bill and head out,we now by the parking lot,only the sound of her heels were making a noise

Me:"I hate basement parking they creepy"

Lethu: "you right"

We hear something fall and we startle we run towards the car and drive away listening to music and laughing

Me:"hey is it just me or that car has been following us since we were going to the mall?"

Lethu: "you noticed too"

We look at each other in fear then she hits the

accelerates and speeds off the car speeds too

Me:"oh my its really following us!"

I'm now panicking, she drives faster and keeps making turns until we lost it, she was breathing heavy and so was I

Lethu: "I've never driven that fast in my life!"

Me:"who could be following us!?"

She shrugs we on the GPS since we didn't know where we were and drove back home,I got there and ran to my room, a call immediately came from Quinton

Me(whispers):"Quinton "

Quinton: "bub .are you okay? Are you safe?"

Me:"I'm fine,something wired just happened "

Quinton: "what happened?"

Me:"a car was following us...it was so creepy was tried to loose it and we did"

Quinton: "calm down bub...Lisa don't worry I'll always protect you,no one will harm you"

Me:"I'm scared Quinton"

Quinton: "I'm always there with you...I'll make sure no one touches you"

Me:"how!? You far away how will you protect me?"

Quinton: "I can,you have to trust me"

Me:"you can't Quinton you can't protect me from here,I could've been killed today..where are you? You in Jo'burg...you far away"

Quinton: "lisakhanya I'm telling you that the people in the yellow car that was following you,wouldn't have hurt you on my watch,I already took care of them"

Me:"how did you?..how..."

Quinton: "bub, I got your back....I'll make them talk and tell me what they wanted from you"

Me:"what? Where are you?"

Quinton:"don't worry about that,just know that you don't have to be scared as long as you got me,okay?"

Me:"okay"

Quinton: "I love you Lisa"

Me:"I love you too Quinton "

I sigh and drop the call, I change into my sleepwear I was about to go out when a liam came flying in my room and suffocating me in a hug

Lee:"Lethu told me what happened, I'm sorry I wasn't there,you must've been so terrified, are you okay? "

He cups my face looking all over it

Me:"I'm fine"

He pecks my lips

Lee:"you don't have to go down there,let's just stay here"

He picks me up and lays me on bed and he cuddles me

Lee: "I will find out who was behind all this..and what could they possibly want"

.

.

.

.

.

I wonder who was following them? what kind of danger could Lisa be in?

[07/28, 22:56] W: Insert 21

LISA

Me(whispering): "what do you think they saying?"

Lethu(whispering): "I don't know,probably talking about how much you worth"

Me(whispering):'well obviously....let's go before we get caught"

We tiptoe back to the room and laugh at our silliness

Lethu: "did you see my brother's face, he is so lost and nervous "

Me: "I saw him, he looks so cute "

Lethu: "have you seen yourself though, you look so xhosarish and beautiful like a real makoti"

I giggle

Me: "thank you, I wouldn't want to be looking like a fake makoti now would I"

We laugh when a knock comes through the door

Me: "come in"

Mam Lizz: "Lisa yiza uyafuwa ngapha" (Lisa come along you needed this side)

Me: "for intoni mah?" (what for mah?)

Mam lizz: "khawuyeke ukundibuza uze (stop

asking and follow)

I followed her to where the uncles were, argh I can't believe my mom is here, what is she doing here? Probably wants a share of the money to go blow it off at the tarven. I'm made to sit on the floor they ask me if do I know Mncedisi I wanted to say no, just so I could see if they'd really let me go but I decided against it

Me: "ewe ndyamazi" (yes I know him)

There was ululating

I'm kinda a little embarrassed since we are at my home in Mthatha, I only came with Lethu her mom and dad, we left the others and of course Liam, don't get me wrong Mthatha is a nice place, just not the part of it where I live, what if now that they know how little we have and the small house with one round house, what if they take advantage of that, they will start to think maybe I'm desperate to be with one of the

Johnsons or they did me a huge favour by making me part of them..they should think twice cause I don't need them,I've made it this far in life without them.

I looked up and my eyes met his brown tiger eyes,he gave me a genuine smile and I returned it,he looks so excited and happy if he continues like this he might rub it off on me,cause at this moment I'm feeling a bit of happiness, he's making this whole thing a lot easier for me,he's been nothing but good to me and very supportive as much as I hate this whole idea of arranged marriage thing,Mncedisi is enjoying it cause he really likes me and he's making it hard for me to hate it.

He winks at me I blush and look down

Uncle:"ungaphinda ekamereni nontombi"(you can go back to the room young lady)

I get up and head back to the room

Lethu:"soooooo how did it go what did they say...are y'all officially traditionally married now?"

Me:"yoh calm down,they asked me if do I know him and I said yes...I guess that means we now husband and wife traditionally"

She screams and hugs me

Lethu:"this is so awesome,I can't wait for the white wedding, when you'll be officially Mrs Johnson aahhh I can already see it written in the headlines"

She looks up at the roof and waves her hands apart making out some sort of picture

I laugh at how serious she looks

Me:"can you stop being crazy for once"

My phone gets a notification so I take a look at it and its a WhatsApp from Mncedisi

Lee:"you looking absolutely stunning in that

attire"

Me:"thank you..you look quite handsome yourself"

Lee:"I desperately need to see you as in now"

Me:"but I'm not allowed to go out"

Lee:"then make sure no one knows"

Me:"lol you want me to sneak out?"

Lee:"you not completely clueless, beautiful "

Me:"oh shut up,where are you?"

Lee:"I'm outside the gate a few houses when you head down the road"

Me:"wow,you already got that far....I'll be right there"

Lee:"I'll be right here.. waiting on you"

I giggle and log out

Lethu:"what you all giggly about?"

Me:"your brother wants to see me"

Lethu:"can't he wait for tomorrow "

I shake my head fast

Lethu: "so you'll sneak out?"

I nod fast

she laughs at me

Lethu: "don't worry I got you covered, just don't take your own sweet time"

Me:"you the best"

I climb out the window, this small body came into good use after all

I keep checking the coast as I keep running and stopping till I was out the gate,I walked down the road and I spotted him leaning against the wall of some fence does he have to stand like some model,he's looking down on his phone he doesn't see me approach till I was in front of him

Me:"boo!"

He startled then laughed when he saw me

Lee:"I was waiting for your response, I thought you changed your mind"

He holds my waist and pulls me closer

Me:"well I'm here now,you better make this worth while cause it wasn't easy getting here,I almost got busted...was this close"

I measured with my fingers

He chuckled

Lee:"trust me I intend to,come I saw a hidden spot"

We walked down a bit and there was a small passage between two wall fences we got there and he immediately pinned me against the wall looked at me for a while before smashing his cold soft lips on mine,At first, the kiss was small. But then, it grew bigger, and more

intense. Without any thought or worries, I jumped on him, wrapping my legs around his waist. He started playing along, his fingers trailing my leg all the way to my punani, he was playing with it over my panty he broke the kiss but was still playing with my nunu he went on kissing my neck his warm breath hitting my skin, I balanced on the wall as his other hand found its way to my breasts massaging them, moans were starting to escape my mouth as his touch was getting more effective to my emotions.

He pulled out while I still wanted to continue

Me (whispers): "why'd you do that for?"

He placed his forehead on mine and pecked my lip slowly

Lee: "you are soaking wet"

He brought his hand that he was playing with to my face, his fingers are wet

Lee:"you see your juices?..taste them"

He put one finger in my mouth and played with my tongue then put his other finger in his mouth

Lee:"mmhh tasty"

All this was turning me on big time I want to feel his skin against mine,his buff self all over me,he is still carrying me,I can feel his crotch so I move my waist in circular motion,he started breathing louder

Me:"you like that?"

Lee:"fuck Lisa, let's stop before I do things to you,I wouldn't wanna do in a place like this"

I couldn't stop instead I was moving faster oohhh damn he's so big

He kissed me hungrily and pressed himself really hard on me "mmmmh"

His hands were trailing all over my body fast...he quickly let go of me,moved back and

tried catching his breath

Lee:"I'm sorry...not here"

I'm also out of breath so I just nod

Me:"that was worth sneaking out for"

Lee:"we'll get in so much trouble,if they find we were together "

Me:"they'll probably charge you more"

We laughed and head back with him keep spanking me

I snuck back through the widow,I startled when I saw my mom sitting on by single bed

Me(gasps):"Mah! You sacred me"

Mom:"where you coming from? Waqamka sowungena ngamafrestile(sneaking in through windows)"

Me:"I I was....I went to use the toilet"

Yes our toilet is outside on its own small room

Mom:"so why use the window? And why sneak in?"

Me:"argh mah (going to sit by the bed) I didn't want to use the main door since the uncles were still busy..(changing the subject).. Anyway how are you holding up?"

Mom:"I'm fine, I'm very proud of you,you know"

Me:"why mom? Cause I got to go to varsity and make something of myself....oh no its definitely not that,I know...you proud cause I'm being sold to a rich family.... Is that it? That has to be it,cause this is the first time you've actually said you proud "

Mom:"ungazondiphucukela mna ucinga ukuba ungathetha nam noma kanjani ngenxa yokughumsha?"(don't come act highly with me,you think you can talk to me anyhow with your silly cheese girl tendencies)

Mom: "okokqala ndim endikufundise wade

wagqiba uten so ungazocingba famsba uncono" (I made sure you get education up until matric so don't come here thinking you better than everyone)

Wow the mother I have,she never always hated me like this,she used to love and spoil me when dad was alive although she never spoiled me with money and buying me things but she showed me unconditional love together with dad,I never for once felt like I lived in poverty,sometimes I blame myself for my father's death,now that I'm mature I realized the diamonds were real,my father couldn't have possible afford to buy diamonds, I think he stole them somewhere and that's why gangsters were after him,he was securing my future

Me:"what have I ever done to you mah?"

Mom:"you know what I don't have time for this,I came here to tell you how proud I am of you but its clear you don't want to hear it "

She gets up and I pull her arm gently for her to sit down

Me: "I'm sorry mah I shouldn't have spoken to you like that, please continue"

Mom: "look khanya I know that I haven't been the best mother to you ever since....ever since..."

I nod my head

Me: "I understand mom"

Mom: "I've been so caught up in my own grief for all these year I totally cut you off, you and mom, I've been so selfish, I shouldn't have dealt with your father's death the way I did, alcohol has ruined my life, made me so careless....(sobs),...I caught the virus khanya ..(sobs)...I don't even know who I got it from, that's the shameful part.."

My heart sinks

Me: "mah...that's horrible, when did you find out"

about this?"

Mom:"two weeks back,when I found out I was shattered,I realized that life is short,I haven't touched alcohol ever since..."

Me:"oh mah I'm so proud of you, I know it mustn't be easy on you,but just know that HIV is not the end of the world,you just take your treatment everyday and have a long life"

Mom:"I know its just I'm so disappointed at myself,what kind of example am I setting to you as a mother and I'm only realising this now because I got sick,I'm pathetic,a useless excuse of a mother.. I'm not even a mother I'm just a b..bi

Me:"sshhhhh don't say that,please don't call yourself that,you still my mom"

I pulled her into my embrace, gosh I missed being in her arms,this is what I needed

Me:"I'm here mom,I'll support you always, you

never alone,okay?"

Mom (crying): "you should hate me khanya after everything I've put you through, the emotional abuse"

Me:"I am my mother's daughter I can never hate you even if I tried...I'm just happy you finally changing your life for the better"

She got off my grip and stared deep into my eyes

Mom: "I love you khanya"

Me(breaking voice):"I love you more"

We laughed between the tears ,it feels so good like a weight has been lifted from my shoulders

Mom:"let's get to the juicy topic now giirrl"

I laugh,I even forgot my mom is a drama queen,we've always had that friendship bond

Me:"and what could possibly be the juicy topic mamgobozi"(gossiper)

Mom:"the husband is dripping hot sause
umthathephi?"(where did you find him?)

Me(laughing): "nam ndimcolelwe sisi kwathiwa
ina thatha ngowakho, ndibe ndibangathi ayibo
kwathiwa sithe ngowakho mthathe!!"(he was
just handed to me on a silver platter,I was about
to protest but they just dumped him on me)

We burst into laughter

Mom:" yuuhh ayi sana akumnandi ukba
nguwe,uvele kuthiwe ina nansi indoda,thina
esinqabele kangaka singabanye
abafazi...sixelele uba uhlamba nganton kaloku
nathi sizimisele"(lucky you girl,a handsome man
was handed to you on a silver platter..yet some
of us women out there they are rare on us,share
your secret girl)

I laugh harder mom is crazy shame

Me: "ayibo mom you mean to tell me you don't
know this marriage is arranged?"

She raised her brows shocked..hawu she didn't know?

Mom:"tuu(at all) when did this happen?"

I told her everything from the beginning that has been going on in my life in Jo'burg, turns out grams never told anyone about this,which is making me wonder.. Is there even a contract to begin with,which makes me wonder even more since when are maids made to sign employment contract? I'm missing something this story doesn't add up

Mom:"yooohh your life is so complicated my baby,grams has never mentioned this to me and I'm very mad at her for not telling your father and I about this, how can she sell off my own child without my permission? "

Me:"there's something she's not telling me,at first she told me this and I told her I'm in love with someone else she understood, next thing

gqi gqi I'm forced to marry this guy"

Mom:"I need to talk to her this instant"

Me:"no no mom don't do that please,I'll fix this on my own"

Mom: "khanya you've been on your own for way too long now,please let me be there for you"

Me:"mah I really appreciate the support, but I need to fix this on my own "

She sighs

Me:"all you will do is shout at her and make her feel guilty and I don't want that it'll put a strain on her and her cancer is getting worse,I just want us to focus on keeping her happy and spending as much time with her as possible, I'll ask her when I feel like its the right time to ask her,but for now let's let everything and everyone settle down with the whole marriage thing"

Mom:"Eish yah you right,I can't believe mom

won't be with us soon"

Her lips begin shaking

Me:"mom please we have to be strong for her"

Mom:"I'm trying.. Trust me I'm trying "

silence

Mom:"so you saying you really love this
Quinton?"

My heart beats in excitement at the mention of
his name

Me(smiling): "yeeaah I do...a lot"

Mom:"what about this guy,seems like you also
have feelings for him,you even snuck out to go
see him just now"

I should've known she didn't buy the toilet story

Me:"I mean he's a nice guy,he's been really kind
and loving,its really hard to hate him"

Mom: "he is quite the catch and he seems like

he genuinely loves you"

Me:"he does,I love Quinton my heart belongs to him...mncedisi is really charming and all and he does try to make me happy he treats me like I'm the only girl in the world....Quinton he makes me feel things,like deep things,I can talk to him about anything I know he'd take a bullet for me"

Mom:"I see a love triangle here,...seems like you stuck in the middle, it also seems like you don't know who you really want"

I sigh

Me:"I do know I want Quinton mom,I'd chooses him anyday,The thing with Mncedisi is complicated he was my boyfriend that became my ex and now I'm forced to marry him,but now he's catching feelings and I'm trying so hard to not"

Mom: "I think you should go where your heart belongs"

That would be Quinton

Mom:"I love the story of you and Quinton, from what you've told me,I believe he loves you dearly"

Me:"then what am I to do with Mncedisi?"

Mom:"he already knows about Quinton, just tell him the truth that you can never love him"

Me:"what if....."

Mom:"now you should look at that diamond necklace on your neck and remember the promise you made to Quinton "

Me:"you right...this shouldn't even be confusing me..I mean I'm obviously in love with Quinton "

Mom:"and don't forget that"

The weekend finally came to an end I'm on the road back to Jo'burg, Quinton has been texting me every after five minute asking where am I

now? That idiot does he have any idea how far Eastern cape is

Mncedisi couldn't come back with me,he has business to run he'll come back next week.

Finally I'm here,I asked the driver to drop me off near campus,I spot Quinton leaning against his car across the road,I whistle, he lifts his head and the biggest smile is plastered on his face as he runs across the road and attacks me with a hug picking me up and spinning me almost dropping me in the process

Me(laughing):"whooaa don't drop me"

He puts me down wraps his arms around my waist then cups my face then touches me all over before he smashed his sweet lips on mine kissing the daylights off me,he pulls out leaving me breathless

Quinton: "god dammit I missed you bub"

He picks me up bridal style as he was about to

take me to the car

Me:"wait! My luggage?"

Quinton: "oh..wait here"

He puts me down and takes my things to the car across the road then comes back to me

Me:"Quinton? Why didn't you just turn the car around to this side,wazixakekisa kangaka?(making things hard for you)

He laughs

Quinton: "cause if I did that I wouldn't be able to do this"

He picks me up bridal style and we cross the road

Me:"you watch too many movies Q"

Quinton: "you know that's your fault,and I want to show you a lot more I've learnt from movies"

He winks at me with a silly smirk he puts me

down and I attack him with another hug, I buried my face on his broad chest as I inhaled his intoxicating cologne, I didn't realise I missed him this much

Quinton: "are you crying bub?"

I notice I shed a few tear drops

Me:"I just missed you so much"

Quinton: "aaww"

he tightened his grip giving me goosebumps

.

.

.

.

.

.

Guys please comment more,a lot is going on here please don't keep your opinions to

yourselves I need to know them

[07/28, 22:56] W: Continuation

LISA

18\SLVN(Parental guidance is advised)

(short)

We were still driving to the apartment

Me:"can you drive a bit faster?"

He smirks and glances over at me then back on the road

Quinton:"what's the rush hun bun?"

Me:"the rush is because.. (I trailed my fingers on his thigh to his cock)...of this"

I saw his body tense up and his breath hitched, I kept moving my hand inwards of his thigh, when I got close to the dick I'd move it down again

Quinton: " I... I see you have a death wish bub"

Me:"I just missed it...I mean you..I just missed you so much"

He laughs at me

Quinton: "you want some...."

Me(interrupting):" yes I want some "

Quinton: "food? Damn you must be hungry,didn't even let me finish"

Me:"food...?"

But I'm hungry for something else,I don't know what's wrong with me but I want his dick so bad its not even funny, I would have sleepless nights fantasising about him,now that he's here I want him so bad,its like he got a whole lot sexier since I've been gone

Quinton: "yeah what did you think I was asking?"

I huff and fold my arms

Me:"nothing "

Quinton (chuckles): "so you want some.....food?"

I shake my head,I want some dick

Me:"No...I want this"

I touched his dick then squeezed it a lil he was hard and bulgy

He groaned then moved my hand from him,okay
what's going on? Doesn't he want me?

Quinton: "bub,I'm driving, you distracting me,you
know your touch makes me want to close my
eyes"

His eyes were small

Me:"fine"

Quinton:"how did the lobola go?"

I look at him and he's concentrated on the road,
so that's what's bugging him

Me:"it was okay"

Quinton: "okay?"

Me:"okay"

Quinton: "so y'all now traditionally married?"

Me:"I guess so"

Quinton: "you're his wife?"

His tone sounded down and sad which broke

my heart

Me:"looks like it"

Quinton: "you now belong to him"

Me(softly):"Quinton... Please"

Quinton:"do you still like him a lot?"

Me:"don't do this Q"

Quinton: "do you?"

Me:.....

Quinton: "since you've been there,have you kissed him?"

Me:"Quinton! "

Quinton: "please answer me bub....did you kiss him?"

Me: "why you asking me all this?"

Quinton: "I just want to know"

Me:"thats stupid,I'm not entertaining it"

Quinton: "I don't get what's so difficult with this question, its so simple and the answer is a simple yes.....or no"

Me:"Quinton, I love you"

Quinton: "you know I love you more...just answer me did you kiss him yes or no?"

Me:"Q..."

Quinton: "yes or no"

Me:"please...."

Quinton: "Yes.....or no?"

I sigh

Me:"yes"

Silence fills the car

Me:"but it was only pretence Q...for the parents it didn't mean anything "

He sighs heavily

Quinton: "seems like you getting really good at

this pretending game"

Me:"come on Q...don't be like this"

Quinton: "I hope this (pointing at him and I) is not pretence anymore"

Me:"how could you even doubt my love for you like that?"

Quinton: "please don't break your promise liss"

Me:"I still promise Q..I cross my heart and hope to die,stick a needle upon my eye"

He makes that terrified weird face

Quinton: "okay was it necessary to add the last part?"

I laugh

We got to the apartment and headed for the ridge

Me:"wow so much junk!?"

He shrugs his shoulders

Me:"Quinton! Have you been eating all this junk while I was gone!?"

He makes that 'I'm in trouble face'

Me:"Pizza? Steers?...doughnuts, fries? Chocolates....ayibo Quinton! Have you had any proper food nje at all?"

Quinton (mumbling): "the pizza was proper"

Me:"No man Quinton do you want to get sick,this is not healthy at all! Kanti wena unjani nje! How could you eat so much junk for so long !? You know fast foods kill? Do you also want to leave me? Just because I love you! Nx ayi man,you drive me crazy!!!!"

Gosh I don't know why I'm so mad at him, I think I'm sexually frustrated

I stormed to the room and sat on the bed taking off my shoes and got comfortable, its been a long drive and I'm tired, I throw myself on my back in the center of the bed and close my eyes,

I hear the door slowly open,I open one eye and see Quinton peeking his head through the door like a five year old in trouble

He tiptoed inside sat at the edge of the bed and started massaging my feet "mmhh" moans voluntarily escaped my mouth

Quinton: "Liss?"

Me:"mmh?"

Quinton: "I'm sorry..its just I was lazy to cook,and I kinda suck at it"

Me:"its fine Q just please don't over do it"

Quinton: "on the bright side I did have home cooked breakfast"

Me:"mxm don't tell me about eggs and bread"

Quinton: "oh"

He kept quiet I laughed

Me:"come here"

He crawled to me he rests his head on my chest\breasts we are cuddling and I'm feeling my temperature rising, heart accelerating, tummy blowing bubbles,punani arching

I run my hands underneath his shirt all over his muscled body

Quinton: "bub....."

Me:"I want you Q...so bad"

I grabbed his dick,he groans and his eyes close

I kissed his lips he kissed me back,he wasn't making a move so I made it,I got on top of him he presses my ass harder on him then pulls out of the kiss

Quinton: "Liss,I can't have sex with you"

Me:"what why?"

Quinton: "it just doesn't feel right"

Me: "what do you mean?"

I sat up straight still on top of him

Quinton: "you married"

This is really bothering him

Me:"but my heart and soul is yours, married to you"

Quinton: "that's right, the heart and soul...but the flesh is his,he paid for it he was given blessings by your family,you belong to him now"

Me:"but Quinton, you know I never wanted any of this,I'm forced,I really just want to be here with you"

He looks so sad he can't even hide it

Quinton: "can we please wait until you officially mine first"

Me:"No I want you now,come on we've been talking about this the while time I was gone,how we gonna make mad love when I get back,the

number of times you were gonna make me cum till I'm drainedwe've been fantasising about this over the phone all the time and now,I need you .I've missed you babe"

I lay my body on him and kiss his lips he doesn't kiss me back, his dick is so hard rock right now I don't know how he is resisting me

Quinton: "I can't seem to erase the fact you married, as much as I hate mnciseshi but you his wife,I can't sleep with someone's wife"

Me(irritated): "Quinton you've been fucking bitches from clubs who were probably married or had boyfriends and you never gave two fucks,since when have you changed now?"

He raises his brows,okay maybe I was a bit harsh,but he's pissing me off

Quinton: "please get off me"

Me:"No!"

I'm having his dick today whether he likes it or not, he can't get me addicted to it then do me like this,never!

Quinton: "Lisakhanya I said off me"

As much as this hurts but I'm not giving up without a fight

Me:"No Quinton, I want dick "

I kept my attitude on sky high

Quinton: "you married you should ask your husband"

Me:"you not going to give me that bull,you know exactly what I'm going through and how that marriage came about, so you not about to treat me like I chose to walk away and go marry him...you know exactly how much I love you,...you not happy with this marriage ? Well news flash Quinton, I'm not happy either,cause here we are planning on a way to bring it down together, so stop playing the sad victim here,I'm

also a victim, I'm also sad I also don't like what's going on a bit,so you better stop feeling sorry for yourself and focus on getting your girl back !"

He's now frowning argh he's being such a cute baby right now nx

Quinton(calmly): "you getting used to raising your voice at me Lisakhanya"

As long as he's still calling me by my full name,he's mad at me

Me:"you getting used to acting like a baby"

Quinton: "get off me Lisakhanya"

Me:"not until you fuck me"

He flips me over and gets on top of me getting me excited, finally!

He gets off me then goes to change as in take off his clothes and stay on only his trunks he comes back to bed and turns his back on me

I move close to him and rub his back

Quinton: "leave me alone Lisa I'm not in the mood"

I continue and sneak my hands to his abbs rubbing him up and down

He shakes his shoulders ,I plant kisses on his back,I have to make him feel better if its the last thing I do,I can tolerate an angry or mad

Quinton but not a sad and heartbroken one...I

hold his and from behind and make him rub his belly,he stopped fighting me,I moved his hand down to his v line, he yanked my hand off as we were about to reach the dick

I huff and fold my arms facing the ceiling.. Okay that's it! He wants it the rough way

I flip him and sit on him he tries to move me but I keep steady I hold his hands up above his head

Me:"kiss me"

He shook his head

Me:"fine"

I kissed him but he didn't kiss back I didn't care I don't mind doing all the work, I kissed his neck all the way down he tried to move me but I grabbed his dick tight

Me:"try to move me again and I'll squeeze the sperms out of these balls...you hear me"

He didn't respond so I squeezed a bit he groaned

Me:"I said do you hear me?"

Quinton: "I'll report you for rape"

Me:"do I look like I care"

I pulled down his trunks and a big monster cock sprang up,I don't get why he's resisting me when he's so hard on,I rubbed it up and down, then put it in my mouth and started moving upon and down,chocking it down my throat, he's

groans were getting louder and louder

Quinton: "aaahh fuck yesss"

Wow this guy is he serious now, I sucked his balls and played with them after much choking I came up to him and kissed his lips this time he kissed me back, I sat on his face with my legs on either side of his head, he was sucking me like crazy, making me loose my mind,I needed to hold on to something I'm shaking, I held on the headboard of the bed

"Aahhhhh shit..I'm..uuhhh"

I released and he licked me dry, I went back to kissing him this time his hands were moving all over me sending all kinds of electric waves throughout my body, I sat on his dick and he slid it in,its so painful when he's still putting it in but then it settles

I start moving up and down and riding him like a horse,only this time I had control of this trigger

Me(breathless):"still wanna report me for rape"

He smiled as his small green eyes stared at me,his eyes always turn green when we making love

Quinton: "yeah"

I get off him as much as it is hard on me but I left him hanging

Quinton: "why'd you do that?"

I turn my back on him and close my eyes

Quinton: "No bub you can't do this to me....please...shit it hurts"

He flipped me and got ontop of me

Me:"Quinton, I'm too young to go to jail so please I left you like you wanted"

Quinton: "fuck that shit"

He thrusts in and banged me hard...I told you I was gonna have his dick whether he likes it or

not,definitely worth the fight

Me:"I'll report you for r .r.r.raape"

He reaches for the phone and gives it to me

Quinton: "go ahead"

He moves slowly, I couldn't even hold the phone properly

He started moving very fast

Quinton: "call them bub....come on"

I just put the phone on my ear

Me(shouting):"somebody call 911 !!!"

.

.

(not edited)

[07/28, 22:56] W: Insert 22

LISA

"You don't listen Lisakhanya"

Me:"Dad,you look better"

He doesn't have blood anymore he's clean and dressed normally

We in a park it looks so magical

Dad:"you in even greater danger my child"

Me:"Dad tell me what to do? Is it the Johnson's?"

Dad:"a lot of darkness is bearing over you,you need to make the right choices "

Me:"which are the right choices dad?"

Dad:"I'll leave that to you,but you have my protection "

Me:"please dad tell me what to do?"

Dad:"where are the diamonds I gave you? "

Me:"they still buried where I used to hide them"

Dad:"get rid of them....I thought they would do you good,they'll only put you in great danger,get rid of them"

Me:"but they must be worth so much,they could really change my life"

Dad:"get rid of them baby,they no good,there's no easy way to success, get rid of the diamonds and stay away from....."

His voice became weaker and he was fading away

Me:"from who dad? Stay away from who"

He was talking but I couldn't hear him

Me:"come back! From who!!

"Lisa!"

Me:"please come back,I need you"

"Lisa ... wake up"

My eyes open,I feel disappointed and down,I'm trying to figure out who is my dad trying to warn me about?

Quinton: "are you okay?"

I look at him,could it be him,but why? He only visits me when I'm with him,but he loves me he'd never harm me,what could my dad possibly not like about him?

Quinton: "Lisa? Hello....why you looking at me

like that?"

I'm brought back to earth by his words

Me:"what?"

Quinton: "you looking at me like you suspecting me of something?"

Me:"I'm just wondering what God was thinking when he created you?"

Quinton:.....

Me:"was he thinking about me? Cause he answered all my dreams"

He smiles and moves closer to me

Quinton: "can I ask you a question?"

Me:"oh boi"

Quinton: "I need you to be totally honest with me"

Me:"Q if you will ask me about Mncedisi,please I don't wanna go there,its too much"

Quinton: "its not about him, its about me"

Me:"ow..owhkaay"

Quinton: "why do you love me so much?"

What? Okay how do I answer this?,why do I love him,gosh there's so many reasons

Me:"Quinton, if I answer that question, we'd stay in this bed the whole day"

Quinton: "lucky you,I have no classes today"

Me:"I do"

Quinton: "what time?"

Me:"twelve "

Quinton: "then I'll stop you when I feel I've heard enough"

Me:"I really don't know how to put my answer in words cause there's just so many reasons why I love you"

Quinton: "then put it into action and start

moving your lips"

I give him a dead glare he chuckles

Quinton: "why do you love me...or what do you love about me?"

I adjust myself as sleep on my back and look up at the ceiling

I sigh

Me:"I lovethe way you smell"

He laughs

Quinton: "really? Wow that's why you love me?"

I look at him and laugh

Me:"would you shut up...I'm not done,just listen"

He sleeps closer to me also on his back but looks at me we stare at each others eyes for a while before I look at the ceiling

Me:"I love How you light up the whole room when you smile

I love How you're always just adorably cute

I love Your gorgeous eyes

But most of all....I love How I can trust you with my life.... That you tell me secrets that your friends don't even know..... How you need me..... How you always have the right thing to say to me....how you can make me laugh even though I really really don't want to.... How we stay up too late talking about our future..... When we talk on the phone for hours, even though it only feels like ten minutes...(I chuckle and so does he)...I love That you still love me even though you've seen me looking terrible..

Quinton: "you mean horrible.. Or horrific.. Or better yet terrifyingly horrifically horrible... Or...

Me:" shut up I get it... You've seen me at my worst now shut that pie hole or I'll stop "

He laughs

Quinton: "please continue bub"

I sigh

Me:"I love How you say, 'I love you, bub' "

I love Our memories... our plans...How we just can't leave each other....I love That over time, as I look at you, I love you more and more.... When you kiss me and the whole world disappears and everything is perfect... How you can get me out of a bad mood... even if it's you who put me in it (he laughs a lil)I love That just thinking about you makes me smile....I love The way I feel safe when I'm with you.... That you always tell me I look beautiful....even when I blatantly don't!....I love How you always know when something is wrong...I love How you hold me when I'm scared....I love How you tell me everything will be ok....I love How you forgive me straight away when I do something that makes you angry...I love That you respect my feelings...even though last night I had to force myself on you but yeah (he laughs...I don't find

it funny nx but I laugh anyway argh stupid
him)...I love When you explain things to me
when I get confused...I love When you put me
first.....I love How you love me just the way I
am.....I love The times when we've both been so
low but, somehow, you managed to make me
smile..(I look at him and he's been staring at
me)..I love The cute face you make when you're
trying to take off my bra.....I love When you
stare into my eyes for ages....I love That when
we lie together, we fit perfectly...I love When
you smell my hair...I love Your ridiculous, angry-
looking sex face (he laughs I blush and cover
my face did I just say that? If he doesn't stop
me now God knows how many more things I
should be secretly loving him about am I going
to blurt out)....I love How you let me watch what
I want: Moulin Rouge, Sex and the City,
Supernanny, and so onI love When you let
me beat you when we wrestle..I love How you
talk to my face, not my boobs...most of the

time..(I giggle he smirks looking at my boobs I hide them this guy is unbelievable)...Being in the car with you and singing alone to our favourite songs...the silly pranks we do to each other...When you embarrass me at the park..... When you cry...That you can have any girl that you want, but you still choose me.....argh man Quinton I just love Everything you do that makes you the most amazing boyfriend and best friend in the world!"

He makes me look at him,there he goes with the staring again with his piercing grey eyes,I wish my eyes could do that, change by my mood or become two colours at once

Quinton: "I love you too so much bub...I love the way you love me"

Me:"I want to show you something"

Quinton: "okay"

I get up and go to the bathroom I take of my eye

contacts,I look at my reflection they still as green as ever,I hope they won't scare him away.

I walk back to the room with my eyes covered

"Ouch!"

I bumped my foot on the bed

Quinton: "maybe if you watched where you were going..."

I crawl into bed with my eyes still closed

Me:"close your eyes"

Quinton: "okay? Are we going to pray now orr..."

Me:" just do what I'm telling you marn "

I peek a lil and his eyes are closed ,I open mine

I kiss his lips and he kisses me back

Me(while kissing):"you can open them now"

He opened them our eyes lock,the shock on his his face,but he is still kissing me,he's just staring at my eyes in awe

I pull out

Quinton: "wow, when did you buy those?"

Me: "I didn't buy them....they my real eyes "

He has a confused look

Quinton: "what? But your eyes are black?"

Me: "those were fake"

Quinton: "so you were born with green eyes?"

I nod

Quinton: "and all this time you've been hiding them?"

I nod

Quinton: "why? They so beautiful "

Me: "really? I thought they make me look weird...I was already teased at school calling me big eyes or fat eyes or usgqemeza....when I got to high school I put black contacts.. I thought my green eyes were what made them

notice I have big eyes, so to avoid being called the green eyed zombie or something like that I hid my green eyes and growing up in the farms was hard specially if you looked different from the rest,like me,I was very white had silky long hair and my big green eyes,I got too much attention, some would tease me some would just stare or gossip about me a few wanted to hang out with me"

Quinton: "aaww...well who cares what the world thinks about your eyes,they always going to criticize, if you care about peoples approval you'll always be their prisoner.....your life can never be yours if you still care what others think.,...trust me not caring what others think will be the best choice you'll ever make...look now how much beauty you were hiding for all these years.."

Me:"you see? This is exactly why I love you,you always have the right thing to say"

Quinton (chuckles): "yeah..my green eyes
sgqemeza"

I hit his chest

Me:"mxm,meany"

Quinton: "bub?"

Me:"what?"

Quinton: "if like let's say someone were to tell
you something very bad like very bad that would
break your heart and this person you love with
allll your heart.....would you hate that person
forever? Or cut them out of tour life?"

My heart skips a beat,that's a deep question

Me: "uhm I don't know,it would depend on what
is it that the person told me....but I don't know if
I could ever hate someone I love with all my
heart,I'd probably be angry at the person but not
hate....why you ask?"

Quinton: "just asking, what if what the person

told you was not their fault but they also very close with the person who was at fault?"

Me:"ayi Quinton, andaz, I don't know how to answer that....argh you and your complicated questions (I kiss him forehead) let me go bath and get ready for school"

He smiles I get up and wrap my naked body with a towel

Me:"wait I almost forgot to ask...who the hell was following us the other day,you said you found out "

Quinton: "it was two men,they refused to tell me who sent them,no matter how much I tried to get the answers out of them,nxa I was so mad so I just.....

He trails off and looks at me then avoids eye contact

Me:" you just what? What did you do?"

Quinton (sighs): "I just let them go...but I beated them up really bad "

I sigh

I thought he was going to say he killed them,phew,as much as I'm sacred of what they wanted to do with us but I can't let Quinton get blood on his hands because of me

Me:"good I hope you beat them enough for them to never come back

Quinton: "don't worry bub,they won't be a threat to you anymore,if they know what's good for them"

Me:"how did you know about this anyway? "

Quinton: "don't worry about that..just know that when you in trouble I'll always be there in a speed of lightning",

Me:" Quinton... Are you having me followed? "

That's the only reasonable explanation of how

he knew

Quinton: "no I'm not"

Me:"yes you are...those were probably people you sent to follow me"

Quinton: "I'm not having you followed Lisa, those men were after you,they were sent to get you,dangerous people are after you Lisa"

Me:"dangerous people? "

Quinton: "remember the story you told me about your dad giving you diamonds?"

I nod

Quinton: "I think someone knows that you have them,and they want them"

Me: "what?...I..

Quinton:" do you know where they are?"

Should I tell him,dad said never to tell anyone

Me:"No,I was still young I forgot where I hid

them,I've tried to look for them"

He looks at me intensively as if he doesn't believe me

Quinton: "are you sure?"

I nod

Quinton: "you know you can tell me anything right? I'm in your side"

I thought for a while maybe I should just tell me,but then,dad warned me about my friends, I don't really know which one was he warning me about

Me:"I know Quinton, I'm telling you the truth..do you think if I knew where they were I'd still be here? I'd be somewhere in America living the life eating hors d'oeuvre"

He laughs

Quinton: "I bet you would..but Liss you have to find them"

I shrug my shoulders

Me:"let me get ready for class"

I go take a shower then dress myself up

We just came out of class and yonela wants me to visit her for a little bit cause she wants us to talk in private so we now at her apartment

I make myself comfortable on the couch,she's been acting really strange today

Yonela: "would you like something to drink...argh of cause you do,silly me"

She quickly goes and comes back with juice and biscuits

Me:"thanks"

She smiles and nods, I drink my juice and take a bite of the biscuit I make that "mmmh" they really tasty, I look up and her and she's staring at me in admiration

I shrug my shoulders

Me(mouthful): "Whaa?"

She chuckles

Yonela:"you so cute,I see you took out the contacts, your eyes are beautiful "

Me:"thank you,I couldn't hide them forever "

Yonela: "but I've been preaching that to you,what finally got through your thick skull?"

I laugh

Me:"that'd be Quinton, I don't know how but he just brings out a side of me that hasn't been there before,he makes me believe in myself even if I know I can't do it,he brings out the crazy side.

She looks at me as though she's sad or disappointed

Me: "sorry, I shouldn't have add on the rest of those things..it was Quinton full stop"

She chuckles

Yonela: "Lisa,I wanted to apologise... Actually Lisa I'm so sorry for the way I acted the other day,I don't know what came over me,it was so uncalled for and I would never ever spill your secrets like how I threatened, you tell me those because you trust me and it'd be cruel of me to betray your trust like that"

Me:"yonela, I understand, I also kinda betrayed you by dating Mncedisi when you liked him first"

Yonela: "oh please Mncedisi who? I'm long over him"

Me:"really? But you were so mad"

She sighs

Yonela: "Lisa, I never wanted Mncedisi in the first place,I never liked thato,I know I always talk about Quinton but truth is I never liked him in that way...even Chris I didn't love him"

Well that was obvious, the Chris part

Me:"what? But you were laterally praising Mncedisi I thought... "

Yonela: "Lisa if you've noticed I've always been into boys who are into you, like that guy in grade 11 who liked you but I ended up dating him, I never actually liked him"

I'm confused AF what is she trying to say?

Me:"oh...."

Yonela: "the truth is I like you Lisa"

Me:"of cause you like me,you love me,we best friends darh"

I roll my eyes

Yonela: "no,I mean like..I really like you as in like this"

She moves closer to me her face right on mine she looks deep into my eyes then cups my face,she closes her eyes and brushes her lips

on mine,she pecks my lip I peck her too,she deepens the kiss,surprising myself I'm kissing her back,what the hell is going on? Are we really kissing? Why aren't I stopping her...damn why does it feel so good

I pull out

Me:"Yonela!?? "

Yonela: "I'm so sorry.... I thought you feel the same?"

Me:"what?....uhm I.. I have to go"

I quickly get up and head out I hear her shouting my name,but I need to go I can't stay here for another second,I called an uber,I went to the library, I need to get mind mind off things,I should wrap up my assignment..

The library is so peaceful but this time this peacefulness is making my mind run wild and I

can't stop thinking about yonela, how come I never noticed?

A call comes through

Me:"hello"

"My wife,how are you beautiful?"

Me:"hey Lee,I'm good thanks and yourself? "

Lee:"I'm good too....where are you?"

Me:"in the library "

Lee:"that's why you whispering, can I come pick you up?"

Me:"what? Where are you? When did you get back? You back?"

He laughs

Lee:"Yes I'm back beautiful, I had to come back earlier, I miss you so much"

Me:"oh...uhm I guess you can come pick me up"

Lee:"I'll be right there,give me five"

Me:"okay then,bye"

Lee:"bye beautiful "

I hang up, a few minutes later, I'm in his apartment, we were just chilling, played his play station, talked and had snacks

He's sitting close to me watching t.v

Me:"I should get going "

Lee:"oh? So soon?"

He has a disappointed look on his face

Me:"yeah its kinda getting late"

He sighs

Lee:"okay "

We stare at each other

Lee:"I can't get over your eyes"

Me(smiles):"thanks"

silence

Lee:"I was thinking "

Me:"yeah?"

Lee:"why don't you move in with me?"

Me:"what?"

.

.

.

.

to be continued

[07/28, 22:57] W: continuation

(short)

Lee:"I'm sorry I didn't mean to scare you"

Me:"uhm what? No,I mean uhm what's the rush?"

Lee:"its no rush Lisa it was just a thought"

Me:"oh...moving in? That's a big step,don't you think?"

Lee:"we dated for one day then I paid lobola,now engaged for marriage, but you think moving in will be a big step? "

He said with a grin on his face,I laugh a little

Me:"wow hubby I think we moving too fast,who dates for one day then gets married?"

We laugh

Lee:"don't you find it funny the first time I gave you a ride home then asked for your numbers,I saved it as future wifey....

Me:"only to find that,I'll really be your wifey....(laughs)..what are the odds"

We laugh

Lee: "look khanya, I'm not demanding that you should move in with me just cause I paid lobola or cause I'm your husband or anything of that sort,there's really no rush,its just when I'm with you I become really happy, its so fun being in your company,talking to you with your blabbing mouth,I love it when I lose myself in your eyes....I just want to cuddle with you when I sleep and wake up next you every morning, so

that when I look at you it'll make me believe that there's something in this world worth living for,worth waking up for,worth taking care for,worth loving and worth every efforts"

My heart melts while beating fast at the same time,I smile

Me:"that's so sweetdo you really feel this strongly about me?"

He nods

Lee:"I feel so much for you Lisa its not even funny,I love you"

Me:"oh...I'm not sure about moving in"

Lee:"you still enjoying screwing your friend...Quinton? "

What did he just say?

Me:"pardon?"

Lee:"is that why its hard for you to move out,you haven't broke things off yet,y'all still love each

other and he's screwing you right?"

Me:"Mnce.....

Lee:"No Lisa I get it,you love him,but can't you at least try to respect the fact that we married? Will you ever try to make us work? Or am I all alone in this? What am I even asking, you never wanted this in the first place so you'll probably do anything In your power to destroy it"

Me:"Lee...don't be like this..I.. I

Lee:"you can't even deny it,its fine khanya you can go back yo your man let me not stand in your way,I guess I was a little naïve to think we had some kind of connection, to think that it was fate that bought us together.....you know what,its getting late you should go..let me go get the keys"

He gets up I pull his arm making him sit,I don't know whether I feel something for him or I really feel sorry for him

Me:"Lee, its not that I don't like you or anything, I just hate the way we are bought together I still don't understand the deal behind this marriage and its frustrating me,cause as much as I like you so much I just don't trust why did we have to get arranged for what's up with that?"

He sigh

Lee:"if I knew...I really would tell you,my father just told me that if I don't marry you,then I can forget taking over the family business"

Me:"what is your family business about? "

Lee:"a lot of things but the main part of it is the shipping of cargo"

Me:"oh what type of cargo?"

Lee:"vehicles.. Aircrafts and many other things"

Me:"mmmh"

Lee:"let me get you back"

He stood up I pulled him back down but this

time he is too close to me we looked at each other he pulls my head and smashes his lips on mine, his hand brushing my thighs inwards, I wrapped my arms around his neck then pulled out

Me: "let me think about it okay?"

Lee: "I understand, but please don't take too much time, I really don't like that you stay with a nigger that you have feelings for"

Me: "okay fine I'll move in next week"

His face lights up as he smiles

Lee: "really?"

I nod

He kisses me I kiss him back our kiss turned into a make out session I pulled out

Me (breathless): "I should go before this goes any further"

Lee (smirks): "what's wrong with further? "

Me:"just take me home"

Lee:"but this is your home, with your husband "

It still hasn't registered that I'm someone's wife

Me:"should I call an uber ?"

He chuckles,he drives me back home.

I unlock and get inside,my heart skips in excitement, I love this place it my home,I'm happy here I don't wanna move out,I walk to the fridge I open then close it,I don't need anything from it,its just a norm now that I can't pass the kitchen without opening the fridge, Quinton has really rubbed off his bad habits on me.

I look around the house he's not here,I freshen up and wore my PJs, I took out my laptop and got down to business, I was finishing off my assignment, after hours of research and typing I was finally done,I check the time its past midnight and Quinton is still not back,I take off my nerds and start packing up,I didn't even

cook dinner, so I just have some yogurt then
headed for bed after switching off the lights

I tried calling him but he doesn't pick up,I sent
lots of messages till I gave up and fell asleep....

I felt the blanket moving, his scent filled me
up,he got in the covers I had my back turned on
him,he smells of cigarette He moves closer and
wraps his arms around me,I feel heartbroken at
the thought of where is he coming from,I can't
even pretend to sleep his touch is just too
strong to my emotions

Me:"where you coming from? "

I don't turn to look at him

Quinton: "sorry to wake you up"

Me:"where are you coming from?"

Quinton: "I got held up,I'm sorry I didn't return
your calls"

I turn to face him

Me:"held up where?"

Quinton: "I was at the hospital, they found a sonar for mom,they will be starting the surgery by tomorrow"

Excitement over powers me

Me:"Wow Quinton that's good news!!"

Quinton: "Yeah it is,I couldn't believe it,I'm so happy,mom was given a second chance"

I feel tears threatening, I'm so happy, this is all Gods grace

Me(breaking voice): "I'm so happy for her,I knew she'll make it through"

Quinton: "thank you bub,thanks for believing in her,thank you for your powerful prayers,you really do mean the world to me"

He pulls me closer I wrap my legs and arms around him

Me:"it was also your prayers,and your faith but

most of all it was God's Grace and mercy"

He kisses me unexpectedly, we share a kiss filled with lots of emotions

He pulls out

Quinton: "sorry for coming home late,she's awake,I stayed with her till she fell asleep,she kinda talks a lot too"

I chuckle

Me:"that's okay,I'm just glad you back now"

He gets on top of me kissing me,he goes down to my neck massaging my boobs..."you still enjoying screwing your friend...Quinton? "..his voice echoes in my mind I cant get him out of my mind,I close my eyes and moan louder as Q is muffing me...." I was thinking.....why don't you move in with me?"I moan louder trying to concentrate on what Quinton is doing to me but his voice still runs through my mind,I can still feel his lips on mine,I can't stop thinking about

him...""I just want to cuddle with you when I sleep and wake up next you every morning, so that when I look at you it'll make me believe that there's something in this world worth living for,worth waking up for,worth taking care for,worth loving and worth every efforts"

I feel him rubbing himself on me I stop him

Quinton: "what?"

Me:"Quinton, not tonight"

Quinton: "why not?"

He kisses my neck.

Me(breathlessly): "I'm moving out"

He stops and looks at me for a long time

Quinton: "oh..."

He gets off me,I really didn't want him to

Me:" Mncedisi wants me to move in with him"

His lips are curved upside down and so are

mine

Me:"I'm sorry Q...I tried to ...

Quinton: "No I get it...he's your husband, you were bound to move in with him"

Me:"Quinton....I really don't want to,this is my home"

Quinton: "yeah well,your new home is with him now"

Me:"Quinton.. Why are you being so cold"

Quinton: "oh..I'm sorry you want me to be happy for you? To rejoice? To congratulate you?
.....well I'm sorry..that I just can't do"

Tears were now running down my face

Me:"I'm scared Quinton, I'm scared to lose you,I'm scared of having to choose someone else to spend the rest of my life with who is not you, I'm scared to experience waking up next to someone else who is not you,I'm scared to lose

the strong feelings and chemistry I have with you, I'm scared to tell a man that I love him cause he's not you, I'm scared of changing, Most of all I'm scared of walking out of this room and never feeling the rest of my whole life.....the way I feel when I'm with you"

He switches on the lamp and looks at me, his eyes are blood shot,

Quinton: "I'm scared too Liss, I'm losing you, you slipping away from my hands and I can't do anything about it, I love you Lisa.....but I have to let you go, I love you...everyone can tell I do..but I need to accept the reality that you need to go...I'll be keeping my love for you To the deepest part of me I will not forget what we've shared Because that's the only treasure I'll keep....for now go to your husband, Maybe we'll find a way back to each other, who knows maybe things were meant to be this way first before we can be together "

Me(crying):"please don't talk like this,you breaking my heart,I love you so much,I wish things were different, we'll still be together right? We'll find a way back"

He pulls me into his embrace

Quinton: "I promise to hold on to my promise,I will never love any other girl like how I love you,I know you already failing to keep the promise you made,but I'll hold on to mine and wait for you...I know I'm not perfect but if given a chance I could be, I know I'll find the truth behind this marriage that will set you free, I just hope by that time you'll still want to be set free"

Is this some sort of goodbye? No it can't be,we've only just got the chance to be together, it can't be over so soon,it hasn't even started!

Me:"please don't say that...I'll always be ready to come back to you..you'll always be my number one "

he sighs,he cuddles me I couldn't stop the tears
I just went on and on and on...why is love so
complicated, when did my life get so
complicated?

.

.

.

.

I'll try to post tonight,.. no promises

[07/28, 22:57] W: Insert 23

QUINTON

A week later

Me:"well that's the last of it, did you pack that novel you love reading? God knows you wouldn't survive a day without it"

She's sitting on the bed looking around

Me: "hello!?"

I stand in front of her she looks up at me, a tear drops from her eye

I squat down to her level

Me:"bub,don't cry please,we've done enough of that"

Lisa:"I can't believe I won't be staying here anymore"

Me:"it is sad,but don't worry very very soon you'll be back"

She shrugs

Me:"come on let's get these to the car"

Lisa:"yeah"

I help her get up and we continue packing.

I really feel like I'm loosing her, I know this is hurting her now,but soon she'll forget about me since its too obvious that she has caught feelings for the dude,I just hope she won't be blinded by the rich good luxurious life and change, I've really been meaning to tell her the truth about her father's death but every time I try I see her beautiful face and I can't stand to see her hurt specially by me..Yes there is a tracking device on he necklace, I put it there cause this whole deal between the Johnsons

and her grandmother just doesn't add up, and I just don't trust them at all, I'll protect Lisa with my life not cause I feel I owe her for my father's deeds but because I really truly love her and care for her and I'll never forgive myself if anything ever happens to her not under my watch when I found her I saved her life, took her in and took care of her, she had no one so I became her family, her friend and her protector, she means a lot to me now, she's my precious pearl and I made an oath to myself that I'll take care and protect for as long as I live, I Also can't explain why I feel so connected to her but I just am....those two guys who were following her I still have them captive well one of them, I had to make an example out of the other so that the other one talks, he's not dead though but I made it look like it, I don't like killing but if its for Mom Candra my brothers or Lisa I'd do it over and over again, call me cold, barsturd or whatever but I'd kill and take a bullet for the

people I love cause when I love I love unconditionally that's why I never attached my feelings with girls and having relationships, and when I hate I hate with passion and right now I hate the Johnsons, I know about their shipping company, its a registered company so its legal but I'm sure there's more to it than aircraft and vehicles, I'll find out today, as long as Lisa has those diamonds her life is in great danger, a lot of people tried stealing from my dad there were always gun fights cause every thug out there wanted the diamonds, Lisa's dad was clever he worked in the inside gained my dads trust and no one saw it coming when he found out it was him, I was around fifteen to sixteen years old I already knew about dads businesses when this man betrayed him, he went after him and killed him but didn't get the diamonds, I wasn't there during the killing just my brothers and other men, I never knew it was Lisa's dad until she told me recently the story about her dad and

diamonds, I know she knows where they are but I think she doesn't trust me,if only she knew the kind of people after those,when dad died we were forced to carry on,I refused,until they kidnapped Candra I did all I could to save her life and I did,not knowing that from that moment I will forever be.....well that's a story for another day,I just need her to give me the diamonds I know how to take care of them so that her life is out of danger,cause if she gets rid of them,whoever is after her will kill her or do worse, but if they know they by someone else which is me,they'll come after me instead and I don't care what happens to me as long as Lisa is protected

I stop the car by the parking of the hotel
mncence stays in

Me:"well we here"

Lisa:"yeah we here"

Me:"Liss, you know I'd do anything for you right?"

She nods

Me:"and I'd hate it if anyone ever tries to hurt you,cause I'd turn into something I hate turning into"

She looks at me and frowns a little

Me:"please bub,when you remember where you hid the diamonds, please tell me,trust me it's not because I want them for myself but I want to protect you"

Lisa: "I don't know where they are Quinton but I'll tell you if I remember"

She clearly doesn't trust me and I hate that,how am I supposed to protect her if she doesn't even trust me

Me:"okay (sighs) ... I'm just a phone call away okay?"

She nods with her sparkling teary eyes

Me:"if he ever lays his hands on you and hurts you,tell me,I'll come get you don't wait for him to do it twice....if he ever mistreats you in anyway Lisa,don't be scared to call me even if he threatens you,he won't hurt you,not while I'm still alive"

Lisa:"he won't hurt me Q ,but if he does I'll tell you"

Me:"you promise?"

Lisa: "I promise"

Me:"also promise me you'll call me everyday when you get the chance,even if its just to say hi"

Lisa:"I promise I'll call you everyday..Come Q its not like I'm going far away I'll visit you every chance I get we'll still hang out just like before"

Me:"I sure hope so,I'll call you too,every single

day"

She makes a faint smile

Me:"come here"

She moves her head towards me I meet her half way and we share a kiss a very long one,the very last one,I'm not planning on kissing her like this or sexing with her until she belongs to me

I pull out

Me:"we can never kiss like this or touch each other anyhow as long as you still married to him okay?"

She looks at me disappointed

Lisa: "you mean that was our last kiss?"

I nod

She smashes her lips on me and we kiss again she pulls out

Lisa: "okay this is the last one"

We kiss once again, damn I can never get enough of these lips

She pulls out and looks at me

Lisa: "okay last of the last"

I chuckle knowing her we'll never stop and I don't want her to

after a long while my jaws were getting tired but I didn't want to stop and this kissing is starting to turn me on big time, I just noticed I'm rubbing her punani, she pulls out we both gasp for air, I'm sure my lips are as swollen as hers

Lisa: "okay that was the one"

We laugh

Me: "okay let's help you get these things inside"

We get out and take her things up to their floor, she only took her clothes and a few other things she didn't need to take anything big

Me: "where is your husband anyway?"

She sighs

Lisa: "do you have to say that?"

Me:"what?"

Lisa: "you don't have to mention that all the time"

Me:"I'm sorry,its just a way for it to register in my mind that you someone's wife"

Lisa: "he's on his way he was writing a test so he gave me the keys"

Me:" do you still want out from this marriage? "

Lisa:"we've been through this Quinton, keep doing everything you can to free me and I'll do the same..I haven't chosen him,I choose you"

Me:"its just I've seen how close you've been to him, you text him every night he calls you every morning like a real married couple "

Lisa:"its not like that Q..he said he wants to make this marriage work and that's him trying..I

don't love him I swear"

I hate how this girl brings out my emotions so easily, I've been a cry baby ever since I've been with her, I can't hide it when I'm sad and it only happens with her, otherwise I'm one emotionless person

Me: I know you don't love him, I trust you"

She has feelings for him, I can feel it

Lisa: "tomorrow I'll be heading to P.E"

Me: "what for?"

Lisa: "I need to talk to grams and I heard she's not well at all, I have to find out the truth before she leaves"

Me: "when you coming back?"

Lisa: "I have to be back the day after tomorrow cause I have a test"

Me: "okay good, I hope your granny tells you the truth, I have a feeling they threatened her

somehow "

She nods with a concerned face

Me:"that necklace really looks good on you"

She smiles and looks at it

Lisa:"I love it so much,I'm never taking it off"

Me:"its suits you perfectly, you should never replace it"

Lisa:"never,every time I look at it I get flashbacks of the fun times we had"

"Oh hey Lisa, you here,sorry I couldn't fetch you"

He hugs her tight but she quickly pulls out of it

Lisa: "oh...no its okay Quinton was very helpful"

Our eyes lock,I feel my blood boil and my temperature rising, I feel a lot of hatred towards him,its just too much I feel like strangling him to death,he dares hurt my girl I'll get the privilege to do it

Me:"I'll get going... (I walk up to Lisa and kiss her cheek)..take care"

Lisa: "I'll walk you out"

Him:"he knows his way"

Lisa: "so? I said I'll walk him out"

Me:"that's okay bub,I know my way"

I walk out closing the door behind me

A call comes through my phone as I enter my car

Me:"what do you have for me?"

"Let's meet at the usual spot,I got something on them that you will love"

Me:"I'll be there in ten"

.

.

.

LISA

Me:"why did you have to be so rude?"

Lee:"Eyi Lisa I don't like your friend a bit and I'm not about to pretend I like him"

Me:"please don't do that again "

He looks at me and sighs

Lee:"okay fine,I'm sorry,now can we celebrate your first night with your man"

He makes funny faces I reluctantly smile

Me:"I guess so"

He picks me up then goes put me on the couch

Lee:"let me go get us some thing to drink "

He disappears to the kitchen then comes back with champagne and two glasses

Lee: "to new beginnings"

He raises his glass ,I hesitate before raising mine

Me:"to new beginnings"

.

.

.

.

[07/28, 22:57] W: Insert 24

LISA

She attacks me with a hug as soon as I come out the car

Lethu:"yooh I thought you never coming back!"

Me:"how come? When this is my second home"

Sandra:"do you need help with your luggage? "

Me:"I need another hug first"

She smiles before shyly hugging me

Me: "you too thando? Maybe? No?"

She fakes a laugh rolls her eyes then goes back to the house

Me:"guess that's a No"

We laugh and head inside where I'm attacked by Snakho I pick her up and spin her around, she giggles like a little five year old.. Oh wait she is..

Lizz:": "Lisa, it so nice to have you back so soon "

Me:"yeah... I heard grams is getting worse,I need to spend time with her"

Lizz(sighs):"eyi its bad Lisa... Its good you here she will be very happy to see you"

Me:"is she here?"

Lizz:"Yes she's in her room,the doctor just attended her a few minutes ago so I'm not sure whether she's awake "

Me:"that's okay I'll go check"

I made my way to her room,I knocked softly

then made my way in

Me(whispering): "heeyy"

She looks up at me then smiles, I sit at the edge of the bed

Me(whispering): "how you doing?"

Grams:"in pain,but I'm fine "

My lips automatically curve upside down

Me(whispering): "aaww I wish I can take the pain away and bear it for you instead"

Grams: "that's sweet and all but can I ask something?"

Me(whispering): "of cause you can ask me anything"

Grams(whispering):"wasuma kangaka kutheni?"(why you whispering, whats wrong?)

Me(whispering): "oh my bad"

We burst into laughter,until she starts coughing

really bad taking her handkerchief, I noticed
blood coming out, I start panicking

Me: "ah..uhm..do you need water?! Of cause you
do..uhm ah. Okay wait"

I stood up

Grams: "no I'm fine hlala phansi"(sit down)

I reluctantly sit

Me: "are you sure?...cause like..."

Grams: "I'm fine Lisa"

I sigh

Me(smiles): "okay ke "

Grams: "kunjani ukba ngumakoti?" (How's it like
being a wife?)

I feel anger rising up, I hate it, I don't want to be
married, why did you put me in this mess!

Me: "its okay I guess"

Grams: "is there something bothering you?"

Me:"No"

She looks at me for a while

Me:"Yes"

Grams: "thetha nam kalok" (talk to me)

Me(sighs):"I just don't get it grams"

Grams: "what do t you get?"

Me:"all of it,I don't get it...the contract,this marriage, this family, you,everything... I just don't get it"

Grams: "what do you mean?"

Me:"I mean...what kind of people make agreements like that in contracts? Selling off your granddaughter? What does that have anything to do with your Job...?"

She looks around then back at me

Me:"unless.....there's something you not telling me?"

She sighs heavily

Grams: "Lisa this is for the best trust me"

Me: "No makhulu I can't trust you cause you not telling me the truth, what's the real reason behind this marriage?.. I mean come on grams you didn't even let mom nor dad know about this, that you'll be selling of their own child, what are you not telling us?"

Grams: "things are best this way Nana, something's its best you don't know"

Bull !!

Me: "I deserve to know grams, specially if it involves and resolves around me, I have the right to know"

She keeps silent for a while

Grams: " your father and Mr Johnson were good friends, they made a deal through contract that when they become successful they will Join

families to be one through their first born daughter and son"

Me:"but dad didn't become successful and he's dead now so that contract was supposed to be terminated "

Grams: "yes it was supposed to, but it wasn't, before your dad died Mr Johnson saw that your father was still struggling so he offered him a deal that he will not terminate the contract but will take care of you,and allow him to be his partner in his businesses"

Me:"so dad used to work with Mr Johnson? "

She nods

Me:"and Mr Johnson's businesses are here in PE only?"

Grams: "he has businesses all over"

Me:"do they have a business that involves jewelry? "

Grams: "I think so,I really don't know"

Maybe dad used to steal the diamonds from the Johnsons? And now Mr Johnson knows and he wants to gain my trust so I can tell him where they are or he wants to come after my whole family which is now my mom and I left,oh God this is a mess and it looks like grams don't know about the diamonds.....and I can't believe my dad just sold me like that

Me:"oh..but grams why didn't you just tell me the truth from the beginning? "

She sighs

Grams:"you loved your dad dearly,I didn't want you to hate him for thinking he sold you to his friend and business partner"

Damn right he did!! He put me in this danger now he's coming to protect me like he's so innocent and caring nx

Me:"I don't hate him grams,I'm just

disappointed he would lie like that and keep this from mom and Ibut there's just one thing I don't understand "

Grams: "what is it?"

Me:"if dad used to be business partners with Mr Johnson..... How come were we still poor? And still are?"

Grams: " they weren't officially partners until the families were joined, at that time while they were still waiting for you to grow up,he was just working for him like any other employee"

Me:"wow I can't believe this....and what kind of friend is Mr Johnson who paid his own best friend peanuts like the rest yet he knew the future they were planning together.. Greedy much"

Grams: "I'm so sorry Nana, you deserve better in life than this"

I do... But life is so unfair

Me: "something still doesn't add up"

Grams: "I've told you everything I know"

Me: "yes you have, and thank you for that, I wish you had told me earlier though but at least I know the truth"

I move closer to her and wipe her tears

Grams: "they are a good family though, I also used to work for them as a nanny, that's why your father used to tell me everything, he didn't tell your mother cause you know your mom, she would've freaked out and do God knows what"

I chuckle

Me: "I still need answers though, that's why I'll do whatever it takes to make this marriage a success, I believe there's a hidden agenda in all this..(breaths in and out)..and I'm gonna find out"

Grams: "in all you do uqaphele mntam" (be

careful)

Me:"don't worry about me,I'm a big girl,I can take care of myself"

She laughs at me

Me:"what's so funny!?"

Grams: "you not even eighteen yet,you still a baby"

I gasp

Me:"heey I am not! I'll be Mrs Johnson soon..hellooo,and next week is my birthday you'll see me becoming a woman"

We laugh,she starts coughing again, its so scary

Me:"that's it I'm getting you water"

She shakes her head

Grams: "I'm fine..ahhh"

Me(worried): "what's wrong!?"

Grams: "nothing, I'm o...aaahhhhh"

I get up quickly not knowing what to do ,I keep touching and leaving her

"Heeeeeellllpp!! Ncedani booooo!!!!"

I ran out the room screaming for help,I hear a bunch of feet storming towards the room

Grams was in a lot of pain groaning in agony

"Kwenzekani!!"

"Somebody call ambulance"

"No it'll be too slow,I'll go get the keys,try to carry her to the car in the meantime"

My mind was at stand still,my world just stopped,I just zoned out and everyone disappeared I froze just standing there stuck and staring out in nowhere my heart beating hard against my rib cage as if its going to jump out, before I knew it someone switched off the

light!

I'm woken up by beeping sounds, I immediately know I'm in hospital the smell says it all, I try opening my heavy eyes, and I look around and I'm met by a sobbing Lethu

Me (hoarse voice): "where's everyone else.. (gasps)... makhulu? Uphi?.. oh my god I have to go see her"

I remove the tubes and stuff getting off the bed

Lethu: "Lisa, you can't just get up, you need the nurse assistance!"

Me: "I don't see a nurse around here, do you see a nurse? Are you a nurse?.... no answer? Okay let's go"

I walk out with her trailing behind me warning me to stop, my legs feel so weak, I don't even know where I'm going, luckily I bump into a

doctor

I stop him

Me:"excuse me sir I'm looking for....

"They that way Lisa"

Lethu interrupts

Me:"never mind"

Lethu shows me the way,we get there and everyone is there except Mncedisi and Enhle they in Jo'burg cause of school,blocking me from seeing her as I enter the door,everyone looks back at us with sad faces

Me:"makhulu? Where is she?"

I make my way in closer they make way for me and she's lying on the bed looking weaker than ever, I hold her hand

Me:"makhulu....."

Grams: "mmh"

Me:"is this it?"

She smiles with teary eyes

Grams (softly): "this is it"

Tears immediately drip from my eyes

Me:"this can't be it...this just can't be it "

Grams: "its over Lisa, the pain and suffering will finally be over"

Me:"but..but my birthday is next week, I thought..(burst into a loud cry)..I thought.."

"Shhh"

I feel Mrs Johnson rubbing my back

Grams: "I'll be there sweetie"

Me:"how? ..(smiling)... Do you get another week?"

Grams: "I'll always be there...(pokes my chest chest)..in here....I love you okay?"

I nod my eyes are blur

Grams: "give me one last hug"

I bend over and hug her gently

Grams: "come on, is that all you got? Give me a bear hug"

As much as I didn't want to hurt her I couldn't resist, I hugged her tighter

Me: "I love you plus plus plus plus infinity "

She smiles

Me: "if you see dad up there please give him a hug for me and mom, tell him we miss him and.

.....

Bee bee bee bee bee bee bee bee bee!!! The machines go beeping, grams eyes are wide open and she's shaking

"I'm gonna have to ask everyone to please leave the room immediately!!"

The doctors rush in, I hold her hand

Me:"Nooooo nooo come back, she's not gone yet"

I feel people picking me up heading to the door, I see them switching off the machine and covering her up, I break down even more as the door closes

Me(crying): "Noooo, no don't go..I need yooooou!!!"

Mrs Johnson pulls me to her chest shushing me

Me:"she's gone, she left me....she's gone...she's she's...."

I felt my whole world falling apart, I knew she was leaving soon, but..... I was never ready

QUINTON

Me:"So I think its dad who killed her father"

Mom: "Mthethwa? Is that her surname?"

Me:"yeah,when I first knew her, her surname didn't quite register, it did sound familiar but I never gave it much thought,but a month ago when she told me about her father,that's when it rang a bell and started making sense,I was so shocked,what kind of fucked coincidence is this"

Mom:"this might ruin your friendship with her"

Me:"not only friendship mom...a whole lot more"

Mom:"don't tell me you have feelings for the

girl"

Me:"more than that..I love her...I love her with my life"

Mom:"oh no,an in love Quinton, this will be a disaster "

Me:"but maybe once I've saved her from the real enemy which are the Johnsons, maybe just maybe she'll find it easy to forgive me for dad's cruelty... Maybe she'll understand that I have nothing to do with it and she won't hate me,maybe our love will be stronger than the hate she has for dad....right? Maybe..."

Mom:"Quinton.... I don't think its a good idea to tell her the truth,just tell her about what you found on the Johnsons "

Me:"what if she hears the truth from someone else,she's gifted mah her dad has been warning her to stay away from me,although she's not sure if its me her dad is talking about,what if he

tells her the truth before I do...then she'll hate me even more for hiding it from her...then she finds out about the other things as well,then she'll think I'm nothing different from my father"

Mom:"Quinton... Stay calm, she won't hate you,and no one else knows about this besides us"

Quinton: "she said something about her mother is the only one who saw her father's killer"

Mom:"Quinton, don't say a word to that girl,you know what just let her go,she's married anyway the more reason to stay away from her,stop trying to fight for her to come back to you,its best if you just let her start a new life with this family and keep your distance,that way,her father will stop giving her warnings, and she'll never know the truth "

Me:"there's just one problem "

Mom:"what?"

Me:"I love her.....

Mom (interrupts): "Quin...

Me:" which causes another problem..... I can't stay away from her... Which then adds up to a bigger problem.... I hate the Johnsons and the dude she's married to and if I can't have her then they can't have her too,she'd rather hate me"

She sighs and shakes her head

Mom:"I sense a big war coming "

Me:"if that's what it takes"

My phone rings and BUB flashes on my screen,a smile creeps on my face,I don't know why that happens all the time

Me:"I have to take this"

I get out of the her ward

Me:"bub?"

She remains quiet

Me:"bub...are you okay?"

She burst into a loud cry piercing through my heart

"She's gone Q...she's gone!"

Me:"I'll be right there"

.

.

.

.

My apologies,I was very busy, but I'm back now

[07/28, 22:58] W: Insert 25

LISA

"Lisa, please open!"

We were sent home after they told us she passed away, I've been locked up in my room, I just want to be alone and never stop crying, they all want to stop me from crying, how am I supposed to do that, I want to cry and cry and cry till I run out of tears for a lifetime

Mrs Johnson keeps knocking

Me (shouting): "JUST LEAVE ME ALONE! GO

AWAY! I WANT TO BE ALONE!"

I cry even louder, I can literally feel my heart bleeding, I hear her footsteps walking away. What is happening? Why am I being punished? What did I do? Please God just tell me what I've done and how to make things right, I just want to live like a normal teenage girl

Another knock comes through.. Don't these people understand English? What part of leave me alone don't they get? Can't a girl cry in peace?

"Lisakhanya, cela uvule umnyango" (please open the door)

That was Liam's voice

Me(defeated): "please just go, I want to be left alone please"

"But I want to comfort you, please let me in, please stop crying, I can't take it anymore, I want to hold you"

I shake my head as I sniff crying silently

Me(whispers): "please go"

At this moment I trust non of the Johnsons

My phone rings I pick it up

Me:"mmh"

"I can't come in I parked a few houses away,can you come out?"

Me:"I don't know,please just come in"

"I can't bub,please come out"

I don't even have the strength for this

Me:"okay I'll try"

"Okay, I'll wait out here"

I drop the call, I wipe my tears and blow my nose then head out

I pass everyone sitting in the lounge

Mncedisi stands in front of me

Lee:"Babe,I'm sorry, are you okay?"

Me:"yeah I'm supper"

Lee:"sorry that was a stupid question "

Me:"I was heading out can I be excused? "

Lee:"where you off to? You in no state of wondering alone"

Me:"if I stay in this house for a another second I'll be in no state at all,now please excuse me,I need fresh air,I won't go far"

He nods then hugs me tight

Lee:"we'll give you your space"

He kisses my cheek, I make my way out the gate,I spot a car bit its not Quinton's its a very fancy car and its the only car there so I walk unsurely towards it until Quinton comes out the car,he walks fast towards me I also pick up the pace until I'm running, I throw myself at him he picks me up holding onto each other for dear

life, the whipping starts all over as I break down into tears, he walks back to the car and we get in the back seat, the car windows are down, he's sitting next to me and holding me against his chest he doesn't shush me instead

Quinton: "let it all out bub...just let it all out"

Making me cry even more

Me: "it was too soon Q....it was too soon"

Quinton: "I know.....life is so unfair"

Me: "I know right!!"

I hear him sniff, I cried until I ran out of my voice, my chest is too painful, with uncontrollable hiccups and running nose, he made me sit up and gave me fresh bottled water helping me drink he then held the tissue for me to blow my nose, he makes me sit on one lap with my both my legs in between his then lays me on his shoulder with his arms wrapped around me making me feel soooo safe

once again and I feel a bit better now, I close my eyes as he brushes my hair and back, not saying a word but it feels like he's said a lot by just being here and holding me like this, my face was right on his neck breathing in his hypnotising Cologne, the hiccups are still there

Me: "how did you get here so quick? "

Quinton: "I took mom's jet"

Me: "who's car is this?"

Quinton: "I borrowed it"

Me: "you feel comfortable using your parent's money now?"

Quinton: "only for really urgent emergencies"

Me: "but there was no emergency "

Quinton: "bub, whenever I feel you need me, its always an emergency"

Me(yawns): "aaww"

I feel myself getting lighter and lighter as I doze off

Mmh I feel so comfortable and warm I move around, this car is very comfy, I open my eyes and notice I'm in bed, I look around, this is not my room looks like a hotel, I check the time at the alarm that is beside the bed and its 20:35, I get off the bed and walk around, no one is here. I pass a big mirror it only now I realise I'm wearing his shirt, I lift it up, panty is on.

Me:"Quinton! "

I walk to the kitchen no sign of him

I throw myself on the couch

"Hey you awake"

I look over my shoulder and there he is, carrying plastics and paperbags

Me:"yeah"

That came out as a hoarse whisper, I think I lost my voice

He puts the things on the counter

Quinton: "went to get you some food"

He prepares everything and comes towards me with the food

Quinton: "know how much you love nandos, got you extra hot"

Me: "mmmh, you know me too well"

I try to reach for a chip but he smacks my hand

Me: "ayibo?"

Quinton: "don't you know that babies are fed by their mommies or daddies"

Me: "but I'm no baby"

Quinton: "that's exactly what a baby would say"

I laugh, he takes a roll opens it then stuffs in some meat and chips

My mouth is watering, I haven't eaten the whole day, I already had my mouth wide open as he turned to face me,he laughs

Quinton: "choo choo train is coming.... (He stops right in front of my mouth)..uh-oh train is held up in traffic"

Me:"argh Quinton stop playing! I'm hungry"

He laughs

Quinton: "ask nicely, like a good little girl"

Me(angrily):"if you don't give me that sandwich right now I'll kick you where the sun don't shine..(nicely and smiling)..okay daddy?"

He's eyes are wide open and so is his mouth

Quinton: "wow"

He finally feeds me, I grab it from him cause he's too slow,I stuff myself with it and eat like there's no tomorrow

Quinton: "remind me,to teach our kids manners

at an early early age like very early....as in like before they can kick daddy where the sun don't shine"

I burst into laughter

We carry on eating with Q keep on saying stupid funny things,making me laugh for a moment there everything seems perfect and into place

Until I remember I'm married

Me:"where's my phone? "

Quinton: "you didn't bring it"

Me:"Shit..I have to go,everyone must be worried"

He frowns

Quinton: "yeah, of cause..(sighs)...go get yourself dressed bubby"

Me:"I'm not bubby"

Quinton:"you my bubby...bub"

Me:"what does that even mean"

Quinton: "means my world "

I throw my arms around his neck he holds me
for dear life

Me:"I wish to never let go"

Quinton: "I won't ever let you go"

We stay like that for five minutes

I get up and go change into my clothes,he
drives me back "home"

He parks right by the gate

Quinton: "after everything has settled,I'll tell you
everything about the Johnsons and there's
something you should know about my father
too"

Me:"tell me now"

Quinton: "No bub...you need to mourn your
grams, that's more than enough stress,promise

to tell you after everything okay?"

I nod

Me:"bye Love bug"

I kiss his cheek the security opens for me and I make my way in

Luckily no one is by the lounge so I head to my room,I hear voices coming from the office, I was told no one is allowed to go in there,it sounded like there was arguing so I eavesdrop

"Then find a way and get ride of that kid!"

"Dad I can't do that,I'm not about that anymore"

"Bull shit, that boy will cause a lot of trouble and thats the last thing we need...so do as I tell"

"No! No! I'm not going back there,I love Lisa,I'm not about to mess it up and repeat the same mistakes"

"I see you think you actually have a choice....how cute"

"I hate you!"

I quickly run back to my room,close the door door,I try to catch my breath,what the hell was that about? Which boy are they talking about? Which mistakes can't he repeat?

Doo Doo!

I startle to the sound of a knock, I quickly take off my clothes

Me:"ah uhm who is it!?"

I wrap a towel around my naked body

"Its me khanya,please let me in"

I walk towards the door,I open then walk back to the bathroom

Lee:"Where were you?"

I close the door and make my wake inside the shower, I hear him open the door

Lee:"I tried calling you so many times but your

phone kept sending me straight to voicemail"

Me:"I left my phone "

Lee: "I was worried sick about you,where were you?"

Me:"I'm here now,and I'm fine so don't worry"

Lee:"please don't disappear like that again, if something could happen to you....I wouldn't deal"

Me: "I'm sorry,won't happen again"

Lee:"specially when you at this state,heartbroken and vulnerable, this world is not safe anymore"

Me:"I understand "

He sighs heavily, I hear the door, I finish up,wrap my towel and head back to the room,I find him lying on his back shirtless with only sweatpants,he has his hands behind his head,I feel his eyes piercing through my skin as I lotion

my body, I wear my panty and shorts with the towel still wrapped around me, I drop the towel and put on the top, I spray my hair comb and tie it into a loose pony then head to bed, I open the cover and get it he was lying on top of them

Me: "do you mind.. I want to get in the cover"

Lee: "of cause "

Is that a boner I see.. oh hell no

He gets up and we get inside I turn my back on him

Lee: "Lisa?"

Me: "mmh?"

Lee: "will you ever love me?"

My heart skips a beat as I turn to face him and sit up

Me: "what? Why?... I mean.. where is that coming from?"

Lee:"I mean,before we were arranged, we first dated cause we really liked each other right?"

Me:"uhm....yeah"

Lee:"then we had to break up cause we had to get married to people we don't know at that time....when we broke up,were you disappointed or heartbroken? "

Me:"...I. I was disappointed yes"

Lee:"not heartbroken? "

Me:"I was...yes "

Lee:"I know this was arranged but weren't you a little happy that we got back together? "

Me:"I was...I mean I am"

Lee: "so does that mean you love me?"

Me:"uhm erh...(sighs)...honestly Liam...I don't know, I don't know how I feel right now,there's just so much going on,I'm not sure who to love and who to trust..my grandma just passed away

today...I just need time to figure out my feelings
"

Lee:"I understand, and I'm so sorry about your
grams"

Tears threaten

Me:"its okay..I'll be okay...(breaking voice)..
She's in a better place now right?"

Lee:"of cause she is..a way better place"

He pulls me into his embrace...everything
replays again, not this again, I'm crying

Me:"is it selfish of me if I want her to come
back to this not so better place?"

Lee:"if there was a way I'd bring her back for
you"

Me:"who am I going to visit every holidays,
who's going to tell me the best bedtime
stories,who's going to remind me about my
childhood just to embarrass me in front of my

friends...who's..who's...

Lee:"shhhh...she'll always be here with you,the better place is in here"

He touches my chest

Me:"I know...but its so painful"

Lee:"it'll get better with time"

I cry till I fall asleep

"Don't cry my baby,your grandma is in a better place"

"Can I see her?"

"All in due time

" daddy am I safe here?"

"You not safe,there's still great danger coming your way"

"But you bought me here,why would you sell me to these people"

"I trusted them,that's why I can't rest lisa, I can't

rest until you're safe"

"This is so confusing dad"

"When you find the truth about him, forgive him, don't hate him, but he has to ask for forgiveness from our ancestors first....he'll be your protection he really loves you"

"Who dad? Mncedisi?"

"Don't let him go, he's your protectionthis is the last time I'm visiting you"

"Who? Dad..who's my protection?"

His voice fades again

"Dad I can't hear you"

"I can't hear you!"

"Wake up..khanya, wake up"

I open my eyes and I'm met by brown eyes

Lee:"you okay? You were sleep talking "

Me:"I'm fine"

He cuddles me and I fall asleep immediately

.

.

.

.

not edited

[07/28, 22:58] W: Insert 26

LISA

Me(singing): "I fought for you

The hardest

You made me the strongest

So tell me your secrets

I just can't stand to see you leaving

.....

But heaven couldn't wait for you

No heaven couldn't wait for you

Heaven couldn't wait for you

No heaven couldn't wait for you

So go on, go home

....

We laughed at the darkness

So scared that we lost it

We stood on the ceilings

You showed me love was all you needed

.....

Heaven couldn't wait for you

Heaven couldn't wait for you

Oh, heaven couldn't wait for you

No heaven couldn't wait for you, you, you, you...

No heaven couldn't wait for you

No! heaven couldn't wait for you

No! heaven couldn't wait for you

Ohh, heaven couldn't wait for you

So go on, go home

So go on, go home

.....

Our Father

Who art in heaven

Hallowed be thy name

Thy kingdom come

Thy will be done

On earth as it in heaven

Amen

....

The instruments stop and people settle down

Me:"God saw you getting tired and a cure was not to be

so he put his arms around you and whispered,

"Come to Me"

With tearful eyes we watched you

and saw you pass away

and although we love you dearly
we could not make you stay.

A golden heart stopped beating
hard working hands at rest.

God broke our hearts to prove to us

He only takes the best

God looked around his garden
and found an empty space.

Then he looked down upon this earth

And saw your tired face.

He put his arms around you

And lifted you to rest.

God's garden must be beautiful

He only takes the best.

.....

I wipe my tears

Me:"I love you makhulu, you'll always be in our hearts..may your soul rest in peace...till we meet again meemaw"

I kiss her box and lay a rose on it, I go sit next to mom

Mom:"that was beautiful baby"

I nod forcing a smile

TWO WEEKS LATER

...

The passing of grams has been very hard,I find myself picking up my phone to call her but then I remember.. She's no more.

Anyway things are moving fast here already people are talking about the wedding day turns out in three weeks I'm getting married

Mam lizz:"so Lisa what do you think of this one"

She was showing me a catalogue of beautiful wedding dresses

Me:"its okay"

I really don't have the energy for this

Mam lizz:"just okay? This is Hayley Paige,the best wedding designer from Chihuahua, Mexico"

Me:"oh that's nice"

Mam lizz:"come on Lisa, I know you still not over your grandma's death,but....."

Me:"what did you just say?"

Mam lizz:"Lisa I ..."

Me:"No...I'll never get over it,I loved my grams she was the only person in this world who made sacrifices for me..so I'm sorry Mrs Johnson.. But you can't expect me to "get over" my grandma's death "

I get up and leave her sitting there by the dinning table, I go chill at the back yard,I take a walk around the flower garden ,its very peaceful here

Me:"maybe things would be easier if you were around,I just don't know who to trust anymore...I wish you were here"

"Who are you talking to?"

I turn to be met by Miss World

Me:"No one"

Enhle:"I always knew you were crazy"

Me:"really? I guess you don't know just how crazy I am since you still standing right next to me"

Enhle: "I don't know what Quinton saw in you...I mean look at yourself,you look pathetically weird"

Me:"I know right apparently my pathetic

weirdness turns him on,...so much"

She looks at me all irritated pouting her lips

Enhle:"we'll see how long that will last,you see all this..."

She holds her waist and stands confidently exposing her perfect structured body

Enhle: "its all his,what he'll wake up next to every single day,while you married to my brother...he'll move on with me where he belongs"

She flicks her hair and sways her big ass with her sexy legs back to the house...Gosh did I just compliment her body? Well she is hot,damn! she can have Quinton all up on that with a click of her finger,does she have to be so cute...argh can I stop complimenting her already! Dammit!

I mean why would Quinton want to protect me and be with me when he can have all "that" which is technically throwing itself on him,what

was I ?

A call comes through I pick it up with my distant mind

Me:"yes"

"That's not how you greet your daddy"

Me:"what do you want Quinton? "

"Yoh...I hope the rest of your day is as pleasant as you are."

A smile automatically creeps on my face

"Is that a smile I hear?"

How is that even possible?

"Trust me its very possible bub"

What the fuck? I swear I said that in my mind!

"I can read it even over the phone..its too loud bub"

I laugh

Me:"Stop reading my mind Q"

"Why....you scarrred I might read out all the dirty thoughts you have about me and you..together? In our room? On the bed? Naked?....clothes.

Me(interrupts):" shut up! Just shut your big mouth..and FYI non of that is on this very smart innocent mind of mine"

"That's what a dirty minded person would say"

Me:"so you just called to tease me?"

"Not only that..also to make fun of you"

Me:"you so childish....boy I think you need time out! "

"Stop trying to seduce me, I know what you're up to."

Me:"what the hell dude,its not even like that"

"Stop it! You literally undressing me over the phone!"

Me:"I am NOT!"

"Stop harassing me Lisakhanya geeeeezez!..I know I'm hot but girl..behave!!"

I can't stop laughing

Me:"I'm cutting this call right now!"

"Like hell you are..don't make me spank you Missy!"

Me(laughing):"bye Quinton "

"Okay okay,here's the real reason I called"

Me:"I'm listening "

"I want to take you out two days from today"

Me:"what's so special about two days from today? "

"don't tell me you forgot?"

Me:"Forgot what?..OMG what's going on two

days from today? "

"you'll figure it out, but I wanna take you somewhere fun"

Me: "I'm so curious its not even funny"

he laughs a little, then goes quiet a bit

"I miss you"

Me: "Quinton.... I don't think we should be.."

"Chill Liss I was just telling you, you don't have to say it back"

Me: "Q you the one that said we shouldn't.."

"I know what I said... I just can't help it"

Me(sighs): "I miss you too"

"You do?"

Me: "of cause I do, why wouldn't I? "

"I don't know, you've been distant lately, remember you promised to call everyday?"

Me:"I remember.. Its just a lot has been going on and...

"You don't have to explain I understand, as long as you doing well"

silence

Me:"so you haven't told me what you found on the Johnsons?"

"Over the phone? I think we should meet"

Me:"I really won't get much time Q...I'm getting married in a few weeks,I'm guarded to not go out much till after I'm married "

He sighs I can sense the anger in his breathing

"They don't just ship vehicles and aircraft....

They also into dangerous weapons including bombs, drugs and human trafficking"

I'm so shocked I so didn't expect all this

Me:"hu..human trafficking? "

"Its one of the most discrete ones, only the father manages it,non of the family members know about it including your husband"

Me:"oh my God Quinton, if we could just find proof,we can get them to terminate whatever contract they made dad sign and I'd be scot free"

"They very discrete Liss it won't be easy getting proof without going against the law"

Me:"arrgh shit! Shit! So what are we going to do!?"

Quinton: "honestly, at this momentI don't know,it just seems impossible.. I tried..its been weeks since I knew and I still can't think of anything"

Me:"Oh no...okay don't worry,we'll figure something out "

"When? When Liss...when you already married legally? When you have to go for your

honeymoon? Or by the time y'all have to start a family together and have kids?....(softly).. When bub?"

His words hit right at the core

Me:"Quinton, please don't say that "

"It won't be easy Lisa, this might take months"

Me:"have a little faith would you"

"I can't believe that mnce guy of yours is clear,he's not involved in the illegal dealings at all"

Me:"you mean he's good?"

"Not really, he has a bad dating history"

Me:"really? How'd you know that?"

"Well I don't have accurate information but..."

Me:" Quinton...come on,this is no time for your resentful suspicions "

"Okay but there is something not good about

him, and I'll find out...he's too good to be true"

Me: "I have to go"

"Am I boring you already?"

Me: "No of course not, you can never bore me"

"I don't know, I think I'm imagining things but you've been really distant lately, our texts are no more the same, there's no more effort put into them, our conversations are shorter, when I say I love you, it's either you just say me too or warn me not to say it because of something I said we shouldn't do when I was still heartbroken about you moving out and going to stay with another man....I feel like I'm losing you"

Me: "you not...it's just everyone is stressing me about wedding dresses and fittings sending me up and down for cake tasting, venue sites and all that, I guess my mind has just been distracted "

"You mean you don't even get five minutes to call and just say hi?"

He's tone is down

Me(whispers): "Quinton"

"(Sad tone)Its okay..I get it....(sighs)...anyway remember the important thing about my dad I wanted to tell you about?"

Me:"yeah, I'm sure now is the right time to tell me"

"This can definitely not be said over the phone, can we meet? When you free?"

Me:"uhmm I don't think I'll be free anytime soon,Mam Lizz has these bunch of appointments booked for me and..."

"I understand you busy,can you at least try to squeeze me in your busy schedule, I really won't take much of your time not even five minutes I swear"

He's making me sound like such a bitch right now,I didn't ask for any of this

Me:"I'll try to make time for you,I promi....

"Ah ah please don't say that word....you really have to stop saying that word,..its only for people who can actually keep up to it and fulfill it....so far you haven't kept up to any of your promises, please don't ever promise me anything in your life again okay?"

Me(breaking voice): "Quinton...I.. Please just...

" please just what Lisakhanya? Please just what? Just believe you? Just keep my life on stand still and wait for the day you'll actually make up your damn mind whether you love your husband or me? Please just what?....tell you what Lisakhanya I'll keep waiting but trust me it won't be long so you better make up your mind..but just know,whatever choice you make,you and I can never ever be just friends ever again, I've been through that and it wasn't easy, we don't have to keep in touch anymore,I see you very comfortable there and just so you know..you've

changed Lisa....just call me when you get time so we can meet,I really have to get this off my chest...bye"

Me:"Quinton, don't be like this.....Quinton? "

I check my phone and he dropped the call,what the hell just happened?

Me(crying):"have I really changed?"

"For the better if you ask me"

I wipe my tears and turn to look at him

Me:"oh hey Liam"

Lee:"are you crying?"

He comes towards me I turn my back on him and wipe my face properly

Me:"No..no I'm not..it's just something that got in my eye"

He holds me from behind

Lee:"you don't expect me to believe that now do

you?",

He turns me around to face him then holds me against him

Lee:"your lips is saying something totally different to what your eyes are telling me and the fact that I just heard you cry"

Me(chuckles):"argh its nothing really "

Lee:"I know you were talking to that no good for nothing friend boyfriend of yours"

Me:"don't call him that"

Lee:"why? He is a good for nothing low life of a gangster good for nothing murder dad"

I move his hands from me

Me:"stop..he didn't choose to be born by a ruthless man"

Lee: "I wonder will you still be defending him once you find out what Mr Pretty face loving boyfriend has been hiding from you all this

time"

Me:"I'm sure whatever it is,it won't be your place to tell me"

Lee:"I think it is cause trust me he's not planning on telling you this ever...cause you won't ever look at him the same way again "

Me:"what are you talking about? Quinton doesn't keep secretes from me"

He laughs sarcastically

Lee:"wow babe, you trust him that much?"

Me:"yes"

silence

Lee:"has he told you about your father's killer?"

Me: "what?.. Wh...wh...why would he know anything about that?.. I I mean besides the things I've told him"

Lee:"looks like to me you don't know him the

way you think you do "

Me:"what do you mean?"

Lee:"He's father cold bloodedly murdered your father six years ago"

I look at him perplexed my lips are moving but nothing is coming out

Me(whispers): "What??"

Lee:"I'm so sorry you had to find out like this"

He embraces me

Me:"what ¿?"

.

.

.

.

[07/28, 22:58] W: continuation

LISA

Me:"what makes you think I'll believe what you telling me? I've known Quinton for a very long time now,he can't even lie to me,he'd rather hurt me with the truth than protect me with lies"

Lee:"wow you so wrapped around this guys little

finger,he'd point you with a gun right now you'd still protect him"

Me:"sorry but I find it hard to believe you"

Lee:"why don't you call him now and ask him yourself....right now"

I look deep into his eyes he looks back at me

He takes my phone from my pocket and hands it to me

Lee:"call him"

I take the phone from his hand reluctantly

Lee:"I would never lie to you"

I put the phone on my ear as his phone rings,we look at each other

"Bub"

Me:"Q...how are you?"

He laughs

"Come on I just called you a few minutes

ago..but I don't blame you,if I were you I'd miss me too"

He can't even stay mad at me

Me:"Quinton, I need to ask you something "

"Yeah sure"

Me:"what is it that you needed to tell me about your dad?"

"Lisa,I told you we can't discuss it over the phone"

Me:"Quinton just tell me"

"I really want to be next to you when I tell you"

Me:"is it bad?"

"Yeah its bad"

Me:"oh...okay then let's meet later tonight"

Liam clears his throat

"I'm in Jo'burg, can you make it tomorrow"

Me:"its still early..you can make it before night fall"

"(Sighs)..okay,guess I'll have to borrow mom's jet again, I'll see you in two hours....promise me one thing"

Me:"I thought you never want me to promise you anything in your life again? "

"Oh...nevermind..see you"

Me:"yeah"

We stay on the line for a while without saying a word, until I drop

Lee: "and?"

Me:"oh my gosh...I think this is what he wanted to tell me"

Lee:"why is he only planning on telling you now?"

Me:"how did you know about this?"

He looks side ways before looking back at me

Me: "you hacked his profile didn't you?"

Lee:"I did what I had to,I can't let you be around people like him,look he says he loves you,but he's been living a lie with you acting like he is poor, making you starve for months making you pay for rent yet he claims to be helping you out,he never really done anything for you special, yes he gave you a place to stay but you did everything for yourself, if he can lie to your about his childhood and background of how and where he grew up,how many another things can he lie to you about? He's not the person you think he is khanya,.....you have to believe me I'm just trying to protect you babe"

"Don't let him go,he's your protectionthis is the last time I'm visiting you"...could it be him? Could liam be the proctor dad was talking about? Maybe I should stay away from Quinton, he's father killed my dad, he obviously wanted the

diamonds (gasps) that's why Quinton wants them too,oh my Gosh how could I have been so blind

Me:" I can't believe this.....you right"

He smile a little

Lee:"I would never let you put your life in jeopardy...go talk to him,find out the truth then cut all ties with him,he don't deserve your love and kind heart,then most importantly if it seems like you don't blame him for what his father did that maybe he's nothing like his dad,ask him about his dad's business... Who's running it now? Who calls the shots?"

He kisses my forehead

Lee:"I'll be waiting for you,waiting to shower you with love and protection you so deserve"

He walks away

Dear God I pray that non of this about Quinton

is true,he's nothing like his father nothing!

I go back inside the house to my room where I freshen up

Afterwards I take out my laptop and try to shift my focus back to school,so much has been going on in my life and I still have two assignments to submit both only left with one week, I swear if my grades don't drop it'll be by God's grace,my grades have never dropped I'm an A plus student and dropping to a B would Be a very Big disaster.

I've missed out on classes

A knock comes through while I'm buried in my text books

Me:"come in!"

Thando makes her way in

Me:"oh Mncedisi is not in here, I think he's in the office and Lethu went to campus today,said

something about studying "

She sits on the bed while I was by the dressing table where I'm working

I look back at her

Thando:"I'm actually here for you"

Me:"oh?"

Thando:"yeah"

I get up and go sit next to her

Me:"what's up?...wait if this is about Lethu spending more time with me I've tried..."

Thando: "no no its not about that"

Me(sighs):"oh..okay"

Thando: "I just wanted to apologize"

Tf!

Me:"uhm..okay"

Thando: "I've been rude to you since you got

here,I guess I was jealous of how everyone loves you,I felt like you took the spotlight from me,everything had been about you,Lethu is always talking about you or with you,Mom is busy trying to impress you,My big bro treats you so special not me anymore,even Enhle....

Me:" wait wait..enhle likes me?"

Thando: "No...but the way she hates you,she's no more the cool sister who used to give me tips on girly and boyfriend stuff,no she's so busy trying to be better than you..I just felt like I'm loosing my family to you,even Snakho used to love playing with me but when you here she ignores me flat"

Yoh this is sad,I feel so bad

Me:"I'm so sorry thando, I had no idea that's how you felt"

Thando: "its not your fault I realised that you never asked to be here you don't even want to

be Herr cause all this was arranged for you, you never had a choice, you in love with someone else yet you forced to love my brother..... I'm really sorry for adding salt on you wounds"

Me:"don't worry about it, its totally fine.....as long as we can get along from now on"

Thando: "I'd love that...and Lisa"

Me:"yes"

Thando: "you so beautiful"

Me(chuckles): "oh please,with these eye bags"

She laughs

Thando: "that's only because you've been crying, it must've been so painful loosing your grams"

Me:"it was but I'm glad she's no more suffering
"

Thando:"yeah...are you white or black?"

Me:"I'm black"

Thando: "then how come your hair is like that
cause you not wearing a weave"

Me:"my dad was coloured but mostly had white
genes,I guess I took my dads genes"

Thando: "wow...wish I had those genes"

Me:"Girl please,have you seen how hot you are?
You are rocking natural "

She blushes

Thando:"thanks"

Me(smiles):.....

Thando: "Lisa my brother really loves you"
my energy drops again

Thando: "I've never seen him like this ever
since....

she trails off

Me:" since what?"

Thando: "I probably shouldn't be telling you this"

Me:"No,please feel free to tell me,it'll be our little secret... one thing about being a lawyer is being good at keeping secrets"

she sighs

Thando: "there's this girl my brother was madly in love with once"

Me:"yeah..and?"

Thando: "she betrayed him badly"

Me:"Oh my..she cheated?"

Thando: "and worse,she betrayed my brothers trust"

Me:"what did she do?"

she shrugs her shoulders

Thando: "but my brother....."

My phone rings disturbing us

Me:"sorry let me take this"

Thando: "okay,I'll go to my room"

She walks out and I answer

"I'm here,should I come pick you up?"

Me:"No,let's meet in town near baywest mall"

"Okay I'll see you there"

I drop the call

I dress up and decide to be fully black from jean to shirt,everything.

I asked the family chauffeur to drive me,since I don't have a license yet

We decided to meet at the Muse restaurant

I got there ,stood by the door and looked around, he stood up and that's when I spotted him

Our eyes locked, my body froze for a few seconds and my heartbeat accelerated, a part of me wanted to run up to him and jump on him as always, as I walked closer I saw he wanted

to come up to me and pick me up, that's how we always do when we see each other after a while, he finally got up and came rushing towards me, I couldn't help myself too, our bodies clashed as I jump on him he picks me up and spins me around, I giggle...almost bumping into peoples tables ,he puts me down next to the booth he was sitting in,he stares into my eyes he gets closer wanting a kiss it took a whole lot in me to push him back,he let me go and sat at the opposite side of me, we first sat there and no one said a word for a minute or two

He sighs heavily

Quinton: "so.... How are you?"

This is the third time we talking to each other in one day..and how are you..is the first thing he can say

Me:"I'm fine and you"

Quinton: "I'm good...would you like to order anything?"

Me:"no I'm good..you go ahead"

Quinton: "I'm good too"

Waitress: "can I get you the menu?"

Quinton: "No thanks we good"

Me:"just a glass of water would be nice for now"

Quinton: "make that two,with lots of ice"

She nods

Waitress: "you sure that'll be all sir? We have lots of delicious things on the menu to treat your girl with"

Quinton looks up at her, her cheeks turn red as she smiles

Quinton: "No thank you miss, I'd rather let my girl decide for herself, and she says she wants water then its water she'll get"

Waitress: "well your girl must be really lucky"

Is this girl for real? Is this part of her job?
Flirting?

Me:"we were in the middle of a very serious conversation if you don't mind?"

Waitress: "oh I'm so sorry, two glasses of cold water coming right up"

She looks at Quinton once more he flashes a smile at her and winks,she giggles and walks away, what the fuck? I hate how he always let's these girls flirt with him,then he always gives them that heart melting side smile of his nx

Me:"mxm"

Quinton: "what's wrong bub?"

Me:"nothing "

Quinton: "that can't be nothing"

The worst part he never notices when a girl has been flirting with him until she gives him her

number

Me:"that girl was totally flirting with you "

Quinton: "No she wasn't, she

" was just being nice" we say in unison

Me:"you always say that...I know she was flirting "

Quinton: "so what if she was flirting? Its not like I'll ever get with her,I'm here with you aren't I?"

I remain quiet

Quinton (smirks):"are we getting jealous bub?"

Me:"Me? Jealous? Of you? (Laughs)..in your dreams maybe"

Quinton: "oh come on its clearly evident all over you,don't worry bub,my heart beats for you alone"

My heart melts

Me:"Quinton? "

Quinton: "oh..right..the real reason we here"

He read my mind again ,I shouldn't think a lot when I'm around him,its dangerous he'll expose my thoughts

I nod

Quinton: "I sense you already know?"

I look at him for a while...I nod

Quinton: "that basturd, this is what I was afraid of,finding out from someone else....he had no right to tell you"

He looks angry and disgusted

Me:" Just please tell me its not true,tell me something else about your father,not what he told me"

Quinton: "bub....."

He rubs his eyes

Quinton:" my father did kill your father,your dad

used to work for my dad he was his right hand man,my father trusted him a lot with everything, he placed him under the most exclusive part of the business which was the diamond business, your dad used to collect diamonds from overseas and bring them to dad,but little did he know that your father was not bringing the diamonds in full he'd take some for himself little by little, until one time dad noticed he found out it was him and came after him,killed him without thinking twice"

I don't know how I feel right now but shattered would be an understatement

Quinton: "I wasn't part of that shooting that day,I swear"

Me: "why did you hide this from me?"

Quinton: "I was Scared Liss.. I was afraid of loosing you, I was afraid that you'd hate me for what happened between your father and I....

Me:"so all this time I thought you were helping me, it was all because of guilt? You felt guilty for what your father put me through? You didn't take care of me out of your own good will,you were just doing it because....

He shakes his head continuously

Quinton:" No no no....its not even close to anything like that Lisa..when I first met you,it really was my first time knowing you, I saved you that day cause you really were in trouble, I gave you a place to stay cause I really did want to help you,I knew nothing that time,you never told me about your father and I never knew that our father's have a history, yes I knew about your father a long time ago,but I didn't know he was your father until recently when you told me about your father when we were going to be pretending to be a couple for your grams,that's the only time I knew, and ever since then I've been meaning to tell you the truth,but I had

already fell in love with you deeply and I was afraid, I thought it would ruin everything..... Remember I kept asking you random weird Questions about what if you knew your dads killer?

I nod

Quinton: "you said,you'd hate everything that is his,anything that resembles him you'd hate, you said you'd hurt his child just so he can take it for his father since his dead....well all those words you said scared the shit out of me,I even became more scared to tell you..but recently I've been meaning to tell you that's why during these past few weeks I've been asking you to make time for me cause I have fallen deep for you and I couldn't keep it to myself anymore"

I shake my head with tears running down my eyes

Me:"why Quinton? Why does it have to be your

father? "

Quinton: "this doesn't have to change anything
Lisa,we can still fight to be together"

Me:"No..no we can't.... Why did you lie to me
about your background? If you knew nothing
about me from the beginning...how come you
lied to me about your background, about your
childhood? Why do you want the diamonds? Are
you continuing your father's quest on finding
them? Are you protecting me or the diamonds?
You said your father taught you very well on
how to deal with the enemy....I have been your
enemy this whole time,you saved my life more
than once,you made me trust you,you made me
to become fully honest with you about
everything about myself something I don't
usually do...worst of all,you made me fall madly
in love with you,.. All because you were plotting
your next big mission which was getting back
what your father so desperately needed...the

diamonds... Its so sad cause you so damn good at this"

Quinton: "Lisa,you reading this whole thing wrong..you have to believe me, I'm nothing like my father,I... Lisa. I just... I..

He sniffs and looks away from me

Me:"you not the person I thought you were....everything about you is a lie,I don't know if I can ever trust you"

I close my eyes and more tears come rushing out

Me:"you've never been fully honest with me from the beginning..... What else are you hiding from me?"

Quinton: "nothing.....Lisa,please,you have to believe me,I only knew about this a fee months

ago, and I've been meaning to tell you, I really have.. I love you Lisa, I really truly love you, I've never in my life pretended to love you, even the time we were pretending for your grams, I know that we were both not pretending we actually got a chance to express our love for each other, I might have lied to you about my background but that's because I hated it but I eventually came out and told you the truth, I even went to show you where I grew up and I told you the truth and why I lied about it, I also wanted to tell you about what my father did that day but I couldn't.. But believe me when I say, everything that has been going on between you and I has been true, the going out, the laughter, the caring, the love, the comforting, the support, the fun times, the sad times, the chemistry, all the memories... all that was pure and true, all that was you and I.... I swear to God Lisa I have done nothing but protect and love you and that is all I'll be doing for as long as I

live,whether you believe me or not"

Me:"who runs your father's businesses?"

He keep quiet and looks at me all over my face as if he wishes I never asked him that

Me:"who Quinton? Who runs your father's dirty businesses?"

He breaths out

Quinton: "Aidan,my older brother and Clyde my younger brother"

Me:"is that all?...it'd be better if you just tell me the truth now"

Quinton: "they do ask me to take care of some things...but Lisa you have to under....."

Me:" its okay Quinton, you are your father's son...and I can never change that"

Quinton: "I'm sorry Lisa"

Me:"I'm sorry too Quinton"

Quinton: "please believe me,I would never hurt you intentionally, if anything Lisa I love you more than I love myself,probably even more than you love yourself...I'd die for you,that I promise you"

The fact that he never makes empty promises gives me no doubt that he means it

Me:"we can never be together Quinton "

Quinton: "Please don't say that"

Me:"its true...everytime we try something out,something bad always happens,now I understand why my father always haunts me when I'm with you,he knew you are the son of his killer and nothing good will ever come out of us being together.... I thinks its best we go separate ways "

Quinton: "please...I don't want us to go separate ways"

I sniff and wipe my tears that are falling

uncontrollably

Me:"we were never meant to be Quinton, we'll never work out,its time we get out of our little fantasy world and face the reality.... Our love is forbidden "

Quinton: "don't give up now...please..I'm begging you...Bub"

Me(crying):"goodbye Q"

Tears finally escape his eyes

Quinton: "No..this can't be it..please ..please don't leave me....he's manipulated you Lisa..I'm not the bad guy here,I know it may look like it now but I swear...how many times do I have to say I love you for you to believe me?"

I can't take this anymore, I stand up ,I shake my head and turn to leave

"I LOVE YOU! I LOVE YOU I LOVE YOU I LOVE YOU!....COME BACK! I LOVE YOU!!!!!"

He was shouting and banging the table till I was outside the restaurant..

I got in the car and the driver drove away.....I broke down immediately, I can't believe all that just happened.... I lost him. I hope I made the right decision.. Yes Lisa you made the right decision, despite the way it feels like,but this is how things should be.

QUINTON

I buried my face in my hands,she's gone,what I've been afraid would happen all this time has

actually happened, I know I've done bad to many people but if this is karma...then they were right..she's a bitch indeed...fuck I've never felt this much pain in my life. Can't believe she just made me shout those three words in public out Loud, that I've always told myself I'll never say them to any girl who comes into my life and says they love me,yet with her its like they just slip out whenever she looks at me with those big pretty eyes...fuck this shit is painful.

I just sit there thinking about everything we've been through trying to make myself believe that its all over

"Excuse me sir"

I look up and it's the waitress

Me:"Yeah?"

Her:"its late and we'll be closing in a few"

I check my phone and its 23:30pm

I nod my head she smiles and walks away .

It can't be over, they'd have to kill me first,I'm not staying away from her

Someone out there whether its the Johnsons or not is after her..

Maybe she's still mad about this maybe she needs time to calm down and process everything, maybe,then,she'll come around...but I can't protect her if we don't work together, I'll wait for her to calm down then I'll try contacting her,hopefully she didn't mean all those words she just said, I can never move on,how do I even move on without her I'm failing to even move off this chair "Goodbye Q" that just keeps replaying on my mind... This can't be goodbye, there's still so much I wanted to do,maybe she's really fallen for that guy,maybe I should just stay away, maybe he'll do a better job in making her happy than I ever could,after everything I've done for her,she still doubts me,a part of me is

really mad and disappointed in her.....its fine I'll try a bit harder,but if she continues to push me away like this...I'll let her go,cause it cuts really deep when she does that

"Sir,we closed now"

Me:"of cause, sorry"

I grab my phone and car keys then head out

[07/28, 22:59] W: Insert 27

LISA

Me:"you were right,everything you told me about him was true"

Lee:"come here"

I walk closer to him he holds me and rubs my back making me cry even more

Lee:"he has to pay for making you cry like this....Lisa you have to stay away from that guy,he's bad news...as your husband, I can't allow people like that to communicate with you or be close to you anyhow,I'm gonna do by all means to protect you because I love you,okay?"

I nod he move me from his chest and makes me look at him

Lee:"promise me you won't talk to him or let him close to you ever again?"

Me:.....

Lee:"Promise?"

Me:"I..I.. I promise"

He takes my phone

Lee:"we'll start by getting rid of this pattern on your phone"

I draw the pattern then go to settings to remove it

Lee:"now go to his number"

I do as he says

Lee:"delete and block it"

I look at him he's serious.. I do as he says

Lee:"even if he calls you with a different number you'll delete and block it okay?"

I nod

Lee:"from now on..I'm your man..you listen to me"

I nod

Lee:"I only want to show you how a Queen like you is supposed to be treated...I love you khanya and I'd hate for anything bad happen to you all because of someone I could've protected you from,a gangster....you deserve way more than that "

Me:"please stop...stop, nobody is perfect okay,now I did what you wanted me to do, I cut ties with Quin...(sniffs)..Quinton... I'll now focus on us,like how you always wanted...now if you'd excuse me,I'm tired and I need to sleep"

I take off my shoes,without changing my clothes I tuck myself and close my eyes..who am I kidding, I can't fall asleep with this painful chest

""When you find the truth about him,forgive him,don't hate him,but he has to ask for forgiveness from our ancestors first....he'll be

your protection he really loves you"

I really hope you were talking about Mncedisi otherwise I have made the biggest mistake of my life, I regret my decision already, I love Quinton, whether he's the bad guy or not, its painful it had to end this way

Two Days later

I'm woken up by my phone, its a private number, I hate private numbers I pick it up but don't speak

"Happy Birthday"

Me:"Quinton!?"

"Please don't hang up"

I look around and Mncedisi is not around, I can smell his Cologne which means he left for class, we back in Jo'burg

"Look I know he made you block my number, so I'll be irritating you with this one until he finds

out then I'll use another one, but I won't stop communicating with you"

Me:"Quinton....

"(Singing) once a year we celebrate with stupid hats and plastic plates.....the fact that you were able to make the trip around the sun (gasps)and the whole plan gathers round and gifts and laughter do abound.....we let out a joyful sound and sing that stupid song! (I giggle softly) Happy Birthday, now your one year older. Happy Birthday, your life still isn't over. Happy Birthday, you did not accomplish much. But you didn't die this year i guess that's good enough.

.....So lets drink to your fading health, and hope you don't remind yourself your chance of finding fame and wealth decrease with every year. Dose it feel like your doing laps, and eating food and taking naps, and hoping that some day, perhaps, your life will hold some cheer.

Happy Birthday, what have you done that matters? Happy Birthday, your starting to get fatter. Happy Birthday, it's downhill from now on. Try not to remind yourself your best years are all gone.....

If cryogenics were all free then you could live like Walt Disney and live for all eternity inside a block of ice. But instead your time is set this is the only life you get, and though it hasn't ended yet some times you wish it MIGHT!.....(I burst into laughter, I can't hold it in anymore he sounds so gunny with his stupid voice).....(I start singing along)

Him&I: Happy Birthday, you wish you had more money. Happy Birthday, your lifes so sad it's funny. Happy Birthday, how much more can you take? But your friends are hungry so just cut the stupid cake. Happy Birthday, Happy Birthday,
"Happy Birthday, Dear..... "

Every since we saw this song on you tube,he practised it and made sure he makes fun of me in front of our friends singing that sad funny song

I feel tears threatening

Me:"Thank you Q,it means a lot"

"I tried calling you at midnight but I realized you blocked my number,I'm sure a lot of people have beat me to being the first one to wish you happy birthday"

Me:"actually, you the only one so far...so no...you the first one"

"You mean no one woke you up with breakfast in bed? Or irritated you in the middle of the night till you woke up?...I had such a good prank planned for this day"

My heart sinks

Me(whispers):"Quinton...."

"Lisa please.... I want you..I need you so bad"

Me:"Quinton...

"I know I've done bad things and my past is not perfect,I've hurt a lot of people,but Lisa this punishment is too much..

Me:" Quinton....

"I'll do anything for you to forgive me,anything Lisa please give me another chance.....

Me:Quinton....

" I'll give up anything please,I need you in my life,we need each other,stop pushing me away....Please my Bub....I.

Me:"Quinton! Stop!....you shouldn't have called, stop making this hard than it already is,just stay away"

"You don't understand Lisa.. You are my life,I can't stay away...

I hate to have to use this card but he's forcing

me

Me:" I'm getting married Quinton, you have to start respecting that,I'll be somebody's wife soon so please don't call me and don't ever try to contact me ever again..... I didn't want to have to use this but you pushed me"

"Wow,I can't believe you just said that..all for someone who didn't even remember your birthday.... Lisakhanya I'm giving you one last chance to change your mind cause all these words you using to push me away,they are hurting me way more than you think...you using the "you getting married" card cause you so badly want me away....I want you just as bad but you don't see me using "after everything I've done for you when you had no one" card cause that would be very low of me.....okay fine... Just say this and I'll never bother you again..

Me:"say what?"

"Quinton, you the worst thing that has ever happened to me, stay away from me, I wish we never cross paths again, I love Mncedisi..... I don't love you and what we had is over for good!"

Is he crazy non of those things are true! Can't he just understand that no matter how much I love him we can never be

Me: "you know I can't say that"

"Then you can forget about me staying away from you"

If he continues like this Mncedisi might come after him and he'll hurt him or worse kill him, The real reason I want Quinton to stay away from me, is because of the conversation I heard their other day between Liam and his dad, they want to kill Quinton, and as long as I'm with him, they might kill him, I'd rather have him far away from me than have him dead

I sigh

Me:"Quinton, you...you the worst thing that has ever happened to me.....stay away from me...(a tear drops from my eye)....I..I wish we...never cross paths again!...(breaking voice)...I I love...I love Mncedisi....I don't.. (Sniffs)..I don't love .
...(crying loud)...I don't love you!! Ahhh!...what we had is over.....(comes out as a sob).. For good!"

silence

"I'm sorry"

Me:"what for?"

"For a lot of things Liss.... I'm sorry for loving you so god damn much!"

Me:"don't be sorry Q..

"(Crying voice)Just listen okay!"

Me:"okay"

"I'm sorry for missing you....for wanting to see

you every single day cause when you not with me I feel incomplete.... I'm sorry for always thinking about you before going to sleep....For feeling upset if I don't see you....for wanting to be by your side..I'm sorry for wanting to make you happy...for wanting you to be part of my life....for trying to make you smile....I'm so sorry for bothering you....for dreaming about you every day....sorry for getting mad,jealous and sad....I'm sorry for always wanting to protect you even though you a big girl who doesn't need to be protected...for disrespecting your perfect marriage....sorry for thinking we could've had something special most of all for thinking you Loved me...sorry for annoying you with my messages and calls....I'm sorry for caring about you...I'm just sorry for ever mistake I made...I'm sorry Lisa.....I won't ever bother you again.. I promise...(sobs)..Goodbye BUB "

He drops the call

I'm now crying my lungs out

Me:"Quinton!! No!..come back!"

I spend my whole day in the house crying and eating all the junk things Mncedisi loves buying mostly ice cream and chips and chocolates, I watched sad movies...I'm in the middle of this sad movie 'blue Valentine' where the characters cry I cry with them..a call comes through, I hope its Quinton.. I take it my heart drops when I see yonela....I haven't talked to her ever since that day she confessed her feeling and came out about her sexuality I'm such a bad friend

Me:"Hello"

"Happy birthday to you happy birthday to you happy birthday day dear Lisa! Happy birthday day to youuuuu.,...hip hip.. Hooray! Hip hip hooray!"

We both laugh, but my laugh turn into a cry

"Heeyy birthday girl...what's wrong?"

Me:"my life is a mess Yonela!"

"Where are you I'll be right there"

Me:"I'm at Liam's apartment "

"I'm on my way with junk"

Me:"No I already got plenty of that"

"Fine then I'm on my way with booze"

I chuckle

Me:"I guess that would be the best way to celebrate my eighteenth birthday"

"Okay,please don't kill yourself I'll be there in a few"

Me:"I'll try not to"

She drops the call, I continue watching the movie,after a few minutes a call comes through Its the house phone, I reluctantly go pick it up

Me:"yes"

"Sorry to disturb you miss,bit there's a lady by

the name of yonela here to see you?"

Me:"send her up"

I drop the call and scrawl back on the couch a knock comes through

Me:"come in!"

She budes in looking beautiful as ever,its like she's become more tomboyish ever since..you know..

Yonela: "hey girl!..come on you just going to sit there?"

She opens her arms for a hug I get up and we hug,she smells so fresh and nice while I on the other hand smell like bed and furniture

We sit down

Yonela: "I'm sorry about the other....

Me:" No no please,I'm tired of I'm sorries for one day....you don't have to apologize, I understand, I'm the one who is sorry for reacting the way I

did,you my best friend,I should've talked to you properly and support you for finally coming out..I acted like a bitch...please forgive me?"

Yonela: "you forgiven"

We hug again

Yonela: "now that we back together...tell me everything that has been going on"

I sigh

I narrate the whole story to her,she's now in tears

Yonela:"are you sure with the decision you made,do you think its the one your father wanted you to make"

I shrug my shoulders

Me:"I really don't know anymore,I found out the truth about both these guys....I don't know which one my dad was telling me not to hate once I know the truth,they both always telling

me they want to protect me,they both love me...so dad's words were not specific enough,they left me confused, one minute he's telling me to run away from Quinton the next he's telling me he doesn't trust the Johnsons...so really I'm confused...what would you have done?"

Yonela: "become lesbian"

We burst into laughter

Yonela: "I'm kidding, but this is really confusing and heartbreaking and so frustrating cause both these guys are super hot,at least it would've been easier if one of them was super duper ugly....I'm sorry I know I'm not helping here"

Me:"that's okay..maybe you right maybe being gay is the answer "

We laugh again

Yonela: "you'd make a beautiful girlfriend to a

beautiful girl"

She smiles at me

Me:"damn girl stop hitting on me yoh!"

We laugh

Yonela:"let's get drunk shall we"

Me:"please!"

She pours some drinks and we drink while playing music and dancing, I was busy twerking with yonela spanking me then she starts twerking her ass against mine

"Oohhhh whaaaaattt....twerk girl shake it shake it"

That was yonela shouting, we are so wasted

We now dancing to slow music holding each other her arms around my waist while mine around her neck

Yonela: "you a good dancer"

She whispers right on my face

Me:"you too"

Yonela: "I hope you enjoyed your birthday"

Me:"you the best"

Suddenly the music stops I turn to look what happened and Liam is standing there looking pissed

Me:"Baby!"

Lee:"what's going on here? The place is a mess!?"

Me:"why so loud?"

Yonela: "I was on my way out"

Lee:"bye"

Yonela: "bye"

She kisses my cheek then heads out

We remain silent after she has left

Lee:"what the hell Lisa! Such a mess?"

I stumble towards him

Me:"I'm sorry babe..I didn't mean to"

I wrap my arms around his waist

Lee:"you wasted... Its in the middle of the week
Lisa"

Me:"I wasn't planning to but it just happened "

I lay my head on his chest

Lee:"don't give me that adorable baby voice...
This is unacceptable "

He says wrapping his arms around me

Lee:"wait...is it someone's birthday?"

Me:"why"

He moves me away and goes towards the table
where he sees the balloon yonela came with
and a card

He looks at me after reading it

Lee:"Lisa... I...I didn't know....I'm so sorry"

Me:"what for?"

Lee:"I didn't wish you happy birthday, it totally slipped my mind,so much has...

Me:"relax babe...you don't have to explain, I even forgot it was my birthday today until.....(I pause as I almost spilled Quinton's name)...,until yonela showed up"

He comes towards me

Lee:"let's go out,I want to treat you"

Me:"I'm not going anywhere with you this drunk"

Lee:"I'm not drunk"

I laugh

Me: "I meant me"

Lee:"I know its late but happy birthday "

Me:"thank you...its better than belated"

He smashes his lips on mine I kiss him back he

picks me up and we head to the room while he takes off my clothes, he puts me down, we taking off each others clothes..I kept trying to stop him but he doesn't listen,he picks me up again on his naked body,he put me down and breaks the kiss,I open my eyes and realise we in the shower?

Me:"whats going on?"

Lee:"birthday girl needs a wash"

Me(gasps):"are you saying I stink?"

He laughs

Lee: "your words not mine....but seriously, you drunk,we can't have sex while you not in your sober mind...and besides I want us to wait till we married"

Me:"its not like I wanted you now anyway"

I roll my eyes and turn my back again him. He laughs at me then I feel his lips kissing my

shoulder, I hear the shower door close and he was gone

THREE WEEKS LATER

Everything has been going well so far, Liam has been nothing but sweet to me, he loves taking me to these expensive places, I told him he shouldn't but he doesn't listen to me, he buys me expensive gifts despite the fact that I don't want him spending so much money on me but he doesn't listen, he says I'm his woman and he'll spoil me however he wants to spoil me, so I've given up in fighting with him, he went as far as transferring half a million rand in my account, I still haven't touched that money, he says he's making up for forgetting my birthday but this is too much!

I haven't heard from Quinton ever since my birthday, it breaks my heart, I didn't think he'd

really give up on me,I miss him so much, not a day goes by without thinking about unblocking his number...I'm getting married today,I never in my life imagined myself getting married, I never wanted to..but I always told myself if I do One day get married then that guy would have really swept me off my feet,it would be someone I love unconditionally not just any kind of love but the kind where I'd even die for the person..the kind I shared with Quinton... A tear escapes my eye,I feel someone wipe me

Lethu:"girl you will ruin your make up..look how beautiful you are",

We looking into this big mirror, I'm ready to go down the isle

Lethu:"are you ready?"

Hell No!

Me:"yes.."

She smiles then we head out, mom was not happy with my decision but she doesn't understand why I made the decisions I made, one of my uncles walk me down the aisle, Liam has the biggest smile on his face

The pastor makes us repeat after him as we says vows, I couldn't prepare anything, he's always busy so he didn't prepare anything as well

Pastor: "I know pronounce you husband and wife, you may kiss the bride "

We share a short kiss and the small crowd applauded, I look at the crowd smiling.... My smile disappears as I see Quinton, our eyes lock, I shout his name and all eyes on me I look at Liam he looks very angry

I really want to go after him until my eyes meet Mr Johnson's threatening eyes I stop myself,... I see two strong men quickly making their way

out..No they going to kill Quinton, I have to follow them!

I attempt to walk but Liam holds my hand tightly hurting me in the process,I look at him with pleading eyes he shakes his head a bit while smiling keeping a polite look for the people....I give in, he pulls me for another kiss the crowd ululates....

BHAA BHAA BHAA

gun shots go off everyone scream and goes down I attempt to run for the door

"QUINTOOOOOON!!!!!!!!!"

BHAA BHAA BHAA

I start running when someone holds me back

Lee:"Stay down Lisa! You'll get killed!"

He makes me go down and holds me as he protects me from the havoc going on

I burst into tear

"Noooo Quinton!! They killed My Quinton!!!!

Aaahhhh somebody!!!!

Please,...Quintooooooooooon!!!!!!"

I break down

More gun shots go off

I get off his grip and make a run for it

"QUINTON!!!"

somebody holds me blocking me and get me to go down

"Please,I need to help him...please.. let me go!!!!

aahhhhhh My QUINTON!"

[07/28, 22:59] W: Insert 28

LISA

TWO MONTHS LATER

ooooooo

I haven't heard anything about Quinton since the day of the wedding, I called his mother, but she doesn't know where he is, she hates me she can't even hide it even Candra hates me, I bet the whole family hates me including Quinton wherever he is, I hate Liam I hate him with my all I hate all the Johnsons even the innocent ones...for all I know they killed Quinton and his

his body probably threw him in the sea,I can't live without him,I need him. Liam is very demanding its his way or no way,its like he stopped caring about how I feel,he used to tell me he'll never change the way I dress but guess what? He did, I now have my own special designer and I'm not allowed to wear short things if its short it must be just above the knee,like what the hell is that? I'm sick and tired of him telling me what to do,I'm too young for this,today I'm wearing my shorts and long tee,its hot as hell!

He didn't even wait for me to get ready,he told me to call an uber cause he has an early class and apparently I'm too slow,its like some days he loves me so much and other days he's just tired of me,we haven't had sex yet,thank goodness although he likes turning me on then leaves me hanging, its like he's scared to do it with me,but I couldn't care less I'm just working

on getting incriminating evidence on them, get a lawyer and get myself out of this mess, I found out that After Liam's ex girlfriend betrayed him after a week she disappeared from the face of earth, they say she ran away but I don't buy that story. I don't think I'll make it out of this marriage alive. I wish I had never pushed Quinton away, I knew they were going to kill him but I wish I stayed with him regardless at least we would've died together, I've been nothing but a curse in that man's life, I pray to God wherever he is he is safe and alive, if I find out he's dead I swear I'll commit suicide cause if it wasn't for me He wouldn't be in this mess, I can't even concentrate in school not only did my grades drop but they went all the way down to a C, it's so depressing, I wish I was also killed the night my dad was killed, that way I wouldn't be such a burden to people's lives.

I call an uber and it takes me to campus

I try as hard as I can to concentrate but I can't
its as if I'm not even existing

Yonela:"I'm really getting tired of this"

Me:.....

Yonela:"when last did you smile or laugh,come
on Lisa at least try to move on"

Me:"How?"

Yonela: "properly...I don't know but please I
need the old you back"

Me:"how yonela? How am I supposed to move
on when the only man that has ever loved me
has disappeared from the face of earth, I don't
know whether he's dead or alive, how am I
supposed to move on when everyone has
turned their backs on me,my in laws seem to
not like me anymore,Quinton's family hates my
guts,my mom hardly ever talks to me,my
husband is changing on me,I hate myself and I
feel like dying..So tell me....how am I supposed

to move on?"

She looks at me with pity

Yonela: "aaww you poor thing,you going through so much,you so young this is just too much for you....you still got me,I'll always be here for you,they can all hate you, just know that I love you,I'll always love you..so when you think you deserve to die cause you don't matter just remember that you mean a lot to me and I'd be devastated if anything could ever happen to you"

She hugs me I cry silently

After classes it was time to go home,I waited for Liam where I used to wait for Quinton, a part of me always hopes that he will just come speeding his car just to park in front of me then revs it to get the attention

"So that everyone sees the sexy machine that fetches you" so he says

I chuckle

I've been waiting for hours ,I guess he's not picking me up,I call an uber

I asked it to drop me at Quinton's apartment that used to be ours

He drops me off I ask him to wait for me he agreed

I make my way to the house

I knock but no one answers...oohh yeah I still have the keys,I just want to check it out maybe he's in here,maybe he's been laying low,I know he's still alive,if he's dead I think I would've felt it

I make my way inside

Me:"Quinton! "

I open the fridge and memories come gushing back..tears stream down my face....looks like everything is off in this fridge. I close it and continue looking around,I go to my old bedroom

which grams used to use,nothing has changed,everything is still the same,I go to our bedroom,its so neat..I sit at the edge of the bed I notice a photo album, I take it and it decorated so nicely on the outside I hold my mouth when I notice what it say "HAPPY 18th BIRTHDAY BUB" I open it slowly.. The first picture was of the first day we met,its of me covering my face,I remember how shy I was around him that day,I was also a bit scared of him,he took a picture then told me that he wants to remind me someday when I get used to him how shy I used to be.

I turn the pages most of these pictures are of stolen moments,I didn't even notice he used to take so may picture of me...I come across this one and I immediately burst into tears,its a picture of me sleeping and he's kissing my forehead it has a caption that reads

"When you fall asleep every night, I can't!

Thoughts about you don't let me sleep! My secret is out..yes ,I watch you sleep everytime,you just so irresistibly beautiful,I LOVE YOU BUB...haha..I remember how you said you love it when I say

that,well I'll say it for the rest of my life"

I close it and hug it tight as I break down

Me(crying): "I made the biggest mistake of my life for letting you go,I thought I was doing the right thing,I swear I thought I was protecting you from my cursed life,I thought your life will be much easier without me,I thought I was lifting up a burden off your shoulders....looks like...I thought wrong!"

I throw my back on the bed

Quinton(inspirational voice): "No I need you to believe it,tonight the city is ours"

Me(unsure):"tonight the city is ours?"

Quinton: "louder and believe in yourself!"

Me(louder):"Tonight the city is ours!!!"

I shouted

.....

Me(talking to myself): "do people even buy these ridiculously expensive things"

Quinton:"everyday"

He startled me

Me:"I forgot you were here"

Quinton: "I see you like that one"

I look at it once more

Me:"naah diamonds are not my thing "

Quinton: "yeah right..diamonds are best friends with girls...wait is it girls are friends of diamonds, friendship is in between the girl and diamonds.... Whatever.. But yeah the saying has girls and diamonds and friends in it"

I'm laughing my guts out

Me:"its...a diamond is a girl's best friend"

Quinton (laughing): "yeah yeah....so what was the point of this conversation again?"

I shrug my shoulders

.....

Quinton: "you can run right?"

Me:"yeah,why?"

He pulls me and we walk towards the door

Me(whisper): "Q we have to pay"

He shushes me we get out of the store then the alarm goes off

He starts running I first hesitate

Me:"Quinton!.. Wait..no..what..yoh"

I saw security coming I made a run for it following Quinton I ran as fast and far as my legs could take me

Security: "stop! Stop!"

.....

I jump on Quinton's back for a piggy ride but we both fall flat

Me(laughing): "ooouuuch"

Quinton: "what the hell were you trying?"

Me:"I wanted you to carry me to bed I'm tired of stumbling "

We laugh and help each other up,he piggy ride me to the room but heads to his room instead, we fall on the bed

Quinton: "what a night!"

Me:"we really painted the city red"

Quinton; "we'll be painting it orange in jail sometime"

We burst out laughing

Oh Quinton!

where are you love bug?

I weakly get up to the sitting room, I find my teddy bear on the couch and all my favorite movies that I used to force him watch with me were on the table, I switch on the TV looks like he's been watching them, oh God I really broke his heart, I'm so evil! I can't take this anymore, I switch off the TV take my birthday gift album and head out

The uber was still there to my surprise but I had to pay him a lot

He drops me off at the hotel

I unlock the door and get in, I first hide the album in my purse, I'm attacked with a hug as I enter

Lee: "Lisa.. I was worried sick about you"

I push him away

Me:"I waited for hours you didn't show up"

Lee:"I know I'm sorry,I forgot to tell you to take an uber,I was caught up"

Me:"that's your excuse? Caught up with what?"

Lee:"I had important business to take care of babe...I'm really sorry I didn't think it would've took that long"

Me(sighs):"I'm tired...I'm gonna go rest"

Lee: "am I forgiven?"

Me:"yeah sure"

He stops me

Lee:"please talk to me like you interested "

Me:"you are forgiven Mncedisi..I forgive you"

Lee:"you stopped calling me Lee?"

Me:"I didn't think it mattered"

Lee:"what's up with you? Where were you and why have you been crying?"

Me:"you left me at school remember? I was crying cause I got scared"

He pulls me into his chest,his cold chest, he holds me tight,I shiver,I feel like he'll squeeze the life out of me,I don't know why I'm so scared of him,his embrace doesn't make me feel safe at all it makes me freeze in fear instead..

Something is not right with him,his mood swings are scary on moment his mad the next his happy...I think he has bipolar, that's way Thando warned me to be careful how I treat him,during the week before we got married,I didn't put much thought into that until recently

Lee:"I love you....I'm sorry for leaving you there alone"

He lifts my chin and kisses me

Lee:"tonight I'll make love to"

Me:"Lee..I'm not ready "

Lee:"come on I've been patient enough"

He picks me up and heads upstairs, he places me on the bed

Me:"Liam please,I want it to be special, can we wait a bit"

Lee:"Khanya..please...I need you,I can't take it anymore,its been really hard resisting you"

Me:"please just a little bit longer"

He frowns

Lee:"are you a virgin?"

I shake my head slowly

Lee:"then don't you think three months is more than enough patience....(gets in between my legs)...please beautiful, I promise you'll love it"

He kisses me before I could say anything

He takes off our clothes ,I wish I could disappear, I'm really not in the mood for this specially today

He stops

Lee:"please don't be freaked out by this okay? "

Oh God he has the virus!

Me: "what?"

He gets up and comes back with a small box

Me:"what's in there?"

Lee:"promise you won't be freaked out?"

Me:"uhm..just tell me"

He takes out cuffs,an armbinder and other bondage equipment, my eyes open wide

Me:"what the hell?"

Lee: "it'll be fun I promise...trust me,I won't hurt you"

..

..

[07/28, 22:59] W: continuation

MNCEDISI

I've been really nervous for this day,that's why I've been avoiding having sex with her cause of my preposterous sexual desires, I was scared that I'd hurt her or she'll find it scary and leave me,so I waited for us to get married and used to

each other, that way she can't leave me, although that doesn't mean I want to hurt her, but I know it won't be easy for her to leave me, I'm no sex addict but when I get turned on I get kinda wild which could be dangerous, I'm not bipolar, I have an obsession love disorder, so they say but I don't believe that, I never force someone to love me, yes I never gave up in getting Lisa but I've never forced her I always gave her a choice, I really do love her, from the very first day I met her. I knew I was arranged to get married but I never knew it would be her, I was shocked when I found out, dad never told me the real reason behind this whole arranged marriage ish.

Me: "you have to trust me Lisa "

Lisa: "Lee....I don't know about this"

Me: "I won't hurt you babe"

She looks at me with fear all over her naked

body

Lisa:"I've never done anything like this before"

Me:"I promise you..you'll like it,you see this is why I've been avoiding sex with you cause I was scared of hurting you"

She remains quiet just looking at me, I give her a warm smile,I get in between her legs and kiss her soft lips,our lips twirl and the kiss deepens I massage her breasts she moans softly she pushes me and pulls out

Lisa: "please don't hurt me"

Me:"I wouldn't dream of doing that "

I Peck her lips I go get the cuffs, I take her hand and kiss it

Me:"we'll start with the easy ones for now since you still new at this"

She makes that confused cute face with her big green eyes all out as she nods unsurely.

I lock the cuff around her wrist against the headboard of the bed which has spaces in between so its easy for me to cuff her, I take her other hand I kiss it softly before cuffing it as well her hands were now locked up and useless,I gently spread her legs, I take a rope,I wrap it tightly round her ankle

"Aah"

Me:"sorry"

I tie it to one of the four upright pieces of wood at each corner of a bed,I also tie her other leg,she tries to move bit she's stuck

Lisa:"Liam,I don't feel comfortable with this"

Me:"I'll loosen the ropes a bit?"

Lisa: "No,I just don't like this whole thing,can we please not do it"

I ignore her I run my hands all over her body as I get ontop of her

Me:"I'll be gentle, I would never hurt you khanya,specially not this way,if I get too rough or you want me to slow down,shout Chicago....if you want me to keep going shout yellow... And if you want me to stop shout Tibet..okay??"

She nods I kiss her my hands slide to her punani I rub it softly, she start breathing heavy,I insert my index finger a little she moans,I keep pushing it in and out,she's now soaking wet,I leave her lips and kiss her neck her soft moans make me more harder by the minute,I insert two finger she gasps,I move them gently, I go deeper and put in my third finger she screams "Tibet"

I stop

Me:"painful? "

She nods I carry on with two finger I start moving them faster she tenses up,her moans getting louder

"Chicago!"

I slow down

Me:"you see....those are your safe words,you just let me do as I please with you,if you don't like it you use your safe words..is that more comfortable with you?"

She nods, gosh she looks so beautiful and innocent which fulfils more to my desires, I go down in her and suck her juices,I play with my tongue on her clits her moans fill up the whole room as I fuck her with my tongue

"Aah yellow"

She likes that.... I get back to her lips we kiss more hungrier, she keeps trying to move her hands,probably wants to touch me

Me:"stay still baby, you going to hurt yourself"

I rub myself on her

Lisa:"wait!"

I carry on and insert my dick inside her

Lisa: "wait....aahh ..Tibet!"

I stop

Me:"you only use the safe words I gave you not any other word cause I won't hear it,okay?"

She nods

Me:"now why did you disturb?"

Lisa: "can we please use a condom,its been a while since I took the shot"

Me:"what's wrong with making babies?"

Lisa: "haaa Lee...I'm not ready for that,I'm still too young, I have school to finish"

Me:"I'll get you the morning pill then"

Lisa: "that's not the only reason for condom"

Me(chuckles): "I'm not infected, I don't have STDs I'm clean"

I thrust in her without warning she screams

which turns into moans as I move in and out...my adrenalin accelerates,the thrill takes over me as I increase the pace,I close my eyes as I enjoy the pleasures this woman is flourishing out to me,I loose myself I go deeper and deeper in her

"Ooohh yeeahh fuck fuck fuck fuck fuck!!!...fuck you so tight!!"

After a while I release inside her

I open my eyes and that's when I notice she's crying, I remove my hand from her neck,she coughs,I didn't realise I was strangling her

Why didn't she say anything?

Me: "Lisa...

Lisa (crying):" untie me please "

I get off her and unlock the cuffs, her wrist were red and they cut her badly,I untie her legs the rope was way tighter than when I put it

Me:"Lisa..why didn't you say the safe words?"

She burst into tears

Lisa: "I did!! I shouted Tibet a hundred times but you didn't stop!! I did!"

Shit,I was afraid this might happen

I go to the bathroom and run her water in the tub

I pick her up and put her inside the bathtub

Me:"I'm so sorry sweetheart, I don't know what got over me,that has never happened to me before "

She was just crying

Lisa:"you strangled me Liam,you almost killed me"

Me:"I'm so sorry babe,I didn't mean to,I really didn't do it on purpose "

Lisa: "you said you wouldn't hurt me.....you did!"

I try to help her bathe

Lisa: "just leave me alone please I can bathe myself"

Me:"I really am sorry khanya"

She ignore me as she attends to her hurt wrists

I walk out,I call dad

"Son"

Me:"hey dad,how do you do?"

"Oh you know same old,just busy,how's you?"

Me:"I'm cool"

"You don't sound cool...how's my daughter in law"

Me(sighs):"she's okay I guess"

"Oh no...did you just have sex with her?"

Me:"yeah"

"And you went all crazy on her?"

Me:"yeah"

"How many times do I have to tell you..you need to stop with you fifty shades of grey shit...did you hurt her?"

Me:"yeah she's hurt,I thought I could control it"

"You never listen do you,you better do all you can to make her feel better and trust you again, cause you can't afford to loose that one"

Me:"if she leaves you can always arrange another girl?"

"NO! That Girl is very important! You loose her you loose your life,you hear me?"

Me:"why? Why is she so important, she not even from a rich family "

"You wouldn't understand, you just control your emotions, don't scare her off"

Me:"But dad I'm in love with her....you know what happened the last time I was in love"

"Go for therapy try to control yourself"

Me:"do you have anything on...uhm the O'Brien son?"

"I've been trying to find him searched left right and centre,it's like he disappeared from the face of earth,nowhere to be found"

Me:"you need to find him dad,and get rid of him for good,Lisa is still crazy in love with him,do you know how many times she's called me..(whispers)..Quinton?... I totally loose it when she does that and it takes a whole lot in me not to hurt her"

"Keep it that way,just do everything you can to keep her happy,shower her with gifts and lots of money girls love money,travel the world,distract her"

Me:"that's a good idea.. Travel the world,shell definitely love that"

"Oh my son..I feel sorry that you actually love

this girl"

Me:"why?"

"Nothing... I wish you weren't this attached,you never know in this cruel world if something were to happen to her...."

Me:"don't say that. Nothing will happen to her..I'll protect her..no one will touch her"

" of cause....I have business to get back to"

Me:"yeah sure.....bye"

I go back to the room I find her fast asleep I sit at the edge of the bed and look at her....she deserves better....and I have to be that better..I brush her hair

Me:"No one will take you away from me now beautiful... You are mine,you belong to me,it wouldn't be such a bad idea if we just start a family of our own right away...I mean what are we waiting for?..

I notice a pink book under her pillow,that's showing a bit, I slip it out it says "HAPPY 18th BIRTHDAY BUB" I open it and its a whole lotta pictures of her and that niggar Quinton, my blood boils,I take it and throw it in the bin,I take the bin outside and a match I lit it up in fire...

Me:"Its over between you and her Buddy, She's my girl now,Mine!! No one will take her away from me...She'll learn to love me and me alone just give her some time...You'll see,she'll love me...she has to!"

Range fills me up,I want his blood,I want to kill him with my own bare hand,LISAKHANYA IS MINE!

....

[07/28, 23:00] W: Insert 29

LISA

I open my heavy eyes,all the pain from last night comes back,my body is sore as hell,I think he ripped my punani apart,its still burning. I reach my hand under the pillow,I get up and remove the pillow,still nothing, I swear I placed it here last night, I force my weak painful body up as I take off the bed sheets and everything, I lift the mattress up but its not there,I open my

purse,nothing!

Me:"Oh my God! Where did I put it?"

I limp all over the room looking for it,I feel tears threaten,ohh I can't find it,I feel my heart ache..I was looking at it just yesterday,where could it be!!

I say a short prayer

Me:"Dear God please help me find it..Amen"

I turn the room upside down

"Looking for something?"

I startle,I turn slowly to look at him,he's leaning on the door frame with a questioning look on his face

Me:"uhm...I misplaced something "

Lee:"what is it...I can help you look for it?"

Me:"No it fine its not that important anyway"

Lee:"are you sure? You turned the whole room

upside down.. It must be important "

Me:"its just a book...I'll look for it later,let me go get ready",

Lee:"oh..I'll tell you if I see a book lying around somewhere then"

Me(fake smiles):"Thanks"

Lee:"I don't think you should go to campus today....you still in pain"

Me:"No its fine..I don't wanna entertain it,the more I ignore it the quicker it'll heal"

He comes towards me I move back a little till he's right in front of me

Lee:"Lisa, please you have to forgive me,I got lost in the moment,I never meant to hurt you"

Me:"but you did ..,you raped me"

A tear drops from his eye as he cups my face

Lee:"its not like that Lisa....

Me(interrupts): No Mncedisi, you hurt me,I
shouted for you to stop I used the safe
words,instead you strangled me!! You wanted
to kill me!! You Crazy!! "

I turn and attempt to walk away but he pulls me
roughly towards him

He's crying but he is filled with anger

Lee(calmly): "I'm not crazy.... Don't you ever call
me crazy,do you hear me?"

He is holding my arm tight hurting it

Me:"you hurting me"

Lee:"Do we understand each other!?"

He shouts, startling me

I'm afraid to use my words so I nod
continuously

He let go of me like he just gained back his
senses that he was hurting me just like last
night

Lee:"you have to understand khanya....I love you so much,I don't want to loose you"

Me:"I understand, can I please go bath now?"

He sighs

Lee:"come here first"

He pulls me closer and hugs me tight,fear rises as I say a silent prayer for him not to squeeze all my insides out,he let's go and kisses my lips,I feel the urge to puke...I hate him,he disgusts me, I pull out

Me:"we have to buy those after pills,remember?"

"

Lee:"of cause don't worry I'll get them"

Me:"okay"

I go freshen up,I tried hurrying up but my hands are too weak,I wonder if I'll be able to write,those cuffs really cut me badly when I tried to break free as he was strangling me.

I wish I could call Quinton and tell him, but he's gone and even if he was around I'm sure he hates me anyway after the harsh way I pushed him away, he's done so much for me and he was willing to do way more, but I still think I made the right choice, Quinton deserves better than me, he doesn't need all this drama in his life when he can have way better, Enhle was right I am degrading him I'm holding him back, look now, I've dragged his life into so much danger, now he has to live on the run, all because of my stupid love!! Selfish love!! I hate myself maybe I deserve Liam, we both the same, we selfish and evil and we hurt other people's feelings, I guess we have something in common.

I'm now picking out an outfit, I wore denim long navy jeans, it was a hustle trying to put them on, I had to bandage my ankles, I wore my black long sleeve polo neck, combed my hair and let it

loose.

I notice the balcony door is open so I close it, but I spot the bin, why is it here?

I find him chilled at the lounge

Me: "you burnt it?"

He looks up at me

Lee (ignoring the question): "finally, let's get going"

Me: "how could you burn my gift like that?"

He went out the door and was ready to close

Lee: "you coming? "

I sigh defeated and head out, we drive to campus in silence

Lee: "look babe I'm sorry about your album, but I figured since you cut him off your life you should cut him off completely, you don't need his pictures"

Me:"there was only a few of pictures with him, couldn't you burn those instead of the whole thing? "

Lee:"that whole book will remind you of him, cause I'm sure he took most of those pictures..... Babe, I don't want anything that connects you to that boy again, you need to forget about him, he clearly has forgotten about you, wherever he is I'm sure he's moved on...its time you do the same"

Me:"you had no right Mncedisi, you had no right to burn my gift without telling me, that's pure evil what you did there, I'll never forgive you for that!"

Lee:"please don't raise your voice at me sweetheart, I'm sorry, that was wrong of me, I'll try to tone down the jealousy a bit, okay?"

I ignore him and look out the window

Lee:"let me make it up to you, tonight, I'll take

you wherever you want to go,you don't have to cook"

Me:"its fine Mncedisi,whats done is done,you don't have to make up for anything "

The car stops,we finally in campus

Lee:"I want to...how many classes do you have today?"

Me:"four"

Lee:"okay,enjoy your day"

Me:"oh no,we forgot to pass the pharmacy "

Lee:"shit...I'll go back,I'll text you when I get back okay"

Me:"okay,please try to hurry,I was supposed to take it first thing in the morning "

Lee:"I've heard its still effective before 72 hours pass"

Me:"but the sooner I take it the more likely it

works"

Lee:"why you so afraid of falling pregnant? I mean we married now, isn't what a family is what comes next?"

Me:"Yes, but not now"

Lee:"okay"

He brings his head closer, I guess this is the part we share a kiss, I lean forward and peck him, then head out and make my way to class.. I find Yonela waiting for me

Yonela:"finally you early"

Me:"mxm, whatever "

Yonela:"Yoh, what's with the dark coloured clothes?"

Me:"just having a dark day"

Yonela:"wow, the sun is so bright and about, yet you so covered "

Me:"let's just go to class"

Yonela: "I didn't get my hug"

We share a nice warm hug,she squeezes me as her hands were around my neck

"Ah ouch"

I groan she let's go and looks at me

Yonela: "I didn't even squeeze you much"

Me:"argh I think its the way I slept, my neck is killing me"

Yonela: "aaw...let me massage you"

"No!"

I half shout as I hit her hands off me

Yonela: "yoh,sorry for trying to help"

I fake a laugh

Me:"let's just get to class already "

We went from class to class Mncedisi didn't

show up with the pills,I'm getting worried, I can go buy them but what if its too late,the last thing I want is to get pregnant for that jerk, as the day went by the temperatures rose the sun was blazing hot and I was feeling weak,hot and stressed

Yonela: "Yoh ayi girl uyakwaz shame,ilanga ligqatsa uboboyi apha, wena unxibe into ezishushu kanje? Uright upstairs perhaps?"
(The sun is blazing hot out here and here you are dressed all warm..are you okay upstairs perhaps?)

Me:"I feel cold,probably getting the flue"

She looks at me for a while

Yonela:"don't lie,you even sweating, you feeling hot,you just tell me the truth now"

The truth? Oh if I tell you the truth it'll probably be the last words you ever hear from me

Me:"okay you caught me.....I can't take it off

cause I'm not wearing any vest underneath "

Yonela:"wow lilly you so careless.."

I laugh

Me:"yeah...careless me,right"

I hit my forehead

He picks me up

Lee:"hey beautiful "

He kisses my cheek,I almost wipe it

Me:"hey"

He sighs

Lee:"come on..how long will you stay mad at me?"

Me:"you didn't come with the pills?"

Lee:"shit...when I got there it was still early they weren't open yet"

Me:"well..do you have them now?"

Lee:"yeah...you'll take them when we get..."

Me:"No I'll take them now"

I stretch my hand towards him he just looks at it takes it and kisses it

Lee:"these hands will hold our beautiful kids some day "

Me:"yeah some day....but not any time soon..now,the pills please?"

Lee:"okay,I forgot to buy them...we can go get them now"

Me:"Dammit Mncedisi! I've been reminding you the whole morning,why are you doing this! Its not that I don't want to bare children for you but not now"

Lee:"what are we waiting for Lisa?"

I can't believe he just asked me that?

Me:"I want to finish my degree,get job,become something I've always wanted to become,make

money, buy my mother a big house and move her to a better environment, buy her a car, travel the world... then maybe after all that, then we can start thinking about kids"

Lee: "but I can do all that for you, you don't even have to stress yourself with work, I'll buy your mother her dream home and car, I'll buy us a big house and as many cars as you want, you can still travel the world, I'll even buy you your very own private jet... there's nothing I wouldn't do for you and my children "

I look at him for the longest time.. he must be out his BDSM mind!

Me: "yeah but I want to also make my own money, and it's not only about the money I want to be a lawyer, I want to experience that "

Lee: "but you can do that after we at least have one child, then you can go back to school and have a career... cause if we try while you

working you'll be too busy and tired to even try to make babies"

That's it I give up

Me:"its only been two months and already we arguing about having kids? Ayi come on Liam give me a break!"

He looks away from me angrily

Lee:"why can't you just listen to me,like before we got married, you were such a good girl,you listened to everything I told you"

I wish I didn't

Me:"let's go get these pills now and never have this argument again,you can't force me to get pregnant "

Lee:"oh can't I? "

I look at him in total shock, what did he just say

He chuckles

Lee:"I'm kidding geez....look babe,I understand, its too soon for babies,I'll wait for you until you ready"

I sigh, that was not funny!

Me:"thank you"

Lee:"it's just I tend to get too excited ,when I want something,I want it immediately.... But if you say you not ready its okay"

Me:"I'm glad you understand "

He kisses my hand and we drive off we make a stop at the pharmacy and instead I buy the emergency pill,I could see that he is disappointed, he'll survive. He took me to a nice restaurant and we enjoyed a nice meal,he was just being himself, the cool,sweet and cute guy I liked from the beginning,I wonder what went wrong? Do all men change once they get married? Or is he taking advantage cause he knows I can't divorce him even if I tried because

of the stupid contract!

He is opening doors for me and being all nice...we now at the apartment

Lee:"I think we should move, don't you think?"

Me:"I like it here,but I guess we could move to a proper house"

Lee:"not that I don't have the money but I'm sick and tired of paying for a place to stay"

Me:"I get you"

He throws himself on the couch

Lee:"so tired "

I pass him when he grabs me before I can go far,he pulls me a bit rough and I fall on top of him,we laugh

Lee:"watch where you going Khanya"

He opens his legs for me to lay between them,we look at each other for a while,he pulls

me in for a kiss,we kiss for a while,I pull out as last nights events come back

Me:"I I need to go freshen up"

He tightens his grip

Lee:"but I like this position, can you feel my hard on?"

He smirks,I laugh

Me:"Liam....I'm tired"

He kisses me then pulls out

Lee:"I won't hurt you this time"

Me:"No,we never doing that again, if you wanna have sex,we'll do it like normal people"

He sighs

Lee:"okay I won't tie you up this time..."

Me:"No weird things"

He ignores me picks me up and we head to the room,he's kiss is getting hungrier and his touch

rougher, I try to pull out but he doesn't allow me,
I pull my face away harder

Me:"Liam,please,not like this"

Lee: "I'll be gentle"

He throws me on the bed and roughly takes off
my clothes, I try to get up but he pushes me
back

Lee:"Lisa! Please don't make me
angry!...(calmly)..just be a good little girl and be
submissive..okay?"

I shake my head

Me:"please, I beg you,please don't force
me...please honey"

Lee:"I don't have to force you if you just obey
me"

He stripped me naked and himself

Tears fall from my eyes

He goes to take his equipment, I get up and try to run out the room but I fail,he picks me up and throws me back on the bed,I start crying and pleading

Me:"please, please don't do this....please baby,don't you love me?"

Lee:"I love you babe, don't you love me?"

Me:"I do"

Lee:"you do what?"

Me: "I do love you"

Lee:"then let me make love to you"

Me:"okay okay,but please can we not....

Lee:"if you love me we'll do it my way"

Me:"NO!! Stay Away from me! Help!!"

He laughs next thing I know my cheek is heated up,he just gave me a hot slap, I burst into a loud cry

Lee:"Shut Up! Why are you making things difficult for yourself?! You my wife, when I want pussy I should get pussy ...understood!?"

Me(crying): "please...please..please...don't do this"

Lee: "you talk too much,that's your problem,I have a solution"

He takes out his head harness,he put it on my head it has a ball gag he opens my mouth and shoves the ball in my mouth

Lee: "this will shut you up"

He locks the harness, I try to remove it but its locked I can't talk cause of the big ball in my mouth

"Mmmh mmmhhhh!!!!"

I try to scream, the harness is hurting my face he tied it too tight

He takes out a body strap,he gets on top of me and starts wrapping it around my whole body from neck down to legs

keeping my body straight as a ruler,he ties my hands at my back,I can't move any part of my body except my knees which can part.

Lee:"this would be really fun if you could've just participated ...I mean I took you out to a nice dinner,I was being a gentleman but you can't do this one thing for me?...that's a bit unfair.. Don't you think?"

All I can do now is cry, I'm stuck with the devil himself, I wish he could kill me once he's done with me,I don't wanna continue living like this,I hate my father,I hate my grandma for allowing my father to agree to all this,I hate myself!

He flips me around and bangs my dog style pulling my hair roughly

I cry as loud as I can as I feel all kinds of pain

throughout my entire body

Its been hours, the amount of pain I felt

I feel like my soul has been crushed, it has left
my body

I stopped crying I was now numb

"Aaahh yeah!"

He releases once again

then collapses on me while in between my legs

[07/28, 23:00] W: Insert 30

LISA

TWO MONTHS LATER

- .
- .
- .

Never in my life have I thought I'd experience abuse, I grew up in a loving warm family, my family loved me unconditionally although we were poor, there's nothing they wouldn't do for me I was a happy soul, then there was my best friend Yonela who was one of the best friends a girl can ask for, later on I met this handsome prince charming who was my Knight and shining armor, the only thing he's ever shown me was love, kindness and protection, he was

even willing to die for me he made me happy, didn't shower me with money or take me to expensive restaurants but he gave me his heart which was worth more, where are all these people now? I have no one I was thrown in the lion's den... I have given up in trying to get myself out of this marriage, it's useless even if I do find evidence I can't afford a lawyer, I've been staying in doors as much as possible because of my messed up body.. I've become his sex slave, the worst part is that it's like he was possessed cause when he's in his right mind, he becomes this loving caring gentleman, he goes out of his way to apologize, like today he's starting therapy, but this doesn't make up for anything cause I know tonight he'll become the possessed monster again.

It's been six months now, and still no sign of Quinton, I'm really worried about him, where is he? Is he dead? Is he alive? if he is, where is he

staying? Is he safe? What does he eat? Where does he sleep? Is he comfortable? Is he happy? What is he doing? With who? I miss him I need him I need his comforting words his warm and safe embrace,I miss his fiction stories, his funny self,I even miss his big Ego.

.....

Me:"let's run away...we'll go far far away and start a new life there"

Quinton: "what about school?"

Me:"I'll quit and get a job,lots of people can make a living without education, at least I got matric"

he just smiles looking at me

Me:"I know I'm being naive.. but I just wish to get away from all of this"

Quinton: "I love you bub"

Me:"I love you more"

He presses his warm soft lips on mine but not kissing me,we stay like that for some time,its like he was pouring his heart out to me without Using words just his heart beat and breathing said it all

.....

Me:"what I'm saying is,stick to prayer Quinton I know you not a strong believer but please keep in faith, God is the answer,tell you what,everyday when we wake up and before we sleep we will pray together for your mother's health for her to be healed...okay?"

He smiles and wipes my tears

Quinton: "and also for your grandmother too,if you believe God can heal my mom then I believe he can heal your grandmother too"

.....

Quinton: "firstly.. I think I should say thank you"

I raise my brows amused

Me:"for?"

Quinton: "for trusting me and giving me your virginity"

.....

Me:"so? Will you do it? "

Quinton: "what is it first?"

Me:"no !matter what it is,you have to do it cause you promised me....remember? Or should I go take my phone?"

Quinton : "okay fine...just spit it out already "

I sigh

Me:"will you be my boyfriend? And will you marry me?"

His eyes pop out

Quinton: "Say what?"

.....

"Heey whats wrong babe?"

I startle at the sound of his voice,bringing me back to earth

Me(chuckles): "oh nothing, why would anything be wrong?"

Lee:"cause you crying "

I quickly wipe my tears away

Me:"I didn't realise,just have a lot on my mind"

Lee:"like what?"

I sniff

Me:"I I just miss grams so much"

Lee:"aaw my baby.. I know how it hurts to loose someone you love",

He pulls me to his embrace hurting my fresh bruises

Me:"hlli ouch!"

He let's go

Lee:"I'm so sorry...oh,this is all my doing "

He caresses my purple neck

Me:"ouch"

He stops he buries his face in his hands

Lee:"I'm so messed up,how could I do this to you...I love you so much yet I'm hurting you so much,what kind of monster am I ? Please forgive me Lisa"

Don't let him fool you,this is the same person who's been apologising everyday yet at night he rapes you like nobody's business

Me:"its okay Liam, at least you going for therapy today,maybe it'll help you... And I'll be right here,supporting you, every step of the way"

He looks at me with teary eyes

Lee:"really? "

I nod

Lee:"you so kind khanya,thank you for not giving up on me"

I hate how he makes it sound like I have a choice, even if I report this guy he won't go to jail he'll just go to a mental house,stay a few months cause he's so damn good in pretending as if nothing is wrong with him,then he'll be back to finish me off,and the law will not help me with divorce since it was agreed through the law that I belong to them,so either way I'm stuck.. He says once I'm done with this year I'm not going back to study next year,so my dreams of becoming a lawyer and fighting for justice are all gone!

Me:"well I am your wife and its my duty to stick beside you in sickness and in health...till..till death...do us part"

He smile and cups my face we look deep into each other's eyes,right now it like the monster that comes out at night doesn't exist,his eyes

are full of love,like he'd do anything for me...he's eyes...man! They get me every time

Lee:"you an angel, I don't know what I'd be without you"

He brushes his lips on mine before kissing me, I pull out after a while

Lee:"its a beautiful day today,you should go out"

What did he just say!?! He never allows me to go out

Me:"what?"

Lee:"I know I've been strict about you being outdoors but you've been such a good girl lately,you have to get a reward for that "

Well I don't fight him at night anymore, I even get the equipment myself, I try to participate so that he let's me use the safe words but sometimes he doesn't listen to them,specially if he's in a bad mood like last night. I still wonder

how am I still breathing?

Me:"whoa! Really? Oh thank you"

I really don't want to go out, but if I refuse his rewards, he might even stop me from going to school completely

Lee:"you deserve it,I'll be going to my first appointment, just make sure you cover yourself up,and wear those sunglasses I bought you,your eye is still a bit messed up,try to put more make up okay"

I nod

Me:"yeah I will"

He kisses my cheek then gets up

Lee:"I'll transfer you the money you'll need...here's some cash for the uber"

He gives me R500 too much but I don't complain

Lee:"which reminds me,I should get you the k53

so you can start studying for your learners,you might be getting a car soon"

I flash a big smile

Me:"okay!"

He winks at me the heads out

I breath out as if I've been holding my breathe..I get up and limp to the bathroom, I strip naked and look at myself on the mirror, my neck is the worst,it's even purple,I don't even wanna mention my tummy,arms,chest and legs,they have strap dark lines....he doesn't do much to my face,just last night he was really mad, I kinda raised my voice at him,I don't know what I was thinking, I guess I was sick and tired,he punched me and left me with a blue eye and swollen lip, but I put some ice so its not swollen anymore. I tie my hair up,wipe my tears then head inside the shower,I take my own sweet time as I wash my sore self, I don't even want to

look at my pussy,just the thought makes me wanna puke,I always spend most of my time scrubbing it.

After dressing my self up and covering every part,I apply some make up,it doesn't completely cover the blue eye though, I also powder my neck,its the most painful part. I wrap a scarf around it let my long hair loose and put on the shades and applied Some lipstick,then head out, the uber takes me to the mall.

Mr Johnson has been asking me weird questions about my father, like where did he work,as if he doesn't know,and what precious gift has he given me... I think he knows about the diamonds but I'm not about to slip that out. The worst part is I think I have a stalker and he knows about the diamonds, he wants them,he started calling me from two days ago,I'm really scared I don't know what to do,I can't tell the police they'll just ask me about the diamonds

and more people will know about them,I can't tell Mncedisi cause I'm not sure whether his family is after them or not,and if I get rid of them I'll be killed..so that's another reason I should be indoors right now

He drops me at the mall I pay then make my way in..

I keep looking behind me,I feel like there's people watching me,people must think I'm crazy,I look like some celebrity hiding herself from paparazzi, or like some crazy stalker,with my dark clothes and scarfs and Shades in this warm weather.

I make my way in Pick n Pay

I shop around, buying anything that looks good

My phone vibrates,I take it out from my pocket

Its a notification that R7000 has been transferred into my account.. And a message from an unknown number I open it and see the

shock of my life

"I'm watching you, Pick n Pay not very fancy for a beautiful lady like you.... Tell me where they are and you might get home safely"

I panick as I look around to see who might be looking at me, no one is even paying attention to me, I think I'm gonna shit my pants the way I'm freaking out! I leave the trolley and make my way out, I wonder around the mall, scared to go back home

I look up and my eyes meet the biggest shock of my life, they walk closer they both can't see me... He looks perfectly fine, and healthy

Me(whispers): "Quinton?"

They get even closer, his eyes lift up and they meet mine, he moves them away and carries on walking past me as if he didn't recognise me?

He's walking with Brandon

When did he get back?

Did he not recognise me?

Maybe its because of all the covering I've done..but for a second there when he looked at me,its like he knew it was me...am I hallucinating?

I brush it off as soon as they take a turn and disappear,I carry on with my way to..I don't know where..that can't be him,he would've told me when he's back,After hours,I call an uber to take me home,I blend in with a bunch of guys I don't know as I make my way out,and I spot the uber immediately I make a run to it,I tell him to drop me off at Quinton's apartment.

I knock no one opens,I knock again,the door opens and a very pregnant ready to pop, young beautiful lady opens

Her:"hey,can I help you?"

.

.

to be continued

[07/28, 23:00] W: Continuation

LISA

My heart breaks into a million pieces as my eyes are stuck starring at her big tummy which can burst anytime,tell me I'm having one of my nightmares please! I think I'm gonna have a heart attack

"Hello? Are you okay?"

I look up at her,she's a beauty, nice smooth caramel skin,big blue amber eyes and palmy small lips

Her:"you don't look good,please come in"

She makes way for me I get inside,I look around and everything has changed,it's not the way it used to be,its more fancy,the fridge is two doors now, she leads me to the sitting room and makes me sit in the beautiful couches,not the small uncomfortable ones that we had, there's not even one thing that used to be here,everything has completely changed.

Her:"so would you like something to drink?"

Oh my gosh she's so kind,I'm a total stranger yet she's offering me something to drink? No wonder Quinton knocked her up

I nod

Me:"yes please,a cold glass of water will do"

She gives me a warm smile and walks into the kitchen, then walks back

Her:"there you go"

I take a sip more like gulp down the water in one go,we sit on silence for a bit

Her:"so can I help you? "

Me:"Yes..uhm my name is Lisa"

Her:"oh my name is Isabelle, but you can call me bella"

I notice a ring on her finger and I feel like breaking down that instant

Me:"you..you married?"

She smiles

Bella:"not yet,we engaged"

Its like she just stabbed me straight in the heart

Me:"oh...I'm actually here to see your fiancé "

She looks at me perplexed

Bella:"Oh? How to you know him?"

We used to be madly in love..but I'm not about to say that

Me:"he's an old friend,used to be my roommate "

Bella:"oh? Lloyd has never mentioned anything about having a female roommate in the past"

Me:"uhm Lloyd? "

Bella:"yeah my fiancé "

Okay I'm confused

Me:"your fiancé's name is Lloyd? "

Bella:"yes"

Me:"Oh so where's Quinton? "

We look at each other perplexed

Bella: "Quinton?"

Maybe he changed his name cause of the people after him

Me:"yeah,light skinned dude,tall not too tall,pink lips,colourful eyes,short curly hair,doesn't smile alot,he stays here?"

She smiles and raises her brows

Bella: "ooohh..you mean the guy that used to stay here?"

Me:"used to?"

Bella:"yeah,he sold this house to us,we just moved in here two weeks ago"

I sigh in relief

Me:"oh..thank goodness"

She chuckles

Bella: "thank goodness you weren't looking for my love"

We burst into laughter

Me:"do you know where he moved to?"

Bella: "I'm not sure,but I know he moved to Westcliff, in the richer suburbs in Sandton, he bought a big house, damn the guy must be loaded, I mean to live in places like that starts from somewhere in the R11.5 millions"

Me:"Wow...uhm,do you know which street he lives in?"

She thinks for a while

Bella:"I'll be right back"

She stands up struggling a bit and disappears to the room then comes back with a paper and pen

She sits down and writes the name of the street and address

Bella: "lucky for you he told us where he stays,just so if we experience any problems with the house we know where he lives and how to contact him..very kind and generous soul he is"

He is indeed she also wrote his cell number then hands me the paper

Me:"thank you very much,this means so much to me"

Bella: "you very welcome, I don't mean to be nosey,but do you and your roommate share more than just being roommates?"

I laugh a little

Me:" yeah..we shared a whole lot more"

Bella:"and was love one of them?"

Me:"love was most of them"

She smiles

Bella: "I'm guessing its been a while since y'all talked and you want him back?"

Me: "is it that obvious? "

She laughs

Bella: "well in that case.. Go get your man girl!"

I burst into laughter but stops as I feel my body aching

Bella: "are you okay?"

Me: "yeah I'm fine"

Bella: "I'm no fashion expert but, coat? Scarf? Shades?..are you sure you okay?"

Me: "I'm fine Bella..thanks for the help,let me get going "

She looks at me with pity

Bella: "look I'm a Psychiatrist, I know that doesn't give me the right to judge but please if

you need someone to talk to,please contact me"

She grabs the paper in my hand and writes her number on it

Bella: "when you decide you ready to talk to someone"

She shakes he head as if she's just eaten something sour

Bella: "you in great danger,there's a big storm coming your way and it doesn't look like you'll make it"

What the hell is going on? How did she? Who is this person?

Me:"excuse me?"

Bella: "I'm sorry I didn't mean to scare you,but if you don't convince your roommate to help you,you not going to make it through the storm"

Me:"what are you?"

Bella: "I'm gifted..look alot of danger is coming your way,and I see blood in your hands"

Me:"what are you saying? Am I going to kill someone "

Bella: "my visions can sometimes change,but I see blood in your hands,it won't be easy for you to convince your roommate to help you,his heart is still shattered by the decisions you made,but if he loves you he'll forgive you"

Me:"oh..."

She smiles

Bella:"go on now,hurry"

Me:"thank you"

I walk towards the door

Bella: "Lisa"

I look back

Bella: "be careful"

I smile and nod

Oh dear God this is a mess, will my life get any more complicated

I asked the uber to take me to the address this woman gave me

We parked in front of a very big house

I asked the driver to wait until I'm inside he agreed

I press the buzzer and I hear his voice I almost faint

"Hello?"

My knees become weak and my heartbeat is ready to pop out, I don't know whether it's fear or excitement, I think a bit of both

Me: "h h hey its me"

It goes quiet I hear him sigh and drops the call, after a few long minutes I give up, he hasn't opened the gate, I guess he doesn't wanna see

me,I don't blame him,a tear drops from my eye,Before turning my back and walking back towards the car as I open the door,I hear the gate open,I turn and walk back inside,I can't help but look around, its so beautiful, almost better than his home,and I thought it doesn't get better than that.

I finally get to the door,I knock, and knock again but he doesn't open

He finally opens after a while

Our eyes lock he looks at me up and down scanning me,my tummy makes bubbly sounds as I feel the butterflies,I feel a tingle and itch coming from down there, whoa its been a while since that's happened, I feel like jumping on him so I can feel his strong arms around me,he's shirtless only has a towel wrapped round his waist,showing off his tan masculine torso and V line with nicely stacked packs,its like he's gotten buffer,he's definitely been working out

Quinton: "can I help you?"

Ouch that hit home

Me:"may I come in?"

He looks at me for a while then makes way for me, oh my word I feel like I have entered royalty, he leads me to the lounge

I sit down looking around

Quinton: "give me a few,I have to get dressed"

Please do! Before I loose my senses

Me:"of cause "

He walks up stairs

Wow he disappears then comes back richer than bill gates, I know I should stay away from him,I've already cause him a lot of pain and great danger, but I need some closure,where was he and what has he been doing, did he get shot that day of the wedding,what happened that day?

He comes back dressed in shorts and a light tank top still exposing his body, is he doing this on purpose? Does he have to look this handsome?

He sits down on a couch opposite me, he looks at me, it's as if that care and love he had has gone, like he doesn't even recognise me

Quinton: "can I help you?"

I clear my throat and swallow the big lump

Me: "it's me"

He raises his brows as if he'll say "and then?"

Me: "Lisakhanya Mthethwa from Mthatha... I was once your roommate and best friend? "

He raises his one brow

Quinton: "I know who you are"

I sigh in relief holding my chest

For a second there I thought he lost his memory

Me:"oh Quinton please don't scare me like that"

He looks at me with a straight face as if he'll say "get to the point already!"

Me:"uhm how are you? "

Quinton: "I'm good"

I can see that

Me:"so..when did you get back?"

Quinton: "from?"

Oh I don't know! The dead?

Me:"wherever you were for the past six months"

Quinton: "I don't see how that concerns you?"

My mouth opens and closes again totally hurt by his words

Me:"uhm...I see you sold our apartment "

Quinton: "you mean my apartment"

Ouch he's being pure cold, I guess I deserve

that

Me:"I missed you"

Quinton: "why are you here?"

Me:"I I I don't know.. I guess I thought I was imagining things when I saw you at the mall earlier,and I wanted to make sure I wasn't imagining "

Quinton: "well..you weren't...(sighs)..look there's somewhere I need to be,if you don't mind"

Me(whispers): "Quinton... Please,don't be like this..I'm really sorry about what happened that day of the wedding, I didn't know they were going to try shoot you"

He looks at me chuckles then shakes his head

Quinton:"is that what you sorry about? "

Me;"and a lot more Quinton....I'm sorry for not believing in you when you said you'd protect me,when you said you wouldn't give up on

me,I'm sorry for pushing you away,for hurting your feelings, for making you cry,for almost getting you killed,most of all I'm sorry you had to save my life from the very first day you met me,for helping me and taking me in and bringing me close to your heart,not knowing that on that day you were welcoming a curse,great danger towards you,not knowing how toxic and complicated I'd make your life....I'm so sorry Quinton, I'm sorry I ever met you"

I feel warm liquid on my cheeks I wipe them then fix my shades

He looks at me carefully with hurt written all over his face

Quinton: "you were no curse, it was never toxic or complicated, I wanted to protect you from danger you don't have to be sorry about that,its what I do for people I love...but you hurt me Lisa,a lot of people have hurt me in my life but

no one has ever hurt me the way you hurt me,there's nothing I didn't do to show you how much you mean to me,I even prayed to God to bring you back to me,I seeked for advice, I did everything I could I put in all my efforts... But what did you do?you shoved it right back at my face,then spitted on it,that's what you did"

My heart breaks into a million pieces

I got down on my knees

Me(poignantly):"please forgive me Quinton... You don't have to come back to protect me or love me anymore, just please forgive me"

He wipe his nose looks down and presses his eyes with his fingers as if he's holding back tears he shakes his head then looks back at me,tears escape his eyes

Quinton: "I forgive you Lisa,I've long forgiven you....its sad we can't be together anymore.."

Me:"you deserve better Q...we were not

destined"

Quinton (whispers): "don't say it like that"

Me: "its true, I'm evil, I thought I was protecting you...actually no, I was protecting you.. And breaking your heart was the only way...they were going to kill you Quinton, I heard them talking and they were planning on killing, because of me, so I had to break up with you so that they leave you alone..but they didn't, now I felt like I broke your heart for nothing "

Quinton: "Dammit Lisakhanya!! Have I ever asked for your protection!? There's a whole lotta people who've been after me way long before you came into my life, a whole lotta people out there want my blood, but look at me I'm still here, I can protect myself..I was your man, you should've left the protecting to me! I knew they wanted me dead! They not the first dangerous people to want me gone...what part of DIE FOR YOU didn't you understand!!"

I look at his fierce face in total shock,my heart beats in agony against my rib cage...after a short while of silence I burst into the loudest cry ever and let it all out while holding my mouth hurt by the stupid choices I made

He doesn't comfort me instead he sits there watching me cry as tears are rolling down his face yet not making a single sound

Me(crying): "I'mI'm so sorry...I never meant to hurt you..I'm so so so sorry!!!"

Quinton: "calm down Lisa"

I try to calm myself down ,the shades are starting to feel uncomfortable with all these tears, I go back to the couch and sit

I have hiccups

Quinton: "I'll go get you a glass of water"

He disappears to the kitchen, I take off the shades and wipe my tears properly, I've put him

through so much, I should just keep the whole abuse thing to myself as I die a slow painful death,I put them back on

He comes back and gives me water I stretch my hand to take it

Me:"thank you"

He holds the glass tight as our hands touch,There goes the shivers down my spine I look up at him and his looking at my hand I look down at my hand and notice the bruises.. Shit! I forgot the gloves!

I let go of the glass quickly and pull down my sleeves

Quinton: "what was that?"

I can't read his facial expression whether his angry or concerned

Me(answers quickly): "Nothing!"

Quinton: "that wasn't nothing.. Let me see"

Me:"No..its nothing really... I should get going "

I stand up he block me and grabs my hand,he lofts up the sleeve and gasps

He takes my other hand and looks at it

Quinton: "what the hell is this?"

I remove my hands from him

Me:"its nothing much Quinton,its just a minor incident at the gym a few weeks ago"

That wasn't a good one,judging by the way he's looking at me

Quinton: "gym? Since when do you go to gym?"

Me:"since a few months back"

Quinton: "so what was this minor incident?"

Me:"uhm I I was..I was lifting.. And and I....

Quinton: "Don't fucken lie to me!!!"

He snaps I gasp repeatedly as he startled me

Looking at me with so much anger holding my hand tight and hurting it

Me(breaking voice):"you..y you hurting me"

His face changes to sorrow as he let's go

Quinton: "take off the shades"

I shake my head, he'll freak,the eye is still fresh

Quinton (calmly): "take them off Lisakhanya"

Me:"No..I have to get going, its getting late...I'll get into...."

I trail off as I realise what I was about to say

Quinton: "get into what? Trouble? Is that what you were going to say,you'll get into trouble?"

Me:"into a massive traffic, you know traffic in Jo'burg at this hour"

I chuckle

Quinton: "take off the shades"

Me:I really need to get...

Quinton (shouts):"DON'T MAKE ME REPEAT MYSELF DAMMIT!"

for a moment there Mncedisi's face showed up in him as he shouted at me,I broke down

I take them off slowly, exposing my swollen blue eye and cheek bone, he's mouth trembles, he moves closer to me,he tilts his head to the side as he looks at my blue eye with so much concern and hurt,he caresses my cheek

Quinton: "he did this to you?"

I don't answer him I can't stop crying

He takes off my scarf slowly, he drops it on the floor,his eyes pop out as tears drip from his eyes

Quinton (whispers): "oh my God...how could he do this?"

He gently touches my neck I flinch

Me:"ah!"

Quinton: "sorry"

He looks at me all over my face

Quinton: "where else did he hurt you?"

He takes off my coat,I let him, he gently takes off the poloneck Jersey, he takes off my vest and its like he's seen a ghost as he looks at my body, its like I can feel the hurt he's feeling right now,its like he can feel my pain

He slips down my sweatpants, I take off my shoes using my feet, he looks at my naked body in dismay

Quinton: "what did he do to my body?"

He moves even closer wraps his arms around me and unties my bra then drops it on the floor...I feel so embarrassed and ashamed my body looks miserable with all the dark stripes of the strap

Quinton: "why didn't you tell me"

Me:"he said I should never contact you,if I do he will know and trace you then take you out....I couldn't let that happen, I'd rather die"

Quinton: "He's so gonna pay for this...when I get my hands on him....I'll tear his limbs out of their sockets open his chest,rip out his cold heart and feed it to the dogs"

He has a disgusted and furious look on his face

Me:"I can't let you do that Quinton.... You not a killer"

I refuse to believe he's capable of such,I know what his father taught them but I refuse to believe he's capable of murder

He removes some hair from my face

Quinton: "Oh Bub....I'm sorry I wasn't here"

Me:"its okay Quinton "

Quinton: "its not okay..nothing is okay....I can't

let you go back there"

I shiver at the thought of not coming back

Me:"No Quinton, he'll kill me,I have to get going, he just started therapy, I don't want to make him angry"

Quinton: "Fuck!...okay wait,first tell me how did he do this to you?"

Me:"he's he's into bondage,he would cuff me,tie me up with all sorts of things,...(breakfast voice).... He'd strangle me for so long..s sometimes I'd loose consciousness, then he'd splash me with water to wake me up....h h he's crazy Qhe's made me his sex slave....I'm not allowed to communicate with my mother anymore, we've hardly went to visit his Parents ever since the wedding.. He he..I.. I ..he r r rapes meeeee!

He pulls me into his embrace and holds me gently

Quinton: "sshhhh that's enough,I've heard enough"

I let it all out as I cry my lungs out, he let's me cry

Quinton: "its about time I get out of this mess,although I'm so late but I'll get you out"

We are sitting on the couch he makes me lay on the couch he tries to pull down my panty but I hold it tight,he looks at me warningly, I let him,he slides them down, he parts my legs his lips curve down as he sees my punani

Quinton: "oh my cooky,my nunu"

He rubs it gently I flinch

"Aah"

I thought Liam has finished every sexual desires of my heart but I feel it beating for him,I'm sure I instantly got wet

Quinton:"how could he do this to my precious "

He brings his head closer to it I move up a bit

Me:"Quinton..."

Quinton: " don't worry I won't do anything that'll hurt"

He moves his face to my pussy and I feel his warm lips kiss it,just a gentle peck then comes back up, he takes my pants and dresses me up

He helps me put on the rest of my clothes

I was now calm, I check the time and its past eight, shit!

Me:"aah I have to run....oh God,twenty missed calls"

Quinton: "you not going back there"

Me:"he's gonna kill me Quinton, please just let me go,I know how to handle him to be less aggressive "

Quinton: "are you listening to yourself? You not going there"

My breathing increases in fear

Me:"Quinton please let me go...we can't let him know you back just as yet"

Quinton: "I have evidence very powerful evidence that will terminate that contract.... I know the best Lawyer in the country who'll help us out"

Me(hopefully): "really?"

Quinton: "Yeah...okay you go back,try to calm him down but if he touches you in any way,I'll come flying in there you hear me?"

I nod

Does this mean we together again? Or he's just worried about me? I'd rather not ask just as yet

He drives me back and parks a few houses away

Quinton: "where's your necklace?"

Me:"its in my jewelry box"

Quinton: "okay take this"

He gives me a bracelet

Quinton: "keep it on at all times,I'll be able to hear everything that's going on"

I nod

Me:"will I be able to hear you?"

He chuckles and shakes his head no

Me:"okay..but what if he wants me to take it off?"

Quinton: "then you keep it really close to you"

Me:"okay"

Quinton: "okay..good"

We look at each other for a while he smiles faintly, and unlocks the doors I make my way out

.....

He attacks me with a hug as I get inside

Lee:"you finally back,I was so worried about you"

Me:"I'm okay honey,don't worry "

Lee:"where were you? Where's all the stuff you bought"

Me:"uhm I didn't buy anything love,I just got caught up on the cinema,watched three movies,can you imagine? That's why I took so long"

Lee:"oh,I forget how much you love movies"

Me:"you know me"

He picks me up and we sit on the couch as he carries me like a baby ontop of him

Me:"so tell me,how was your first session? "

Lee:"it was a bit scary,but as I talked more it felt good"

Me:"would you say its helping? "

Lee:"mmh its still early to tell but I did enjoy it...that's a start right?"

I nod

Me:"yes baby,that's a start"

Lee:"let's go freshen up"

He takes me to the bathroom we strip naked and take a shower together, it was innocent..I guess today is one of those few lucky days where we don't have sex

We cuddle in bed a few minutes later he's dead asleep

I bring the bracelet and whisper to it

"Goodnight"

I smile to myself

I know he heard me

Many thoughts pass my mind before I fell

asleep

....

"my visions can sometimes change, but I see
blood in your hands.....

....

"Lisa"

...

"be careful"

[07/29, 07:14] W: Insert 31

LISA

I startle as I open my eyes to be met by brown tiger eyes staring right at me

Me(shaky):"Lee....you scared me"

I sit up and rub my sleepy eyes

Lee:"sorry,didn't mean to scare you"

Me:"that's okay "

Lee:"oh I made you breakfast "

He takes the tray from the side bed table

Me:"thank you,that's so sweet of you"

Lee:"I know I have been a monster lately, I mean look at you,you used to be so beautiful "

Excuse me? Did he say 'used to be' so now I'm ugly

Well its he's fault

Me:"oh..."

Lee:"I didn't do it on purpose khanya...I don't know what came over me,I really do love you and I hate myself for this "

Me:"maybe we shouldn't have sex for a while,just until you make progress through your therapy sessions,so that I also get time to heal"

He looks at me irritated

Lee:"you make it sound as if I'm crazy"

Me: "you not crazy babe...its just you have anger issues, when you get angry its like everything around you shuts off and you just wanna kill the enemy"

Lee:"I don't have anger issues Lisa!"

Me:"but you shouting at me right now and I'm

talking nicely to you"

Lee:"you back chatting me now?"

Me:"back chatting? Why you treating me like I'm your child"

Lee:"you making me angry Lisa!"

Me:"you think you the only one in this world who gets angry? Well I get angry too but you don't see me beating you up"

He clenches his jaw and gave me a threatening eye

Lee:"watch your tone baby girl...I woke up in a good mood,let's keep it that way,we don't want to wake up the sleeping beast"

I keep my mouth shut before I get K.O punch over my fresh wounds

He sighs and wipes his face then looks at me with regret

Lee:"I'm sorry baby, I should stop making

threats like that,I'm so scared of loosing you...I I don't know I guess I'm over protective in a toxic way,I want to change,I want to treat you better"

Me:"you not going to loose me Lee, I love you,I know you can change and I'll be right here to support you...,...you see this (flashing my rings in front of his face).... This means I'll be yours forever and ever till the grave"

He takes my hand and kisses it

Lee:"you an amazing woman,I'm too lucky to have you in my life"

Me:"and don't you forget that"

Lee:"its sad I won't be spending this weekend with you"

Me(bitterly):"aaww why?"

Lee:"I have to go to P.E...I was going to take you with but,I can't,they can't see you like this"

Well he hasn't been taking me with him when he

goes back home,he'd make up excuses to his family for me,they don't know he hits me,maybe they do but the way he's hiding me I don't think so,I'd stay here alone and shit scared,I'd lock myself indoors not even go to the shop until he gets back, because of my sore and bruised body....now it will be the first time he's living me since the stalker came into my life and I'm really panicking!!

Me:"you can't leave me alone here"

Lee:"aaww babe,please don't make me feel bad,I already have to stay a bit longer there might come back Monday or Tuesday"

Me:"but the weekend ends Sunday"

Lee:"I know....but there's a lot that needs to be done"

Me:"you leaving me alone in this big house,we just moved into this neighborhood, what if someone tries to break in while I'm sleeping? "

He chuckles

Lee:"this is the safest neighborhood trust me,no one will try breaking in....I'll face time you everyday any chance I get, okay?"

I nod

Me:"but its not the same but its okay....what if it storms one of the days?"

Lee:"there we go with your childish fears...come on baby grow some tities will you "

He thinks my fear for storms is childish..its not! Storms are scary..why do you think they use them so much in horror movies? Cause they scary!

My:"mxm"

He comes closer and kisses my lips

Lee:"I'm joking... You will just hum a song or something... It won't storm though I know it won't"

Me:"you control the weather now?"

Lee: "it won't storm love...now let me go get ready,will you be a darling and pack for me?"

He smiles showing all his teeth

I smile back

Me:"since you asked so nicely"

He gets go and goes freshen up,I go put away the food he made me then start packing his clothes that he'll need...I hear his phone vibrate,its right on the bed so its hard to miss it, I look around before taking it and I see the message in front..

"Can't wait to see you...I've been a bad girl and I need to be punished "-Lulama

It has a picture but I'd have to go into WhatsApp and open the message to see it.

I can't believe this...This bastard is cheating on me,all this time!With his Ex! Aarrghh I hate him!

How could he do this to me after everything he's put me through he still cheats, what the fuck do you call that!?

I throw his phone back on the bed, I feel so filthy right now, the same dick he fucks me with is the same dick he goes and makes love to his Ex with

"Thank you so much beautiful"

He wraps his arms around me from behind and kisses my cheek, then goes and lathers, I sit on the bed and watch this handsome Jerk dress up. If he was a good person I'd probably be drooling cause no lie the guy has it all but it just disgusts me all.

He grabs his phone and looks at it, he smiles to himself then bites his lip

I look down and his dick is bulging...wow, I don't even know why this hurts

Could it be that I was starting to settle and get used to him to actually try and love him since I knew I was stuck with him forever... I was even starting to do more research on bondage just so I can sometime surprise him, but that's never gonna happen anymore.

Lee: "okay babe I really have to run... be good for me okay?"

I nod

He kisses my forehead

Lee: "don't sulk phela eehh"

He pecks my lips

Lee: "take care... I'm just a phone call away, if you need anything "

Me: "okay"

Lee: "cela undikhaphe kaloku babe" (please accompany me)

I walk him to his care

We say our goodbyes

He speeds off

I wave as he disappears down the road

I sigh look around, this is a really quiet neighborhood

I miss the hotel

There were more people there

I hear a dog barking I startle and run back inside the house

I lock all the doors and close all the windows

I do some spring cleaning

While listening to music

That's how I calm myself when I'm angry or scared

But I cook more when I'm angry or bake

It really helps , I was playing music on sky high

When I think I heard something falling from the one of the rooms

I quickly switch off the T.V and listen carefully

I hear nothing, I switch back on the T.V

And continue dancing while mopping, I hear a lot of things falling

I switch off the T.V again, this time I'm really scared

I hold the mop steadily ready for attack as I walk slowly towards the rooms

Me:"who's there!?"

I open the bathroom door quickly as I jump inside looking around like a hunter looking for his prey

Me:"Show yourself Satan!....in the name of Abraham,Moses,David...Jesus Christ and all the other powerful men of God in the bible...Fire!"

I walk out and head to the bedrooms but there's

nothing... I get to our room

Me:"I have a gun and I'm not afraid to use it....so you better stay away! Or I swear I'll shoot you without hesitation"

I walk slowly towards the bathroom

Me:"I'm very dangerous I tell you...I killed the biggest spider on earth last week..Squashed the life out of it..the same way I'll do to you if you don't show yourself "

I run inside the bathroom spinning around ready to jump on someone, only to find a bunch of stuff on the floor,I sigh in relief, I forgot to close the bathroom window and its kinda windy today,so all the shower gels and shampoos fell from where they stay which is opposite the window

I click my tongue and walk out but my phone rings I turn back as I was by the door, I take my phone out the charger, its a private number

again

I leave it and don't answer,,I put my phone on the counter as I was about to clean the kitchen... It rings again, still private,I answer but don't speak

The caller Also doesn't talk

Me:"who's this?"

-silence-

Me:"what do you want from me?"

"You know exactly what I want"

A Scary deep voice talks

Me:"stay away from me you crazy person!"

"Where are the diamonds, I know you have them"

Me:"I don't know what you talking about.... Who are you?"

"Your worst nightmare.... I know you home

alone right now, you really thought it was the wind that dropped those things in the bathroom of your bedroom?"

My phone slips from my hands as I tremble in fear

I feel my knees getting weaker

doo doo doo!!

I startle I feel myself getting dizzy

Someone is by the door!

Its the stalker!

doo doo doo!!!

He wiggles the door handle trying to open

I feel the urge to pee

Me(skittish): "go away!!! Stay away from me!! "

The door opens, I thought I Locked it

I scream my lungs out closing my eyes

as I fall on my butt

against the kitchen counter

"HELLLLLLLLLLLLLLPPPP!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!"

I feel strong arms touch me

That's when I let my bladder relax as I went numb and warm liquid goes down my thighs

I just died a thousand deaths... take me now Lord!

"Lisa! Its just me..Lisa? Lisa!"

I open my eyes and immediately attack him with a hug

Holding on to him for dear life my heart ready to burst the way its beating so painfully against my chest

"Its only me Bub...don't worry,no one is ever going to hurt you again.. Not on my watch"

I let go of him quickly as I realise what I just did

My cheeks heat up in embarrassment

I wipe my tears and look at him

Me:"I'm so relieved its you"

Quinton:"you left the door unlocked"

Me:"I really thought I locked it"

Quinton: "when were you going to tell me you have a stalker? After he kills you?"

Me:"I didn't want to worry you"

Quinton: "you still don't get it do you?"

I shrug

Quinton: "the more I know,the more I'll be able to protect you, you have to stop hiding things from me now"

Me:"got it ...I'll tell you everything from now on"

Quinton: "that's a good girl, now come,we have a lot to talk about,regarding this stalker"

He gets up and tries to help me up but I refuse

Quinton: "get up"

I shake my head and press my legs tighter together

He tries to pull me again but I stand my ground...
Or should I say sit my ground firmly

Me:"uhm please close your eyes"

Quinton: "stop messing around Liss"

Me:"who said you can come in anyway,you just let yourself in here.....get out,knock until I tell you to come in...where did you leave your manners boy!"

He chuckles

Quinton: "stand up"

I fold my arms and shake my head

Me:"No!"

I pout my lips

Quinton: "get up Liss"

Me:"No..get out first "

He looks at me warningly

Quinton(firmly): "Lisa"

Me(shakey firm):"Quinton "

Quinton: "Up"

Me:"No!"

Quinton: "Now"

Me:"No"

Quinton: "don't make me make you"

I shake me head

Me:"m.m"

He grabs me by my arms next thing I know I'm on my feet,th e warm liquid continues leaving my vj down my legs. I look at him and his looking down aghast...I see his face changing as if he's trying to hold in his laughter

Me:"mxm,as if you've never peed your pants before!!"

...I storm off I hear him laugh behind me...

Arrrrghhgnfuckenjnfmnfuckenmmcmmcjfucken
jdkbhvscjjkdkdn this is so embarrassing!

[07/29, 07:15] W: Insert 32

LISA

(SHORT)

.

Me: "only started three days ago"

Quinton: "you should've told me yesterday"

Me: "I was already too overwhelmed by the apologies and and forgives"

Quinton: "forgives?"

Me: "I'm tryna rhyme here so go with the flow"

Quinton: "yeah I forgot, you've always been good at those,"

He rolls his eyes

Quinton: "anyway back to the point, give me your phone so I can try hack that number"

Me: "but its a private number"

Quinton: "I can still hack it"

I give him my phone

Me:"make sure you bring it back before this weekend ends"

Quinton: "it will only take a few hours,I'll do it later"

Me:"okay"

I sigh

Me:"can you stay with me until late when I'm asleep I'm really scared,this person is around here somewhere"

Quinton:"don't worry,that's why I'm here to give you company while your husband is away"

Me: "wait,how did you?....ooohhh the bracelet.. I guess that's how you knew about the stalker too"

He nods

Me:"Quinton? "

Quinton: "Lisa?"

Me:"where have you been...please tell me"

Quinton: "I was in Timbuktu"

Me:"Timbuktu? As in Mali ?"

Quinton:"is there another Timbuktu? Anyway I was there, there's a hideout we have located there,where its not easy for anyone to trace me or hack me"

Me:"so you've been there the whole time?",

Quinton: "No...after three months I knew the Johnsons have stopped looking for me had them believe I was dead"

Me:"Not only them..you had me too"

Quinton: "sorry but it was for the best"

Me:"so what about school? How did you write the exams"

Quinton: "the benefits of being close with the

dean would amaze you"

Me:"so you used to these things..going on hideouts,disappearing for months?? Not letting anyone know where you are,what you eating,how you sleeping, what you up to...nothing "

Quinton: "I thought you didn't want to know all that,you told me to stay away from you so I didn't think it would've bothered you that much"

Me:"of cause it bothered me Quinton, I love you and despite what I said you knew I love you no matter what"

Quinton: "really? Cause you really could've fooled me"

I gasp

Me:"so you still mad at me"

Quinton: "moving on....look tomorrow I'll be heading down to P.E have a word with Mr

Johnson,I'll get him to terminate the contract....I captured one of the girls that works for him,made her do a video talking about all the dirty business dealing he does,also had someone watching him, have lots of pictures of him doing his dirty work...you wanna see?"

I clear my throat and swallow the big lump

Me:"yeah sure"

He takes out his phone and we go through the pictures I was shocked to see one of them digging a hole and some pulling a big plastic that looked like there's someone in it

Me:"that's enough, I've seen enough "

Quinton: "they evil,I really underestimated them, we could be in more danger than we think"

I feel myself sweating, these people can kill me anytime they want and no one will know

Me:"is Mncedisi involved in all this?"

Quinton: "Yes,he takes care of some things,his brother Lwazi is more hands on"

Me:"why do they kill people?"

Quinton: "remember I told you how my dad taught me to deal with the enemy?"

Me:"yeah"

Quinton: "that's also how they deal with their enemies and threats"

Me:"and now I have something they want which makes me the enemy "

Quinton: "and I'm here to protect you,so they can't do that"

Me:"which makes you the threat"

He nods

I sigh and relax myself on the couch

I put my legs on him and he rubs my feet

"Mmhm"

Quinton: "you still love foot rubs"

Me:"who doesn't? "

He laughs

Me:"I missed your funny laugh"

Quinton: "what you tryna say about my laugh"

Me:"Nooooothing"

Me:"so...do you think like...we could be together again? "

I close my eyes tight as I await for his response

Quinton: "I don't know Lisa"

Despite everything that's been going on,that's the scariest thing I've ever heard

Me:"so...we can't? "

Quinton: "I don't know Lisa..... I really don't know"

I sit up and face him

Me:"I thought you forgave me?"

Quinton: "I have....but I haven't forgotten"

Me:"I'm sure we can still fix things"

Quinton: "can we not do this now..right now I'm just here to protect you"

Me:"nothing more"

Quinton: "nothing more"

That stings

Me:"what do I have to do to fix it?"

Quinton: "fix what?"

Me:"your broken heart..what do I have to do to fix it?"

Quinton: "I think we should just focus on getting you out of this mess for now"

Me:"but Quinton.. I miss you, I want to kiss you,I want to fall asleep in your safe arms,I want to wake up next you every morning, I want to

watch you when you sleeping, I want to share the deepest desires of my heart with you,I want to tell you everyday how much I love you,I I want to spend the

I trail off

Quinton: "I want that too....but Lisa you broke my heart,its not everyday or once in a while I get my heart broken like that,you the first girl I've ever invested my feelings on,and you the first to hurt me this much,I don't think I'm ready to be in a serious relationship"

Me:.....

Quinton: "the past six months have been the most miserable months of my life,if we get back together I know how much it will hurt if we were to fight or loose you again,I can't go through that again"

Me:"please give me a second chance?"

Quinton:.....

Quinton: "I need some time Lisa, it'll take time"

Me:"how much time?"

He shrugs

Me:"Quinton, we've already wasted so much time from being together,first we were friends and we hid our real feelings towards each other,then we confessed and things at that time were already complicated, which didn't give us a chance to be together, then you disappear for a whole six months that was even more time apart....our lives are in great danger,I'm afraid if we waste Anymore time, we might never get the chance to be together ever again... I don't know how many times had Mncedisi almost killed me,everyday I'd live in fear wondering if could today be the last day of my life? What scared me most was dying and never getting the chance to at least apologise,the chance of

being with you....we don't know what tomorrow holds,I might die anytime,there's people after my blood.....how much more time do you need
Quinton,(softly) for you to realise there's no more time to waste?

He looks at me for a while then drops his eyes

Me(sighs):"I'm sorry,I didn't mean to put pressure on you...I'll give you all the time you need"

Quinton:....

Me:"let's get on with that hacking... I want to know who's that stalker"

Quinton: "right"

He presses his phone and does some hacking things

.....hours later.....

I feel someone shake me

Quinton: "Lisa wake up"

Me(sleepy): "mmh"

Quinton: "get up you have to see this"

I lazily sit up and sluggishly gaze at him

Me: "what is it?"

Quinton: "I found who the stalker is"

Me:"who?"

Quinton: "you won't believe this"

Me:"spit it out already "

Quinton:.....

Me:.....

Quinton: "its.....(puzzled)...Yonela"

Me(puzzled)?

.

.

.

.

to be continued

[07/29, 07:16] W: Continuation

LISA

Me:"excuse me?"

Quinton: "I can't believe this...its actually her"

Me:"I'm calling her"

Quinton: "okay but call her on her normal number"

Me:"wait but what do I say to her?"

Quinton: "just tell her to come over"

Me:"okay "

I search for her number

Me:"its ringing "

"If it isn't ma home girl"

Me:"hey you! Estranged friend "

"Girl I've just been busy, and you hardly wanna go out"

Me:"well a lot has been going on in my life I don't even get time to go out"

"And that's why marriage is so not for me"

Me:"you know if it were up to me,we'd be somewhere shaking our asses off"

He clears he throat

Yonela (laughing): "Gosh I miss you"

Me:"well today is your lucky day then...I'm home alone,please come over"

Yonela:"really?... Okay! I'll be right there"

Me:"okay good just let me....."

Tititi she hangs up

Quinton: "she's coming?"

Me:"yeah...but do you know what's strange?"

Quinton: "what?"

Me:"we moved here a month ago and she's never visited me here"

Quinton: "so she doesn't know where you stay"

Me:"No,I've never told her,just told her we moved from the hotel,but didn't tell her to

where"

Quinton: "well if she gets here without asking for directions.. That'll be our first poof that she is indeed the stalker"

Me:"I hope she asks for them"

Quinton: "I never expected this..(chuckles).. At all"

Me:"I just wish this is all just a bad dream"

Quinton: "oh this shit is real baby"

A few minutes later a call comes through

Me:"Hey babe"

"Open up,I'm here"

Me:"okay love"

I go outside then press the remote she comes in with a very nice Audi a4

How did she afford that?

She gets out and catwalks her way towards the

house as she locks her car

I meet her halfway and we share a hug

Yonela: "mmmh missed you so much"

Me:"missed you more"

We break the hug and head inside,I lock the door and keep the keys in my pocket

I follow her to the sitting room

Yonela(shocked):"Quinton!?"

She looks like she just saw a ghost

Yonela:What are you doing here? I I mean you still alive?"

Quinton: "well hello to you too Nella..its good to see you,how have you been?"

Yonela: "I'm I'm good... I thought you were dead?"

Me:"they do not call him die hard for nothing "

Quinton: "uhm they do not call me die hard Liss"

I laugh as I sit down

Me:"take a seat girl"

She reluctantly sits down still in total shock,
exactly how I was when I saw him at the mall

Me:"I know girl that was my exact reaction "

Yonela: "but but that's impossible.... They shot
you?"

Quinton: "whoever's your source for rumors
gots to gets their facts rights"

I laugh at the way he said that

Me:"I think we should just be happy he's here
right?"

She nods unsurely

Yonela: "yeaah....welcome back..I guess"

Quinton (smiling): "its goods bes backs"

Me:"okay dude..you better stop talking like that
now"

He chuckles

Yonela (fake laughs): "see you still crazy"

Quinton: "way more crazier than ever now"

He says in a bit of a threatening way

Me: "Right! So anything to drink? Juice, water, wine, whiskey or beer?"

Yonela: "Juice is fine for me"

Me: "you sure? Cause there's plenty of the other stuff(winks)"

Yonela: "juice for now friend"

Me: "okay then..Quinton? "

Quinton (looking intensely at yonela): "I could use something stronger"

Me: "whiskey it is"

I walk out with one looking at the other threat fully while the other looks guilty, I pour Juice and whiskey then serve it to them, I take a bottle

of beer for myself as I joined them still at the position I left them

Me:"whoa yonela feel at home girl,relax,take off the shoes,throw your legs on the couch,geez you so stiff"

Quinton: "looks like she needs this more than I do"

He says as he gulps down his whiskey

I take a sip of my beer looking at her,she looks nervous

Me:"ayibo I almost forgot to ask yaz...how did you find your way here,cause like I've been waiting for you to ask me for location but dololo now you here?"

She chuckles

Me(jokingly):"ayi friend suhleka ndi'serious ingabe kanti sowuyandi stalker?"(don't laugh friend I'm serious, I'd swear you stalking me?)

We all laugh but we all know no one is really laughing here

Quinton(laughing): "that'd be crazy"

Yonela (laughing): "Like really now?"

Me:"okay jokes aside...how did you find your way?"

Quinton: "yeah I'm curious"

She gulps down her juice in one go

Yonela: "oh...there's this one time I was planning on coming to check on you..you know me and surprise visits so I asked Mncedisi to send me the location and he did but I ended up not coming that time,when something came up"

Me:"oohhh I see,shame I would've loved that surprise visit"

Quinton: "what came up?"

Yonela: "huh?"

Quinton:"you couldn't make it, something came up....what came up?"

He's now very serious

Yonela: "oh..something personal"

Me:"oh my..what happened? It must've been serious "

Yonela: "No it wasn't that serious really just mom wanted to come check on me so I had to go fetch her"

Me: "oh okay... You should've told me, I would've loved to see her"

Yonela: "it was one of those unexpected visits"

Me:"oh"

Yonela:"yeah,but don't worry next time she comes I'm calling you over"

Me:" if you know what's good for you....ayibo girl you didn't tell me you got a mean machine!"

Yonela: "oh that old thing"

Me:"old thing!? tshini! gal you forgot to mention that you are stinking rich!?"

Yonela: "its an early birthday gift from my older bro uJonga bought it for me,its actually a second hand"

Me:"but its beautiful and in very good condition..wow so he's business must be doing very well"

Yonela: "it is"

Me:"mmh"

tense silence

Yonela: "oh my..what happened to your eye?"

Me:"oh,this little thing..I bumped into a pole..you know clumsy me"

Quinton clenches his jaws he's veins in the side of his forehead pop out

Yonela: "yoh my love...askies tjo it looks so painful"

Me:"yeah it is but the pills are helping "

He clears his throat

Quinton: "aren't you going to tell her about that thing you told me?"

We look at each other I look back at the curious Yonela

Yonela: "what thing?"

Me(sighs):"well...for the past three days weird things have been going on"

Yonela: "weird things?"

Me:"yeah....they got me really scared, girl I sleep with one eye open"

She adjusts herself but still looks uncomfortable

Me: "I've been getting these threatening messages on my phone from an unknown number.. And random calls from a guy with a scary deep voice,threatening to take my life,if I don't give him what he wants..he was even here earlier...oh God, friend...I have a stalker...I'm so terrified I don't know what this person wants from me"

A tear escapes my eye

Yonela: "yoh that's hectic babe...what could this person possibly want from you? Maybe he has some kind of obsession for you,I mean you beautiful, probably is some weirdo who loves you but can't tell you?"

I shrug my shoulders

Me:"but he wants diamonds that I don't know of?"

Yonela: "diamonds? Ayibo do you own some kinda valuable jewelry?"

Me:"not that I know of?...argh this is just a mess,I don't know what to do...I'm just glad I have the only two people I love and trust with my all here with me...you guys are the best,the greatest gift God has ever given me"

I smile at them with tears running down my face as they look at me with pity

Me:"I don't know what I'd do if y'all were to turn y'all backs on me...(looks at yonela).. Or betray me..I don't think I'd survive "

Yonela: "I I'm always here for you..I'd never ever turn my back on you, or betray you"

She comes towards me and sits next to me then we share a hug

Quinton: "really?"

She looks at him perplexed

Quinton: "I'd keep my mouth shut if I were you"

Yonela: "w what are....what's going.... What's are

you saying?"

I remove her arms from me, she goes back to her seat, we look at her intensely

Quinton: "enough with the playing dumb act, now we all know what's going on here, so why don't you just start talking?"

Yonela (incomprehensibly): "uhm.. I'm lost?"

Me: "let me find you... I have a stalker, I told Quinton, he hacked her number, turns out she was actually a she, and that she was..... you"

Quinton: "so if I were you I'd start talking before it gets ugly"

Yonela: "ayi guys there must be some kind of mistake .. (chuckles).. I mean it doesn't make any sense?... Me?? Why and what would possibly make me do that?"

Me: "we were hoping you'd tell us"

Quinton: "please try not to waste anymore"

time....and talk"

She looks at me remorsefully, then looks at Quinton, you wouldn't miss the fear on her face

Me:"look babe...just tell me everything, how do you know about the diamonds and why do you want them so bad?"

Quinton: "cause no one is leaving this house until we know the truth"

I look at him. Okay now I'm even scared of him and I did nothing wrong,the chilled yet dangerous look on him right now,if I were Yonela I wouldn't waste anymore time,I look back at her,yep I can literally smell her fear

Yonela: "I I'm sorry....

She says looking at me

Yonela:" they said if I don't do this they'd come after my family and make me watch as they

killed them,then they'd come after me...they said I should try by all means to get the diamonds from you, since I'm your best friend you'd trust me and tell me where they are, but I didn't want to do it personally cause I didn't want you to even suspect it was me,so I decided to do it as a stalker instead...

She breaks down into tears

Yonela: "I'm not the one after them..."

Me:" I know its the Johnsons"

Yonela: "yes!...wait.. How did you know?..I mean they are very certain you don't know anything"

Quinton: "cause they are crackbrained..."

Me:"is that all? What you've told me is everything?"

She nods unsurely

Quinton: "I don't like making threats Yonela cause mine always come true,so you better say

whatever that's stuck on your little throat, if you don't want to leave this house without your throat"

He side smiles looking at her deep in her eyes

I hear her swallow

Yonela: "they said if I fail this task,they coming for your mother Lisa"

My heart skips a thousand beats, they can't do that,she's literally the last family I have

Quinton and I look at each other with concern

Me(whispers): "Quinton"

Quinton: "Not on my watch"

Yonela: "they always seem to know everything I do and say,they probably know what's going on right now"

Quinton gets up and strips yonela naked....TF?

Me:"what are you doing? "

Quinton: "they must have spy cameras on her body"

He makes her stand up straight then gets really close to her with his hands around her neck as if he's searching for something, he's just too close if you ask me, their bodies are touching, I feel a pang of jealousy.

Once upon a time I also used to have a beautiful spotless sexy body

Quinton: "got it"

He pulls out some tiny camera then comes toward me and sits beside me I hear yonela breath out...he does something to it

Me:"what are.....

He shushes me

Quinton: "okay now you can talk"

Me:"what were you doing to it? "

Quinton: "I just disenabled it"

Me:"why don't you just destroy it"

Quinton: "No,I have a better plan"

Me:"what? "

Quinton: "I'll take this somewhere with me,enable it again, make it sound as though Yonela has been kidnapped and killed..then I destroy it"

Me:"but didn't they already hear everything we said,like we now know who the stalker is? "

Quinton: "Naah he doesn't check up on her at this hour,he only gets back home after eight then checks everything she's been doing throughout the day...so I've deleted from when she got a call from you to up until now"

I sigh

Me:"thank God you've also been keeping tabs on him"

Quinton:"he thinks he's smart...I'll show him

smart"

Me: "oh Q...I'd be dead meat without you,thank you,for everything"

He smiles then brushes my cheek

Quinton: "yes,yes you would"

He chuckles I laugh and roll my eyes

Me:"and the Ego is back"

For a second there I thought he'd say something meaningful, ayi this idiot

Me:"Yonela.....you my best friend, you should've told me,regardless, we would've made a plan"

Yonela:"you don't understand Lisa,those people are scary,they place they took me when they kidnapped me was the most horrific with dead bodies lying everywhere...trust me,you'd think twice before doublecrossing them,and now they'll come after me"

Quinton: "don't worry,they won't touch you, I got

you"

Yonela: "really?"

He nods

She jumps on him as she attacks him with a hug

Yonela: "thank you thank you thank you so much!!"

Quinton(laughing): "yeah..you welcome"

He gently pushes her away...I don't know why am I feeling this way,I mean she's lesbian, well she's bisexual... Oh God this is no time to be jealous.. Gosh!...

Its just I've been dying to jump on him since he got back, but I guess those days are over

Quinton: "okay guys...I have to go sort out this killing Yonela thing....so let me get going"

Yonela: "so can I go back to my apartment?"

Quinton: "No! You cannot, that's the first place they'll look for you before they believe you really dead...no one must know where you are until this whole thing blows off"

Yonela: "so where will I go?"

Quinton: "you'll come stay with me"

Me:"pardon?"

Quinton: "yeah,they won't come to me,I can protect her better when she's close to me"

Okay I can't hide it anymore I'm angry,so they'll be sleeping under the same roof? Together? Alone? Oh No!...I know Quinton and he's love for punani,what if he goes back to his old ways,where he couldn't resist any girl that throws herself at him..he can't even read when a girl is flirting!...No no I should stop feeling this way,I trust him,I trust him with my all,he'd never do that,deep down I know he still loves me,I should just give him he's space and stop acting

like a bitch

Me:"oh...okay..and I'm just stuck here in the lion's den"

Quinton: "don't worry,they'll terminate the contract, you'll get a divorce and you'll be free"

Me(disappointed): "yeah I guess so"

Quinton: "what Imma need you to do,is go back home tomorrow, look for the diamonds and come back with them"

Me:"Alone?..what if someone is following me?"

He sighs

Quinton: "mmh okay I'll go with you,then it'll have to be the day after tomorrow"

He stands up

Quinton: "let me go sort this out I'll be back in a few hours"

He kisses my forehead then heads towards the

door,I follow him with the keys and open for him,
I hold his arm

Me:"please be careful Q"

He looks into my eyes for a while

Quinton:"I will"

He makes his way out

QUINTON

THE NEXT DAY

I make my way inside the conference room, I stand by the door as I watch them trying to wrestle my lawyer who's telling them to terminate the contract

Mr Johnson: "That's never happening, Mr Mthethwa and I had a deal, this contract can only be terminated once his daughter passes away, then it will be of no use...but for now, she belongs to us we own her, so you can forget about that, she's not going anywhere"

Lawyer: "Mr Johnson, you don't want us to take this to court do you?"

Mr Johnson: "the law is on my side"

Mncedisi: "the contract was legally binding so whether you take us to court, nothing will help you"

"I wouldn't be so sure if I were you"

All eyes turn up to look at me as I make my way in, I pull a chair out next to my lawyer

They look at me as if they just seeing a ghost, which technically from their point of views they are.

Me: "whoa close your mouth mncence I can see last nights dinner"

I pinch my nose

Me: "shiii I can smell it too"

Mr Johnson: "wh what ...wh when ..."

Me: " what when huh? I see you starter now...come on,ask away"

Mnce: "you supposed to be dead"

Lawyer: "and how would you know so? Cause my client was never declared dead?"

They look at each other

I laugh deviously

Me: "didn't they tell you..I'm Jesus Part two baby! Behold the resurrection of Christ..... Part Two!"

I laugh and Miss lawyer joins me

They look at me irritated

Me:"okay okay....before y'all send me to God for him to forgive you for your sins....(vigorously)...why don't we get down to real business?"

Mr Johnson: "how long have you been back?"

Me:"I must say y'all really not the smartest gangster around, I mean I've been back for almost three months now"

Mnce:"what! Impossible! "

Me:"you should rather keep your mouth shut you woman abuser"

He looks at me with anger and his nose twitching

Me:"now,I came here to make a generous deal with you,even though y'all don't deserve my generosity "

Mr Johnson: "we don't make deals with the O'Brien's"

Me:"I suggest you reconsider that conclusion ...that's if y'all don't want to spend life in jail or start a very messy war"

Mr Johnson: "I'm not hearing it..I'm out of here"

He gets up

Me:"sit your old ass down!"

He looks at me then at my lawyer then sits down

Me:"good..now as I was saying about my generous self...you will terminate whatever contract you signed with Mr Mthethwa with immediate effect "

Mnce:"what's in it for you?"

Quinton: "you just can't keep it shut can you boy?
Daddy never taught you manner?...patience
man"

Mnce:"just get to the point!"

Me(chuckles):"I know you did not just raise your
voice at me niggas?...listen here Mncesishi or
whatever your name is....watch yourself when
you address me....I'm not Lisakhanya nor am I
your fuck buddy....understood?"

He looks at me filled with anger veins popping
out with a twitching eye

Me:"now..if y'all do this..I won't send y'all to jail
and have my men kill you there..or I won't go
into war with y'all and kill y'all myself, either
way..y'all get killed....so which is it going to be?"

Mnce:"how will you send us to jail,we've done
nothing wrong"

I laugh in disbelief

Me:"first of all you the last person who should be talking about 'nothing wrong' you have a wife with bruises and scares all over her body because of you..."

He keeps quiet his father looks at him disappointed

Me:"oh wait..daddy didn't know? Shit I hate to be a barrier of spilling secrets..(I shrug)..well I guess now you know"

Mr Johnson: "you can't send him to jail,he has a mental disorder"

Me:"I can always punish him my own way....oh there's more"

I look at my lawyer, she nods and presses her laptop then faces it to them

They stare at it petrified

Mr Johnson: "how did you get all this?"

Me:"I am my Father's son...you never messed

with the O'Brien's while he was alive..you think you can mess with them now?..think again "

The room fills with range and tension you can even cut it with an axe

Me(smirks):"So....do we have ourselves a deal señoras?"

.

.

.

.

to be continued

[07/29, 07:24] W: Insert 33

LISA

Quinton: "and we here"

Me:"I haven't been here since the lobola negotiations... How embarrassing "

Quinton: " it's not your fault you had a controlling abusive husband"

Me:"he doesn't even deserve the title husband "

Quinton: "at least the contract has been terminated"

Me:"all thanks to you....although this won't stop them from coming for me"

Quinton: "I know...those diamonds hold a lot of value in them,everyone is after them,as long as you have them,you'll never be safe"

Me:"and if you have them?..you won't be safe too"

Quinton: "don't worry about me,I can take care of myself"

Me:"whether they by you or me...I'll still be in danger because I'm part of your life"

Quinton: "I know"

Me:"let get inside...its best if you have them,I want nothing to do with them anymore,they hold too much evil"

Quinton: "let's go get them"

He unlocks the door and we head towards the house,I knock but no one opens

Me:"maybe she's by the round house"

I attempt to go but I see her coming towards us carrying a bucket which has millies corn,looks like she was feeding her chickens..mom loves chickens, she always used to slaughter one very end of the year when I pass and I'd get the biggest piece,quarter leg...I'd feel like the boss oohh yeah

Mom:"Molweni"(hello)

Me:"Molo mah"(hey mom)

Quinton: "Ewe molo mah..unjani?"(hey mom,how are you?)

She freezes as soon as her eyes land on Quinton, this is the first time she's meeting him

Mom(astonished):" You!?"

We look at her confused, we look at each other then back at her

Mom:"you...murderer"

Me:"mah...I think you confusing him to someone else"

Mom(quivering): "you...Mr O'Brien?..You killed my husband"

We look at each other anxiously... I guess mom is mistaking him to his dad, why does he have to look so much like his father!? They practically look like the same person

Me:"mah...calm down "

Mom: "calm down? Calm down? What does he want here?"

Me:"Mah.. This is Quinton, the guy I told you about, remember? "

She shakes her head

Mom:"No no this can't be him"

Me:"mom can you let us in so we can explain? "

Mom:"nanku usatan ezonndilinga kwam!"(the devil must be testing me!)

She opens the door and we head inside

I look around as I see a lot of change has been made a whole lotta upgrade, but I guess this is not the time to ask...we sit by the brand new couches in the newly decorated lounge with brand new furniture, I see the lobola money came to good use

Me: "Mah, this is not Rinaldo....this is Quinton"

Mom: " his son "

Mom: "your father killed my husband "

I look at him his looking at mom with pleading eyes

Quinton: "Mrs Mthethwa.....I sincerely apologise for...."

Mom(agitated): "apologise!? You apologise? What's that going to solve huh? Will it bring back my husband? Will it!?"

Quinton(humbly): "No mah, it won't"

Mom:"whatever did my husband ever do to your father, what kinds of creul evil man kills another man in front of his family huh?"

I don't understand why mom is shouting at Quinton, he did nothing wrong,he wasn't even there,he was still young

Quinton has his head bowed down taking it all in

Mom:"nikhohlakele, nonke Nina, niyimigulukudu nje engalunganga nihamba nibulala ifamilies zabantu (y'all evil,all of you,y'all a bunch of ruthless thugs who are up to no good,y'all go around killing people's families) does that satisfy y'all huh? Is that how y'all make your riches from other people's suffering and blood!?"

"THAT'S ENOUGH! STOP ALREADY!"

I burst out,I've had it,if Quinton is not going to stand up for himself I'll do it for him I just can't

watch mom hurting him like this and he's just too humble for my liking

Mom(warningly): "Lisakhanya! hlukana! awungeni ndawo" (stop it,this doesn't concern you)

Me:"No mom, you have to stop, This is not Quinton's fault, its not his fault that he was raised by an evil man,he's here on good terms trying to be a better man than his father,Do you know how many times this man has saved my life? This guy right here that you shouting at is the reason why you still have a daughter in this world!...

Mom:"also the reason I don't have a husband, the only man I've ever loved...

Me:"No mah its not.....

"Lisakhanya!!"

He snaps and startles me, I look at him and he shakes his head

Quinton(firmly):"stop,that's no way to talk to your mother"

What!? Is he defending her?

Me:"But Quinton she..."

Quinton:"Lisakhanya"

He looks at me threatfully, I huff and sit back

He looks at mom remorsefully then looks back down

Mom:"khawubheke awusenayo nembeko,uthetha nam nomakanjani ngoba kaloku bheka undinda esthubeni nemigulukudu kodwa utshatile, awuhloniphi umtshato wakho ngoba ubusy namakhwenkwe ababulali!"

(You see you've lost your ways,you talk to me anyhow because you busy galavanting with low life good for nothing thugs while you married!

Don't you have any respect for your marriage!?)

Me:" Mah of you not going to listen to what we have to say,I think its best we leave,we'll come back once you've cooled down"

Quinton looks like he's ready to kill me but I don't care

I stand up

Me:"let's go Quinton, its obvious we not welcome here"

He reluctantly gets up,he bows down a bit for mom

Quinton: "usalekakhle mah,uxolo ngokuza singatshongo"

(Stay well mah,we apologise for our unannounced visit)

He bows again then follows me,I walk as fast as I can to the car,he opens the doors and we drive away

Me:"Quinton... My mother had no right....

Quinton: "shut up Lisakhanya!"

I gasp in total shock,did he just...okay

The rest of the drive is silent, I look out the window till I fall asleep"

"Your mother will come around,just explain to her about the little ceremony that has to be done,he must apologise on behalf of his father to our ancestors "

Me:"dad,you back! Oh dad I just don't get why mom is so angry at him"

"My death really traumatised her,she'll come around, I'm happy this boy saved you from that toxic marriage, I knew he was your protector,stick with him a lot is still coming your way baby, but as long as you have him,you are safe,yes y'all will have your ups and downs it won't be an easy road but as long as there's plenty of love you will both be forever

happy....don't throw the towel when the going gets tough cause it will,but show him that you love him and you stand by him no matter what,he'll do the same"

Me:"I understand daddy, and what about Bella dad...can I trust her to help me?"

"Yes,she's very good,with her y'all be able to have extra protection from the enemy as through her your enemies will be revealed"

Me:"I can't believe I'm so young yet I have enemies "

"We can't choose the people who won't ever betray us,people will always find something to hate you for whether they'll hate because you too good or you a bad person they'll always hate.. Choose carefully the people you trust,don't give your trust too easily"

Me:"yes dad,I'll keep those words in my heart, daddy, will Quinton and I ever work out as a

couple again? "

"I believe he'll come around just give him the time he needs"

Me:"okay...I hope you'll keep visiting me,I'll really need you"

"Once you have Bella you won't need me much,but I'll always be watching over you"

He stretches his arms to my face and caresses my bruises and I feel the pain go away he hugs me and I feel the glorious power in his being passed on to me, he pulls out

Me:"whoaa I feel lighter and better"

I jump up and down my body is not sore anymore I look at my reflection in the river beside us

Me:"I'm healed! The bruises are gone! "

"Yes they are"

Me: "will I wake up like this?"

"Not now but the next day"

Me:"what is this power I feel inside me?"

"That is the power of protection, the power of love,the power of wisdom.... You were born with a great gift you are a healer and a foreseer ..but this gift in you cannot work if you don't believe in yourself and forgive those who have wronged you"

Me: "but dad how do you expect me to forgive a man who has verbally and mostly physically abused me? A man who is probably still after my blood as we speak?"

"You'll find a way to eventually until then, your powers can never work,once you can use them just know they'll never work if you are angry or full of hate and rage, these are pure powers,they need a pure heart"

Me:"I understand dad"

"Let me leave you to it,all the best and be

careful of the choices you make"

Me: "I will"

"Bye my baby"

Me:"heey this is the first time you disappear without leaving me hanging "

He laughs

"I never left you hanging baby,you never concentrated"

He waves and walks away until he vanishes

Me:"I love you dad"

"Lisa..wake up"

I lazily open my eyes and I'm met by mesmerizing rainbow eyes

I sit up and I notice I'm in bed

Me:"that was quick...where are we?"

Quinton: "we still in Mthatha at a B&B"

Me:"oh"

He walks away

Quinton: "wake up and feed yourself, got you food"

I sense he's still mad at me

I get up and drag my feet to the table and prepare the Nandos meat chips and rolls for myself, this is a one room well two room including toilet,but the bedroom and kitchen its all together in one room but its very spacious.

I go sit on my bed,he got the one with two single beds,I guess it makes sense since we not a couple so we can't sleep together, I feel my heart sink, this punishment is too much, I really need to feel him,a twenty second hug at least? We haven't hugged since he came back yet yonela already got to hug him..so unfair! And now I'm getting the silent treatment, how much

more torture can a girl's heart take?

I stare at him as he's lying on the bed pressing his phone, sounds like he's playing candy crush, we like racing each other on that game on who will lead to the highest level, last time I checked I was leading, well that's because in some levels when I'm stuck he plays for me, sometimes I play his one

Me: "you not going to eat?"

He ignores me

Me: "Quinton? "

Quinton:..... (Pressing his phone)

Me: "Quinton? "

He carries on ignoring me

Me(louder): "Quinton!"

He looks at me with the most intimidating look which makes me regret shouting his name

Quinton: "what?"

I sigh, this is too painful

Me: "are you not hungry?"

He shakes his head then continues playing his phone

I go put my plate away, I lost my appetite, I lay on my bed and face the ceiling, next thing I know my eyes are burning and the tears escape, I miss him so much, it's like he's here in the same room with me but he's not really here with me, it's no different from when he was in Timbuktu, the only difference is that he's here physically. But I'm still alone emotionally, he's not the same anymore, I think I lost him, I lost the Quinton who loved me unconditionally the one who cracked jokes and always puts a smile on my face no matter how depressed I'm feeling, the one who always had the right things to say at the right time, the playful and funny

one ...now I just feel like I have a normal
bodyguard

I wipe my tears

"Tell me one good reason you crying?"

I look at him

Quinton: "why are you crying Lisakhanya? Is it
for something you didn't brought to yourself?"

Me:"I just don't get why do you have to be so
cold towards me"

Quinton:"cold? I'm the one being cold?"

He sits up on the edge of the bed,I also get up

Quinton: "did you hear the way you talked to
your mother Lisa?...that was disrespectful and
cold"

Me:"Quinton... She was blaming you for
everything, all your father's deeds she was..."

Quinton(angrily): "So what! Lisa huh So what!

That does not give you the right to talk to your mother that gave birth to you in that manner!"

Me(shouting): "I was trying to defend you!"

Quinton: "did I ask you to defend me!? Do I look like I need someone to defend me!? No! I don't need your stupid defendings!"

Those last words hit the core,my eyes are painful from the flood of tears I'm holding in

Me(breaking voice):"I'm sorry,I didn't mean to act out of stupidity "

My mouth is trembling uncontrollably as the flood breaks loose but I don't makes a sound

Quinton (calmly): "your mother was angry,I understand that,she has to be angry,you should've let her take out all that anger,she needed to say all those things Lisa,for closure"

Me:....(crying)

He comes towards me he raises his hand

towards me I cover myself with my arms
protecting my face

Me:"Please I'm sorry! I won't do it again I
swear....(cry out loud and close my eyes
tightly)...DON'T HIT ME PLEEAASE!!...I
PROMISE I WON'T DO IT AGAIN, I'LL BEHAVE!,
I'LL BE A GOOD LITTLE GIRL!"

I feel him shaking me holding my arms

Quinton: "Lisa! I'm not going to hit you"

I can't hear him my crys are too loud

Me:"pleeaase don't hurt me"

He pulls me into his embrace

Quinton: "sshhhh calm down Lisa...I'd never lay
my hands on you..I'm not him, I won't hurt you
Liss, calm down bub"

Me:"....(crying softly)

Quinton: "That Son of a bitch really traumatised
you...oohh he'll get it now.....ssshhhh I'm sorry

Liss, I didn't mean to scare you, you safe now, no one will ever put you through that again okay"

I nod and hold onto him for dear life he also tightens his grip

Quinton: "I'm sorry... Please don't cry"

[07/29, 07:43] W: Insert 34

LISA

Quinton: "we going to try this again, this time let's be more humble and respectful towards your mother, okay?"

I nod, well we still inside the car as we just parked outside the house, this time he made sure I call mom and tell her we coming, she reluctantly agreed

Me:"okay "

Everything is just draining me,I don't have the energy anymore

Quinton:"look,I really appreciate that you want to stand up for me,I really do,it shows me how much you care for me,but right now I want you to be just there and hold my hand,that's all the support I need for now okay? "

I nod, he sighs heavily

Quinton: "I have to admit, I'm shit scared right

now,bit I have to face her,its the only way she can move on....do you know what would really calm my nerves and make me happy right now?"

Me (bluntly in a sad tone): "we run away and never look back"

He chuckles

Quinton: "No,what would calm me is to see your smile,its been a while"

Me:"really? "

Quinton: "yeah,come on now,smile for me"

I automatically smile even showing my teeth

We stare into each other's eyes smiling like retarded idiots

Quinton: "there it is,phew! Now I think I feel a bit better"

Me:"you do?"

Quinton: "just a bit,you want to make me a whole lot better?"

I nod smiling

Me:"yes,anything "

Quinton: "why don't you tell me just one of your incredibly funny jokes"

I squint my eyes at him

Me:"so that you can make fun of me? No way"

He sighs and sits back

Quinton(somberly): "guess I'll have to go in there sad and come back sad,well so much for anything"

He unlocks the door and attempts to get out but I hold his arm

Me:"okay fine"

He gives me a sly look...mxm idiot

Me:"okay...uhm,what's the difference between a

snowman and snow woman?"

He smile widely and shrugs his shoulder

Me:"Snow balls"

I hold my mouth after I say that

We burst into laughter

Quinton:"hahaha...you so naughty..another one please "

Me:"what does the grape say after its stepped on?"

Quinton:"what?"

Me:"Nothing, it just let's out a little wine"

We laugh

Quinton: "oohh good one, wine and whine....last one before we head inside"

Me:"ayi Quinton I'm not your personal comedian "

Quinton: "please..I'm so close to being supper

happy, pretty please"

I laugh

Me:"argh okay...what's the difference between a teacher and a train?"

Quinton: "I don't know"

Me:"the teacher says 'spit out you gum!' But the train says 'choo choo choo!'"

We crack up and laugh

Quinton: "really choo choo as in chew chew"

I laugh even louder at how funny it sounds when he explains it,we laugh till our laughs get fainter as we stare into each other's eyes laughing a bit

Quinton: "your jokes are so dump, yet so funny,I really missed them....but you know what I missed most?"

Me(smiling): "what?"

Quinton: "the sound of your laughter..... It gets

me everytime"

Me:"I missed yours too"

He sighs

Quinton: "still can't believe your bruises just healed like that,overnight"

Me:"I told you about the dream,he healed me"

Quinton: "yeah,but still,I'm not one to believe in miracles specially when it happens in front of me it just freaks me out,but I'm happy you healed,hope we can convince your mother to do that little ceremony"

Me:"she has to"

Quinton: "please Lisa,first thing you do when we get inside, you apologise to her for the way you spoke to her yesterday"

Me:"okay,I will"

He smile then rubs my cheek

The level of respect and dignity this man possesses is incredible, I should start showing the same qualities too

Me: "you sure there's nothing else I can do, to make you happy?"

My eyes were glued to his lips I looked up at him and so was his on mine

Quinton: "your mom must be wondering, let's get inside"

That was close

We walked towards the house, I knocked and waited for her to open, Quinton had his hands in his pocket looking down and obviously nervous, I put my hand on his shoulder

Me: "don't worry, all will go well"

He smiles faintly

The door opens

We greet and are welcomed inside

We find her watching the one gospel channel
She looks a lot calmer than yesterday but the
anger is still there

I should just get this whole I'm sorry thing over
and done with!

Me:"Mah...first of all I'd like to apologise about
the manner I spoke to you in,it was
inappropriate and disrespectful of
me,regardless of how I feel,you still my elder
but most importantly you are my mother,I
should address you in a humble way at all
times,mah,can you please forgive me?"

That's me swallowing my pride and trying to fix
everything,it was my pride that got me into this
muddy situation anyway

I looked up at her

Mom(sighs):"Lisa, you still,very young, just
because you finished high school at an early
age doesn't give you a right to raise your voice

at me, the harsh way you spoke to me really hurt my feelings, all because of a boy? A thug?"

Oh no she did not just..... I look at Quinton who give me that "don't even think about it" look

Me:"I'm sorry mom"

She ignores me but looks at me for a very long time,I guess she's trying to read me

Mom:"did you tell her to do this?"

She finally says

Mom:"Lisakhanya never apologises"

He looks at mom for a while,I think this must be pretty awkward for him and is not quite sure how to respond to mom

Quinton: "Yes mah, I did"

Silence again! I swear you could cut this tension with an axe that's how bad it is

Mom:"okay"

This must not be easy for mom,I wish I had realise that yesterday before I disrespected her like that

She switches off the TV and shift her focus on us

Mom:"did you know who she was when you first met her?"

He clears his throat

Quinton: "No mah,I didn't"

Mom:"when did you find out?"

Quinton: "around February this year"

come on Q lie a little you don't want her killing you in front of me do you?

Mom:"and you decided to still make her fall for you, why?"

Mah! We not together at the moment!! Damn he won't be able to answer that

Quinton: "I love her, I couldn't stop"

Aaww my heart melts,he loves me, he told my mother,he loves me!!

At least she has that "I see" face maybe that's a good thing

Mom:"when did you tell her?"

Quinton looks a bit confused

Mom:"about your father" she continues

Quinton: "six months ago"

Mom:"why did you wait that long to tell her?"

YooH ayi this Question and Answer session is getting me on the edge

Quinton: "because I was afraid of loosing her"

She laughs a bit..Alrighty!... I think we making progress

Mom:"and you Lisakhanya? Why are you still with him? Why don't you leave him?"

I guess its my turn to be grilled

Me:"I don't want to leave him"

Okay maybe that came out a bit wrong but its an honest answer

Mom:"you love him that much huh?"

I nod

Me:"yes mah I do"

We look at each other, he winks at me,wow this guy,my mom is right here,hello!?

Mom:"boy you hurt my daughter I'll show you no mercy to you,understood? "

She warns

Quinton: "yes mah, I won't, I would never dream of hurting her"

What's going on here? Is this us getting back together? Is this him giving me a second chance? Someone get me out of the dark here

!

Okay I think mom's attitude towards Quinton has changed, its like they made some sort of truce

I tell mom about Mncedisi and everything that has happened, except the diamond story,I think its best she doesn't know that.

Me:"so yeah they lawyer is still getting the divorce papers ready

Mom:"Nxa that dog,uyandinyanyisa yaz"(he makes me sick)

Me:"I've had enough talking about him...can we not anymore"

we carry on talking about other random stuff and the mood has lightened up

Mom:" Khanya,go to the kitchen and make the man some food "

Alright I get that they cool now,but I don't think

its safe for humanity to leave them alone in the same room,too soon

Me:"but ma we just ate"

Quinton throws me a dead glare

I stand up

I'm chopping uncontrollably as I wonder what is mom talking about I hope she doesn't tell him about my matric drama with my first boyfriend! Oh no,I'm not ready to tell him that, its too much of embarrassment!

Okay fine let me just finish up..

Okay the food is nearly ready ,so let me dish up I put everything on a tray and head to the sitting room and serve them their food.

Mom:"Ah Lisakhanya are you trying to kill us?"

That's mom having difficulty chewing her food

Eh what did I do wrong? I look at Quinton for backup back he has a disgusted look on his

face trying really hard to chew and swallow but I can see its just paining him

Me:"Mah?"

I say looking all kinds of innocent

Mom:"uzobulala umntana wabantu if you keep feeding him this kind is food,what happened? Did the stove break that you had to cook it in the fridge?"

She says as she takes Quinton's plate from him"

Mom:" it's cold and horrible, ufuna ukusibizela lelist yosisi!"

She continues complaining till she disappears to the kitchen

I look at Quinton and we both in stitches! Eish didn't mean for it to taste thaaat bad

Quinton(laughing): "what happened to the food? It tasted like dung"

We can't stop laughing but we trying our hardest to laugh in silence

We wouldn't want mom coming back and thinking we find this whole situation funny

Me:"I'm sorry, its just I was so nervous about you two being in the same room, I thought she was going to chop you up and feed you to Bobby the neighbour's dog"

We trying our best to hold in the laughs but it hard

Quinton: "wow Liss that was some real bad food,is that what you going to cook for me when you angry at me once we married?"

What!!? Marriage!? So he'll marry me someday!? I don't think he heard himself?

Me(laughing): "No honey,when I'm angry at you...you will Starve!!"

He's looking at me like I just stabbed him in the

heat,yoh the drama with this guy!

Quinton: "Ha! Lisa you can't do that to me,what am I to do? You know I can't cook and I can't live on fast food..I'll loose my abs...I thought you loved these abs?"

He says with a stupid grin

Me:"I do love them,I bet you love them too...so you better not make me angry "

Quinton: "you know I'll do my best"

He says leaning over to kiss my forehead,he pulls out but his face is still right in front of mine,his eyes are on my lips I think he want to kiss me on the mouth! Whoa if it were somewhere else I'd be rejoicing I've been waiting for this kiss for months now,but not here

Me:"nanku umama!"(there comes mom!) I shout whisper

Yoh the way he jumps, his hands off me before I can say I'm joking! He just dropped me like I'm a bag of weed nje! Good! not in mom's house

Quinton: "Nx uphi?" (Where?) He asks as he looks at the doorway to the kitchen

Me(giggling): "I was joking, wanted you to leave me alone!"

He looks at me like I'm the biggest scum on earth, like I just committed the most dangerous crime in the history of crimes

I don't think I'll be able to stop laughing

Quinton: "you don't joke like that, I nearly had a heart attack"

He's trying to keep a straight face but is struggling

Mom is back, for real now...this man is such a traitor, when mom comes in with food he stands up and helps with the tray but when I

came in here he with my terrible food he just stared at me nje, just like that mxm

Mom:"Lisa go fetch some hot sauce or mayo,whatever the man likes"

Wow suddenly this man is king now..and I don't understand why couldn't she just put these things on the tray,I mean it'd big enough to fit the whole Madagascar, anyway I obey and go come back with the things

Look at Quinton....busy enjoying mom's food as if its the best food he's ever had in his life,I should just leave him here,they'd make a great couple

Wow can't believe I'm getting jealous of my own mom hayini guys,this guy must've used some voodoo potion on me

Quinton: "So mah,Lisa tells me you used to work for department of education?"

He asks, barley even pausing before putting the next spoonful in his mouth

Mom: "Yes, I used to, but now I'm thinking of starting my own business but I'm trying to save, I don't want to find myself in debts"

Quinton: "oh..I see"

Mom: "what do you do for a living son? are you studying?"

Quinton: "I'm currently doing my masters in Aerospace engineering while working for one of the biggest clubs in Jo'burg"

Mom: "oh, so you make your own money?"

Quinton: "yes mah"

Mom: "mmmh well you do dress like a scholar"

I should probably interrupt now Quinton might find this amusing but he doesn't know my mom like I do, one minutes she'll be telling you you dress like a scholar and the next she'll be full

blown savage telling you your face is too inappropriate for life

Me:"uhm well don't mind me,let's just pretend I'm not here at all"

I get up

Mom:"oh and while you at it Lisa please wash these dishes"

Aaarrgg no man!! I huff and take the dishes with me..they start talking as soon as I'm out of sight..now that's just downright mean! ,I put them in the sink,then make my way outside I go inside the big fenced garden,I walk around right to the far corner,I get down and start digging for the treasure I used to hide for daddy, I find them and they are brown covered in dirt,no more shiny, I put them in my pocket, all fifty of them,I forgot there were this many, I never used to count them,I'd just hide them,these are a lot of diamonds no wonder they are wanted so badly,I

choose ten and leave them behind back in the hole..I head back to the house and wash the dishes quickly

I head back to the lounge and Quinton is already standing up ready to say his goodbyes

Quinton: "izobuye ibonane ke mah" (till me meet again mah)

He stretches for a handshake but mom pulls him in for a hug

Oh wow,what are we? Besties now?

I also go hug mom

Me:"Oh mom...we'll have to do a little ceremony for...."

Mom(interrupts): "I know,Quinton already asked me"

Me:"ooohhh I see"

I look at him and he shrugs,wow

Me:"I'll see you soon neh"

Mom:"okay my baby,drive safely guys"

Me:"we will"

Quinton:"we'll get to discuss that thing more over the phone"

Mom: "yes of cause,we have to"

Okay! That's it! What thing? What's going on here?

We head out and drive away

....

Me:"weeelll?"

Quinton:"well what?"

Me:"that 'thing' "

I'm trying here

Quinton:"what thing?"

Me:"the one we will discuss with mom over the

phone?"

Quinton: "yeah,what about it?"

I scoff I guess he won't tell me

Me:"can't blame a girl for trying "

He burst into laughing, yoh he's laugh...No no I see even Timbuktu couldn't help him

Me:"not funny"

Quinton: "aaww is my nosey bub sulking?"

Yeey! We back to calling me bub! This is by far the best day of my life

Me(smiling): "your bub?"

He smiles

Quinton: "yeah,are you anyone else's"

He glares at me with a threatening yet funny look with his one brow up before looking back at the road

Me:"No,not anyone else's "

Quinton: "good,now say it after me.....Mr
Quinton Ambrose O'Brien..."

He pauses then looks at me...oh I guess this is
the part I repeat

Me" Mr Quinton Ambrose O'Brien"

Quinton: "I promise to respect my mother
always..."

Me:"I promise to respect my mother always "

Quinton: "no matter how angry she makes
me..."

Me:"no matter how angry she makes me "

Quinton: "I'll never ever ever raise my voice at
her"

Me:"I'll never ever ever raise my voice at her"

Quinton: "for she is the Queen of my heart"

Me:"for she is the Queen of my heart "

Quinton: "Mr O'Brien...."

Me:" Mr O'Brien"

Quinton: "if you give me another chance"

Oh my this is happening!

Me:"if you give me another chance "

Quinton: "I promise to hold your heart with care as you do for mine"

Me:"I promise to hold your heart with care as you do for mine "

Quinton: "promise I won't break it on purpose"

Me:"promise I won't break it on purpose "

He sighs and smiles, I guess that's how he's telling me he's giving me another Chance, he holds my hand and kisses it

Quinton: "Oh and Quinton.."

Oh we not done yet?

Me:"oh and Quinton "

Quinton: "you are the most handsome man I've

ever seen"

Okay now that's he's big Ego talking but its fine
I'll let him have this moment

Me:"you are the most handsome man I've ever
seen"

Quinton: "and the sexiest"

Hehehehehe ayi I'm not laughing people!!

Me:"and the sexiest "

I look at him and his brushing his little trimmed
mustache

Quinton: "I love you more than life itself"

Me:"I love you more than life itself "

Quinton: "and to make up for everything..."

Me: "and to make up for everything"

Quinton: "when we get home"

Me:"when we get home"

Quinton: "I will"

Me:"I will"

Quinton: "wash and kiss your feet"

Me:"in your wildest dreams,you big knuckle head! weeeh ayibo!"

He cracks up and laughs

Me:"mxm,idiot!"

[07/29, 07:45] W: Insert 35

LISA

Me: "wow now they look just as shiny as when dad used to give them to me"

Quinton: "Yeah they do,your dad really loved you,to steal so many,just for you"

I think I should tell him

Me:"uhm...well that's not all of them"

He turns to look at me

Quinton: "where are the rest?"

Me:"I left them"

Quinton: "why?"

Me:"I don't know,something in me just told me to leave them"

He sighs then comes to sit next to me

Quinton: "why would you do that?"

Me: "Quinton... My father didn't go through all that trouble and spill his blood just to have all the diamonds he sacrificed for his daughter taken away just like that, then that would mean he died for nothing"

Quinton:"I understand, not that I want all the diamonds, but what will you do with the ones left,its not like you'll need them"

Me:"I left them for dad,he'll know what to do with them"

Quinton: "I understand"

He kisses my cheek I turn my face to look at him

bring my face closer and our lips touch,he starts moving his and we share a slow passionate kiss, I pull out

Quinton: "damn,I missed you"

He kisses me again with more enthusiasm, his body pushes me on the bed to fall on my back, I help myself get further to the centre of the bed with him following my move as he's on top of me, he rests all his weight on me making me feel every part of him, my body is shaking, heart beating out of control, it's like the shivers down my spine have gotten worse to this man's touch, I can't even keep up with my breathing, I can feel his manhood getting harder by the second, he leaves my lips going down my neck tickling me with his tongue making me giggle, he stops and pecks my lips

Quinton: "I love you Lisa"

Me: "I love you more "

He shakes his head

Quinton: "you don't understand"

Me: "I do"

Quinton: "Lisa, I really really love you, it's too

much,you don't understand"

I don't know how to respond to those words
with his eyes searching onto mine

Me: "I might not understand, but I know,what I
feel for you, is beyond any words could
describe"

Quinton: "you've made me realise the true
meaning of love.....its beyond what lays outside
for everyone to see,but its more about what's
on the inside that only you can see and feel for
the person you truly love"

Me:"I'm sorry for everything I've put you through
"

Quinton: "please let me not hear you
apologising about that again,okay?"

I nod

We share yet another kiss

He gets off me

Quinton: "go clean yourself up"

I look at myself and smell myself worriedly

Me:"Do I stink?"

Quinton: "Yes,you suffocating me"

Me(gasps):"weIIll...uhm..you stink more!

You..you big meany!!...stinky stinky

pants..stinky armpits... Stinky stinky

face...everything! Stinky! Like like a a a big fat

uhm Skunk! Yeah that's right skunk!!! Stinky

skunky!"

I storm to the bathroom with my head held high

But I know he's not offended judging by how
he's in stitches

Even banging the side bed table Nx moron

I must say this is one of the fancy showers I've
only seen on T.V

Which questions my thoughts, didn't Quinton
say he hates the money and all the riches his

father used to make? So how is he affording to stay here,I know as damn hell its not the money he makes at the club,which he stopped working there for a while now, so now that I know the truth about everything he feels comfortable using daddy's money? I need answers,but not now,we just got back together and I don't wanna ruin this moment,I missed him so much.

I finish up showering,I walk back to the bedroom and find him seated on the bed all dressed up in his khaki chinos white polka dot short sleeve shirt and instead of a belt he has a khaki suspender over his shoulders and finishes off white vans old skool,his hair has grown a bit into a curly afro, looking all kinds of sexy,although this guy has a big Ego but he sure is right when he says he's the most handsome and sexy man I've ever met and I love him more than life itself

Quinton: "damn girl,I know I'm hot but geez tone

down a little....you messing the floor with all that drool coming out your mouth"

I gasp

Me:"oh please you wish I was drooling"

I turn away and wipe my mouth just to make sure no drool was dripping from it,I hear him laugh. I lotion my body in the bathroom and wear my panty and bra then come back out with a towel wrapped around me

Me:"Quinton... What am I going to wear?"

Quinton: "I think that outfit you already have on is dashing my love,wear that"

Seriously? This guy is an bimbo for real

Me:"I'm serious Q"

Quinton: "did it sound as if I'm joking?"

Me:"so you want me to walk around with a towel all day?"

He smirks

Quinton: "I mean it suits you so perfectly, I've never seen anyone who rocks a towel like you do bub...you the bomb!...the Ish!...the

Me:" the shut up before I strangle you!"

He moves his fingers across his mouth as if he's zipping it then looks down

Quinton: "I thought..."

Me:" zip it"

Quinton: "I was just

Me:" lalalala I'm not listening "

He keeps quiet for a while

Quinton: "I..

Me:" atatata.."

He shuts up defeated

Me:"good,now tell me where are we going? "

He shrugs his shoulders

Me:"so you all dressed up for nothing? "

He makes that "maybe" face

Me:"what...you can't speak now?"

He shrugs, he moves his fingers across his mouth zipping it and throwing away the imaginary key

Me:"okay fine...I give you permission to talk now"

He indicates the keys are lost using his body language

Me:"oh come on Quinton, just open your mouth"

He says I can't with his facial expression and hands..gosh he looks so stupid and cute at the same time

Me:"fine,let me look for them...you threw them that way right?"

I point at the direction he threw the keys

He makes the "I think so" face

I look all over the floor looking for these
"imaginary keys"

Me:"I can't find them Q"

He makes a sad face

Me:"help me look for them "

He gets up and we look for them, we are both
looking down searching for the keys

when our heads bump into each other

Me:"Ooouch!"

He makes the "sorry" face, I look down and
that's when I pretend I see the keys right
between us,he also looks down, we look at each
other in excitement, we get down at once to
grab them but bump our heads again

Me:"Dude!...you have to stop bumping

me..same spot!"

He takes the keys then hands them to me, I takes them and unlock his mouth then unzip it, he breathes out

Quinton: "I can talk...it a miracle I can talk,thank the heavens,thank the Almighty f.

Me:" don't make me zip it again!"

He shut it immediately, I burst into laughter

Me:"we so dumb"

Quinton: "ppsshhh girl please...speak for yourself..don't involve me in your problems"

He made the buzz off sign with his hand like a girl rolling his eyes

Me:"please don't even try changing directions on me...I need you to continue straight as a ruler"

Quinton:"what if I'm the flexible ruler"

I remain quiet and just look at him

Quinton (laughing): "I'm kidding...you should see the look on your face!"

I sigh in relief

Me:"don't play like that,I was actually starting to believe you"

I wasn't really

He comes up to me

Quinton: "do I look gay to you?"

Not a single bit

Me:"its okay to step out of the closet"

Quinton: "what closet? Don't mess with me Lisa"

Me:"I promise I won't judge, you can't hide who you really are forever.....I'll understand...

Really.....(giggling) There's nothing to be ashamed of...."

He shuts me up with a hungry kiss, kissing me so fast, his hands run all over my body grabbing my ass roughly, he picks me up and pins me against the wall, my toes curling, breathe deepening, I feel moist forming in my eyes this kiss is making me emotional its filled with all sorts of emotions, he's moving his waist in circular motion, my body is vibrating, my punani is painful and beating fast, that's how horny I am, his lips leave my mouth his French kissing my nose He leaves my nose to kissing my eyes, I can't stop giggling, while I'm licking his lips and cheeks ,its getting messy and weird I lick him all over his face and so is he on mine, mopping each other up, my hands stroking this soft hair, he pins my hands over my head against the wall and kisses my neck then leaves hickeys all over, he comes up to my face sucking my cheek, is he making hickeys on my face? Even my forehead, I return the favour and suck him all over the face leaving hickeys

I pull out, breathing heavily, that was one of the craziest make out session I've ever had in my life

We look at each other, I look at all the red spots on his light skinned face and burst into laughter

Me(laughing): "guess what!?"

Quinton: "what?"

Me:"you polka face matches you polka shirt"

We crack up and laugh as he let's go of me

Quinton: "well thank you...go get dressed bub,we need to get going, and you just creased my shirt now you'll have to iron it again"

Me: "are you asking me or telling me?"

Quinton:"its an order"

Me:"oh? Well then I'd like a double cheese burger,fries,pork ribs ,stake,pizza,sticky wings,full chicken....oh and some (fancy tone)...hors d'oeuvre?"

I'll never forget that word again after the way it embarrassed me

He bursts into laughter

Quinton: "hours d'oeuvre? I see you'll never forget that day will you?"

Me:"uyaphapha Quinton "

He pulls me close to him and kisses my forehead

Quinton: "and you love me just like that"

Me:"unfortunately "

He chuckles

Me:"let's please have a conversation that's going forward please...now tell me what am I going to wear?"

Quinton: "you can look for something in my closet"

Me:"so you trying to make me a flexible ruler

like you now?"

I laugh,he squints his brows

Quinton: "you know I'm already ready to go so I'll just leave you here"

Me:"okay fine!"

I walk to his closet and look for something to wear, I find a nice pair of grey gym shorts and a black and white mock neck muscle shirt,I decide to wear that then wore his other pair of vans that look like the ones he is wearing, I comb my hair into a loose ponytail, I walk back to the room,I find him pressing his phone

Me:"let's go"

Quinton(looking down on his phone):"thought you died in there"

He looks up at me his jaw drops as he looks at me in awe looking at me up and down slowly

Me(smirks):"like what you see papi?"

I move my waist in circular motion

He looks at my silly face and all the lust and admiration on his face disappears looking at me as though I just lost my mind...I'm kinda a sack dancer I can't dance go save my life,so you can imagine that circular motion...more like Pentagon motion

Quinton: "you make a good addition to the brotherhood"

He stretches out his hand in a fist for us to fist pump

Me:"mxm..let's just go"

I walk ahead of him as we head out the room he spanks my ass making me giggle.. This guy! I'm trying to be mad at him here!

We are now on the road its around 15:30pm

Me: "so where are we going?"

Quinton: "first we going to fetch your stuff in

mncekese's apartment...."

I chuckle will he ever say his name correctly?

Quinton: "then I'm taking you to visit my family"

Me:"but I really don't want to go there...to mnceseke's"

he chuckles

Quinton: "he won't even come close to you if he knows what's good for him"

Me:"he's crazy Quinton, what if he locks us up and keep us hostage,and make us do crazy things?"

I feel my heartbeat racing in fear and my faded bruises aching as if they still there

Quinton: "bub....don't worry about him,he won't touch you,I promise"

He holds my hand which was on my thigh and locks it into his

Quinton: "we won't even waste much time,you'll just take the small valuable things...I noticed you found your birthday gift? You should take it"

Oh no,how am I going to tell him that its no more

I feel tears threatening I let them fall

Quinton: "okay we don't have to go if you don't want to?"

I shake my head

Me:"its not that"

Quinton: "what is it? He has no control over you now he can't touch you,not while I'm still breathing"

Me:"he destroyed it!"

Quinton: "huh?"

Me:"the birthday gift, he took it while I was sleeping and he burnt it! He destroyed it"

Quinton: "he did what?"

I sob

Quinton: "okay...its fine,I have plenty of those pictures I'll make you another one"

I smile faintly and look at him concentrated on the road

Me:"really? "

He nods but anger is written all over his body

Quinton: "tell me everything he did to you....in bed"

Oh it gives me the creeps just thinking about it

Me:"you don't wanna know trust me"

Quinton: "Lisa....tell me"

I take a huge breathe

Me:"he used to cuff me to the bed,tie my body with ropes,he would put all different sizes of dildos in my vajina"

He makes a disgusted face

Me:"he'd clip painful metal things on my nipples and my Vj clits,then he'd fuck me uncontrollably, he'd pour his cum all over my body and cover my face with it,sometimes he'd blindfold me and cover my mouth with a ball gag while he ties a head harness around my head.....(crying).... He'd he'd sometimes fuck me in the anal hole!"

Quinton:"okay....okay.....its okay.....its okay.....if that's how he likes it its okay"

He wipes tear drops that managed to escape his eye,the hurt in his facial expression is not hard to miss so is the range

We get to the apartment and his car is parked outside

Me:"he's home....Quinton... I'm scared "

Quinton: "you with me now,he can't touch you"

He gets out and I stay inside he comes around to open the door for me and pulls me out I reluctantly get out,he knocks at the door ,I hear his voice talking as it gets closer,I hold onto Quinton's arm,he opens our eyes lock,I feel warm rush of blood flush down and I instantly become cold

He's on the phone

Mnce:"I'll call you back"

....

Mnce:"yeah yeah do whatever you want"

He drops the call

He smiles at me,that evil smile that once charmed me

Mnce:"khanya? You back"

Me(quivering):"I.I just..

Quinton: "we here to pick up her stuff....if you don't mind?"

They look at each other equally dangerously like they about to jump on each other after the count of THREE!....that's how ready they are

Mnce:"you can come in...khanya"

He makes sure he's only referring to me

My feet are glued to this spot,I'm not going in there alone with him

Quinton: "I'm here to help her so if you could just make way for us to come in.....please"

He adds a sarcastic pleading

Mnce:"this is mine and Lisa's house and you not welcome"

Quinton (chuckles): "crazy nigger get out of our way"

He bumps him as he pulls my frozen self inside with him

Surprisingly Mncedisi doesn't fight him

I head to the room leaving them in the sitting room

QUINTON

Me: "aren't you going to offer your guest something to drink?...you have some really good whiskey, I must say you have some taste"

Mnce: "you've had my whiskey? "

Me (laughing): "don't cry....I only had one glass...but if it makes you so sad..I'll buy you a new bottle,before you go running to

daddy,snitching that I stole his baby's formula"

I laugh...man I enjoy making fun of this guy,just waiting for the moment he'll burst and try to punch me or something, but I guess he's too much of a coward to fight a man he'd rather fight thew women who can't fight back...I feel like strangling the psychopathic life out of him...all in due time Quinton..calm down beast within me..calm down....he really disgusts me jokes aside,he makes my insides turn,literally!

Mnce: "if you going to have a big mouth,I suggest you get out my house"

Me:"whoaaa let's not get emotional now...all because of whiskey? No man,I think we have better things we could fight about"

He clicks his tongue and makes his way to the room,I'm guessing he's going to Lisa, I see him closing the door behind as he enters..I follow

and stand next to the door to eavesdrop ,Lisa must be so freaking out right now.

LISA

I'm so freaking out right Now! He standing against the door watching me pack my stuff

Mnce:"So you really leaving me?"

I ignore him,moving as fast as I can,just dumping everything in my suitcase

Mnce(somberly):"please don't leave me"

He walks closer,I swear my heart is about to pop right out through my chest and I'm perspiring

Mnce:"I'm sorry about everything..... Therapy is really going well,I know how to control myself now"

He takes a shirt from the clothes and folds it then puts it in the suitcase

Mnce:"I don't know what's wrong with me,why do I always hurt the people I love the most....I hate myself,cause I love you so much Lisa"

If this were the old Lisa I would actually believe the words coming out his mouth,but this Lisa is disgusted and wants to get away from this man as far as possible

Mnce:"please give me another chance Lisa,I don't want to loose you"

I gather up my scarce courage

Me:"You never loved me Liam...when you first met me,you didn't fall in love,you just saw a weak little girl who you'll make your next sex project....(takes a deep breathe)...I hate you Liam,I hate you for everything you put me through, I hate the day I ever met you,I hate your father I hate you so much..hate hate hate hate hate that's all I feel for you!"

Mnce:"please don't say that,Khanya,you the best thing that's ever happened to me "

Me:"and you the worst thing that's ever happened to me.....even after everything you put me through, with the sex and beating me up when you angry or things didn't go your way..you still go ahead and cheat on me...you cheat on me with Lulama,I know you didn't respect me but I thought I'd actually start to learn to love you,but its obvious I was nothing but a piece of trash to you,how many other women have you slept with then came back to

sleep with me? Huh how many?...You bloody sex freak"

I see him getting angry

Me:"You crazy..!"

Mnce:"I'm not!"

Me: "You are..You crazy and you should be locked up!"

Mnce(shouts): "I'm. Not. Crazy!"

He holds my shoulders tightly shaking me...my eyes pop out as the anger on his face brings back all the flashbacks of the evil things he did to me

Mnce(violently): "I'm. Not. Crazy"

"Get your filthy hands off her!!"

He grabs him with his clothing from behind and pushes him violently towards the wall where he hit his head and groans in agony

I quickly close my suitcase...while Quinton is busy kicking him on the stomach multiple times, he throws his leg over him grabs his shirt with his one hand while the other is punching the daylights out of him,till he was covered with blood all over,he passed out but Q continued punching him

Me(spooked):"Quinton! You killing him!"

Quinton: "he must die!! He deserves to die!! Son of a bitch!"

He's punching him unmercifully

Me(crying): "Not in your hands! Quinton! Please! Not in your hands!"

He stops and looks up at me,while I'm crying on my knees pleading him to not kill him

Me:"Please!....don't kill him"

He gets up and spits on him,I think he's already dead

Quinton: "I stopped.... Okay? I stopped"

He says coming slowly towards me,he gets down on his knees in front of me and holds me enduringly into his embrace

Quinton: "sshhh don't cry...please don't cry"

I pull away from him as I look at Liam's still body covered in blood

Me:"Quinton... You killed him?"

He shrugs

I move closer to liam I shake his body trying to wake him up

Me:"please don't die...please,not in the hands of the man I love....wake up you big jerk! You can't die this easily! Wake up!!"

He coughs ..oh thank goodness,I turn to look at Quinton

Me:"he's alive....let's go"

I get up and we rush out of the house

The drive is silent,we both still trying to process everything.

I know Quinton is probably involved in shady things, but my mind and heart still can't bring me to believe that he's capable of killing?

Taking a life? Murderer?No not my love bug he's too kind and loving for that.

I glance at him as he's concentrated on the road looking as angry as ever

He holds my hand and glances back at me

Quinton: "are you okay?"

I sigh

Me:"I'm fine"

Why do we always say we fine even though we clearly aren't?

Quinton:"I know you not fine,you'll never be fine while he's still breathing,obsessed and wanting

you back"

Me:"please don't kill him Quinton.. Not you"

Quinton: "I won't kill him"

Me:"promise me you won't "

Quinton:....

he takes my hand and squeezes it before
kissing it gently

Quinton: "I promise"

.

.

.

to be continued

[07/29, 08:39] W: Insert 36

LISA

He parked outside the house and we sat in the car for a while trying to calm ourselves down before going in to have dinner with his family, we had to pass by his house though so he changed cause his other clothes had a bit of blood stains he wore an outfit close to the one I'm wearing, but instead of shorts he wore long pants and a mock neck muscle shirt

...

Quinton:"okay you've been down since that incident with the psycho.. Come on,I need that mood we had going on earlier, please smile"

Me(fake smiles):"I'm good Quinton "

Quinton: "don't fake smile me"

Me(genuine smile):"I'm not"

Quinton: "now you not"

Quinton: "come...give me a kiss"

He leaned towards my face with his lips pouted and eyes closed

Me:"say the magic word"

He opened one eye

Quinton: "come one just kiss me already"

Me:"nah,uh not until you say the magic word "

He sighs

Quinton(mutters):"please "

Me:"I didn't get that?"

I move my ear towards his lips

Quinton (quietly): "please"

Me:"sound like you saying,never mind forget I said anything?"

Quinton:"please please please pretty please with a cherry on top!"

I laugh at him when he just bluntly kisses me while I'm laughing, obviously I kiss him back,until I pull out since he wasn't planning into anytime soon

Quinton: "your hickeys are vanishing..let me do them again"

Me:"No! I'm not about to go into your parent's home with hickeys all over my face! You crazy?"

Quinton: "about you,yes"

Me:"cliché "

He laughs,then pulls me unexpectedly for another kiss,he moves to my cheek and sucks it for dear life,which was kinda painful and nice at the same time

Quinton: "there you go"

Me:"Quinton! Why did you do that?... I'm not going in there looking like this..at least not alone"

I pull him for another kiss, I suck him on his cheek bone right next to the eye

Me:"aahh yeah you look....uhm artistic "

He laughs

Quinton: "you to my love...let's go inside,shall we? My artistic madarm"

Me:"Yes sir"

He gets out then comes around to open the door for me,out of all the upgrade this man has done,he still drives this old golf,he loves it so

much,I don't think he'll ever get rid of it

He takes my hand and starts walking but I refrain myself as I stand next to the car,cause I just realized how nervous I suddenly am

Quinton: "let's get inside"

I shake my head

Quinton: "what's the matter?"

Me:"I just remembered, your family hates me"

Quinton: "that's why I bought you here,to stop their stinking attitudes"

Me:"you'll say that?"

Quinton (chuckles): "well not in exact words"

Me:"you can say whatever but it won't make them change how they feel about me"

He moves closer to me

Quinton: "they don't hate you bub"

Me:"they do"

Quinton: "they don't"

Me:"they do"

Quinton: "they don't"

Me(sighs):"they do"

He chuckles

Quinton: "you so cute when you talk like a baby"

Me:"mxm,take me back to your place "

Quinton: "you mean our place,please start calling it home"

Me:"please take me home"

Quinton: "No"

He turns his back on me then forces a piggy ride,he let's himself inside after pressing some buttons by the door

Quinton: "Honey I'm hooome!!"

Candra comes running down the stairs,he puts me down as he opens his arms wide to hold

Candra in a hug

Candra: "I missed you I love you you the best brother in the world....so did you bring that thing I asked for?"

Quinton: "wow,such genuine love sis"

She laughs then becomes serious immediately

Candra: "did you?"

Quinton: "I've been really busy,will get it some other time"

She finally looks at me as I was standing behind Quinton, he turns and holds my hand

Candra: "what is she doing here?"

Quinton: "took me a while to be in this good mood sis...please don't ruin it"

Candra: "the others are at the back"

She leads us to the back yard where there's her mother and two other gentlemen that look like

his brothers

The younger one who looked more white than the rest came up to us

I'm guessing he must be Aidan

Totally ignoring Quinton he comes up to me and pulls me in a hug

Aidan:"Hey Lisa...its so good to finally meet you"

I hesitate before I hug him back for quite a while,like he's missed me so much

Me:"great to finally meet you too Aidan"

Quinton: "that's enough Aidan"

He let's go,he smirks as he points at Quinton with his head and eyes making me laugh

Aidan:"I must say I knew you were pretty,but I thought my bro was exaggerating when he said you look even more beautiful in person.... Guess he wasn't "

My cheeks heat up

Me(blushing): "aaww thank you...I see the handsomeness runs in the O'Brien DNA"

He chuckles sticking his tongue out,

Aidan(brushing his cheeks): "weelll as you can see"

I guess the Ego is also in the DNA..I roll my eyes

Aidan pulls me away from Quinton's hands and leads me to the griller where the older brother was flipping pork chops which made my tummy grumble, I don't remember eating after since breakfast..He's too concentrated on what he's typing on his phone while his other hand is holding a tong patting the meat with it

Aidan: "please don't burn the meat again, I'm tired of eating pork rocks every time you grill"

He quickly finishes off pressing his phone before putting it in his pocket and looks at

us,his eyes meet mine before he could utter a word to Aidan

Aidan: "I know right? That was my first reaction"

Clyde: "so he wasn't exaggerating after all"

He puts the tong down then walks closer to me,he looks so buff with his tattooed arms and neck and piercing blue eyes

Clyde: "I'm Clyde"

Me:"I'm Lisa"

Clyde: "I know"

Me:"okay"

Clyde: "should I hug you or handshake you?"

Me:"anyone"

Clyde: "I'll hug you?"

Me: "sure"

He gets closer and opens his arms wide he wraps them around my shoulder suffocating my

face on his hard chest, I freeze saying a silent prayer that he doesn't squash me to death

Me(whispering): "oh holy Jesus I didn't mean to squash that spider the other week please forgive me,this can't be my karma"

I hear Aidan laughing then someone separates us

Quinton: "that's enough hugs for one day"

He pulls me to him

Clyde is like a robot or something he doesn't express much feelings,his smile lasts for only two seconds then disappears, he looks very intimidating and I thought Quinton was the most intimidating person I know,He got nothing on Clyde

Aidan(laughing): "Clyde here almost squashed your girl like the spider she squashed a few weeks back"

Quinton (confused): "what?"

Me: "never mind him love bug"

Aidan (laughing): "Love bug!?"

Quinton: "shut up Aidan..and no one else is allowed to call me that,or I'll rip y'all heads open and make y'all eat your brains"

Me: "eeeww"

Aidan continues laughing

Aidan (laughing): "okay...Love Bug!"

He runs away towards the others

Clyde chuckles

Quinton: "such an idiot"

Me(mumbling): "he's definitely your bro"

Quinton: "you said something bub?"

Me: "huh? Wasn't me"

Quinton: "really?"

He throws me over his shoulder and runs towards the others, I keep spanking his butt shouting him to put me down

He puts me down and we both try to catch our breaths

I look up to be met by Candra and her mother looking at me disapprovingly, I stand up straight and cut my laughter short

We all sit around the table Clyde comes with the meat,takes off his apron

Quinton's mom said grace

I was sitting in between Aidan and Clyde, Quinton is across me in the middle of his mother and sister...I wanted him to sit next to me but Candra called him to sit next to them

Q's mom:"Quinton baby,are you settling in well in the penthouse?"

Quinton: "yes mom,I am...even though you

forced me to stay there, but yeah I am"

Aidan: "how long were you planning on playing poor anyway?"

Quinton: "until I make my own money"

Mom: "I get that you want to be independent but after what happened, almost losing you, I can't afford you staying in a rotten place like the one you were staying at"

Quinton: "I get it mah, but I can take care of myself"

Candra: "not while the girl who hurt you and almost got you killed is still alive"

She gives me a nasty look

Mom: "and making you go to that horrible hide out"

My heart sinks as I look down and play with my food

Quinton: "now..that's not true, it wasn't her

fault..it was the Johnson's"

Candra:"yeah but she's the one who..."

Quinton (clenched jaws):"shut. up. Candra"

Clyde: "speaking of the Johnson's... Did you send those people yet?"

I look up at Quinton and he's looking at me then he looks at Clyde

Quinton: "Not yet..still waiting for the papers first"

Clyde: "you mean the de....."

Quinton(interrupting):"Anyway!...uhm can you please pass me the salt bub"

I take it and give him,he holds my hands for a while, sending those chills down my spine

Aidan: "aaahhh young love"

We laugh...he's the youngest and most bubbly here,well he looks my age or maybe one year

older..while Clyde is probably three years older than Quinton

Q's mom:"Quinton baby,you remember Sydney?"

Quinton: ". Sydney fox...how can I forget"

Aidan: "did you have to bring her up mom"

Candra: "ohh I remember Sydney... Your old friend since primary till high school"

Q's mom: "and the first girl he's ever bought home"

Okay,I'm guessing they doing this on purpose, I won't let it get to me,You are strong Lisa! You are Powerful! You are beautiful! Quinton loves You!

Quinton: "mom,why are you bringing her up?"

Q's mom: "I wanted to let you know she's on town, I bumped into her a few days ago and she said I must say hi..so I gave her your

number,she said she'll call you when she gets time,so y'all can catch up"

Candra: "wow..that girl has got real class,her make up business is booming on social media and YouTube... She even works with celebrities all over the world...oh my gosh bro when y'all catch up please invite her over I'd love her to try some of her talent on me"

Clyde (clears throat):"Candra ..."

He warns

Quinton: "that's enough!..mom...Candra... Is it because y'all too blind to see that my girlfriend is sitting right here around this dinner table with us? How can y'all say things like that in front of her? She has feelings you know...and she's not deaf or invisible... I don't appreciate y'all disrespecting her presence like that...now I'm asking y'all with all due respect...please respect her presence...okay?"

It goes quiet,I find myself falling in love a thousand times with him

Q's mom: "I just don't understand why you with her..She broke your heart,She easily gave up on,she doesn't love you,she's from a poor family she's just going to suck....

He bangs the table

" ENOUGH!!!"

Quinton: "So what!? So what if she did all those things or is still going to do more hurtful things So what!?,.....She did them to me,not you not Candra or anyone else but me..and look at me I'm perfectly fine,I forgave her cause I love her...I love her no matter what,she can suck my bank account for all I care,its our life,I'll still love her,nothing will ever change the way I feel for Lisakhanya Mthethwa.....and if any of y'all has a problem with that....tough"

He comes around towards me

Quinton: "let's go Liss,I thought time with family would be the best way to end the evening after the long bad day.....I guess today is just not our day"

I get up and walk out with him

"Wait"

We turn when we were almost by the car

Aidan: "can I crash at your crib tonight?"

Quinton: "why?"

Aidan: "long story"

Quinton:"whatever"

We get in and head home not in silence...Aidan has a running funny mouth,got me in stitches the whole way releasing all the tension that we left with

We got home

Me(shouting):"Nellla! We home!"

Aidan:"Nella?"

Me:"yeah,my best friend, she's staying with us until...she gets her life sorted out"

Aidan: "oohh.....(whispers)...is she hot?"

I laugh

Me:"Yes..and gay"

Aidan: "damn! Exactly my type"

Me(perplexed): "you gay?"

Aidan (laughing): "No..but I can change a gay girl into my girl"

I laugh out loud

Me:"Yonela!!...come down girl,there's someone you need to meet!"

She still doesn't come down

Me:"aaw guess she's sleeping, you'll see her in the morning "

Aidan: "that's cool,so I'll be taking the master

bedroom while y'all take the guest room right?
Man y'all too kind"

Quinton comes in puts him under his arms and
rubs his head with his fist

They have some boy brotherly fight going on
I laugh at their stupidity and head upstairs to
check on yonela,I knock by the door of her
bedroom but she ignores me so I just make my
way in and the light are off

Me:"wow someone went to bed with the
chickens today"

I switch on the light and she's not in her bed

Me:"okay....?"

I look all over the house and she's not here...I go
down stairs,I find Quinton and Aidan having
beers chilling by the kitchen counter

Me:"Quinton "

He turns and face me

Me:"Yonela is not in the house and she didn't tell me she would go anywhere?"

Quinton: "don't panic I'm sure she's here somewhere... This is a big house"

My whole body shivers in fear,I close my eyes and hear her voice crying for help.....I feel someone shake me..I open my eyes wide

Quinton: "are you okay bub?"

Me:"she's in trouble Quinton, they going to kill her"

Quinton: "who? What are you talking about?"

Me:"I think I just had some sort of vision, but it was very blurry,I couldn't see anything just heard her screaming "

He looks at me perplexed while holding my arms

My phone rings as a message comes through

I take it from my pocket

Its a a bunch of pictures from an unknown number

I look up at Quinton

Quinton: "what is it?"

I shrug as I open it,I stare at them for a few seconds and my whole body froze as the phone slipped from my hands

I look up at him as my eyes fill up with tears and my whole world stands still as my ears go deaf

(Echoing voices) "Lisa'a'a'a?....are you..okaya'a'a.....Lisa'a'a!??

.

.

.

to be continued

[07/29, 08:45] W: continuation

LISA

"Lisa!"

I snapped out of it

Me:"huh?"

Quinton: "Aidan get her water!"

He helps me sit down

Quinton:"what happened? What did you see?"

Me:"the pictures... They..Yonela is dead"

His eyes pop out

My phone rings from the floor he flys to pick it up

Aidan hands me the glass of water and helps me drink

Quinton: "its a video call"

He swipes and answers it

A tied up nude Yonela covered in blood pops up

Me:"Yonela!"

She's looking on down

"Look at the camera bitch!"

A voice from behind shouts

She lifts her face up and looks at the camera

Me:"Yonela...baby... Do you know where you

are?"

Her one eye is swollen and closed the other one is a bit open

She shakes her head

"You can't use your big mouth now? Talk bitch,tell them how you about to die because of your big mouth!"

Me(crying):"Yonela!"

"Tell them!"

She sniffs

Yonela: "I'm going to die any minute now....(sobs)...Please tell mom I love her,even though we had a fight yesterday about my sexuality...tell her I'm sorry,the last thing I wanted was....was to disappoint her....(sobs)...I love you Lisakhanya,I love you with all my heart baby girl,Quinton, thank you for everything you are a very loving person, I know you'll take good

care of my baby girl....(sobs)...till we meet again
friend"

"Aaww...very touching last words,times up"

He turns the camera and Liam's face pops up

Me(spooked):"You!..You did this!!...Bring her
back you monster!"

Mnce(laughing): "look who's tough
now,Quinton?... Look I'll make you a generous
deal okay?..(laughs)..even though you don't
deserve my generosity"

Mnce:"remember those words
Quinny?(laughs)oh I just love it when the tables
turn "

Quinton: "what do you want?"

Mnce:"don't rush me! Daddy never taught you
manners?...(laughs)..patience man"

Quinton: "I get it...you mocking me...now just
get to the point"

Aidan has disappeared

Mnce:"well...firstly I know you have the diamonds, I want them,secondly...Lisa and I aren't getting a divorce she comes back to me,where she belongs "

Quinton: "fine"

Me:"what?"

Mnce: "what?"

Quinton: "it's fine...you can have the diamonds...
But not Lisa"

Mnce:"aaww how sweet you think you have options.... With Lisa or your friend here dies"

Quinton: "kill her...then you won't get neither the diamonds nor Lisa...and you would've killed her for no reason,just a waste of your time,strength and bullets"

Mnce:"okay...so I can only have one?"

Quinton: "yes"

Mnce:"keep the diamonds... I'll have Lisa"

Quinton: "are you sure?"

Mnce:"yes"

Quinton(sighs):"okay then..of that's what you want"

Me:"Quinton!"

He looks at me

Quinton: "I'm sorry bub..but a deal is a deal"

Being stabbed in the back is worse than being stabbed on the heart

he must've lost his idiotic mind!

Me:"tell me you Joking please"

He looks back at the camera

Quinton:"name the place and time...you give me Yonela and I'll give you Lisa "

I hear Yonela screaming in the background

"Nooo!! Quinton!! Don't do it..its a trap!"

Mnce: "shut that bitch up"

I hear her groan in agony

Mnce:"that'll teach her to keep her mouth shut"

He looks back to us

Mnce:"oh sorry about that,where were we....oh yeah,I'll send you the place you should be in

twenty minutes... And if you dare think you can try funny things,think again....oh hey

Khanya...you see your so called boyfriend never loved you,it was always about the diamonds, getting back what so rightfully belongs to the O'Briens hahahaha...ooohhhh I promise I'll treat you much better,beautiful... Chow"

He drops the call....I punch Quinton multiple times on his very hard back

Me:"you Jerk! You just going to give me up like that?...nyi nyove nyou my foot...you never loved

me!"

He holds my hands and makes me hug him

Quinton: "sshhhhh"

I don't know why but I obey and hug him tightly

Quinton: "we not going anywhere"

Me: "but...the deal? The place?..time?....yonela?"

Quinton: "everything will make sense in a few minutes,Aidan shall call any minute now"

Me:"how do.....

phone ringing

Quinton: "have to take this..it Aidan"

He let's go off me and stands up as he answers the phone leaving me dumbfounded

QUINTON

Me: "Aidan the cheater...got him?"

Aidan: "yeah,good move on keeping him distracted for long over the phone"

Me: "Yeah well it wasn't that hard...he's a real crackhead"

Aidan: "I'll get Nella back there while Clyde takes him to the warehouse"

Me: "good,you hurry back here,so I'll go have fun with Clyde while you take care of the girls"

Aidan (groans): "I hate and love my duty at the same time....I want to have fun with you an Clyde...but I also wanna keep an eye and play Superman with girls"

I laugh

Me:"just get back here"

I turn to be met by a beautiful yet very confused señorita

Me:"Aidan is on his way back with Yonela...then y'all take her to the hospital, okay?"

Lisa:"Quinton... What is going on? How did you...? When?...what's going on?"

Me:"while he was busy making threats and demanding things like a spoilt prince Aidan tracked where his call was coming from sent it to Clyde and they now got him"

Lisa(sighs):"whoa that was quick thinking "

Me: "you always have to be quick when dealing with people like this bub...once things have settled a bit,I'll be training you,okay?"

Lisa: "training me?...to do what?"

Me:"anything, self-

defense,shooting,hacking,using certain gadgets.. Everything.... I need you to be tough,and strong Lisa, I need a strong woman beside me...this is how life for us will be like most of the time,after the Johnsons they'll be more people, the cycle never ends"

Lisa:"you mean,things like this will happen all the time?"

Me:"not all the time... But I need you to be fit and strong "

She looks at me for a while

She nods

Lisa:"I want you to teach me everything "

Me:"that's my girl"

I pull her close for a kiss

"Wow and they still make time for romance...you guys inspire me"

We pull out..

Me:"Lisa ,Aidan get Yonela to the hospital... I have somewhere I need to be"

I peck her lips once more then turn but she holds my arm

Lisa:"do whatever you need to do with him.."

I look at her and see the hatred burning in her eyes

Me:"you sure?"

She nods,I cup her face as I lay a kiss on her forehead

Lisa:" Just be careful...and drive safely "

Me:"I love you"

Lisa:"I love you more"

"Gee wiz...its not like someone is loosing a lot of blood and can die any minute now...so lets spare a few minutes for Titanic part two"

I run out and spank Aidan as I pass him

I drive as fast as I can to the warehouse.. Today came earlier than I anticipated... The day I teach that son of a bitch a lesson he'll never forget,that's if he'll still be alive to remember it,once I'm done with him

.....

I walk in and they have him tied up, I watch as they suffocate him with a towel and pouring water on his face making it difficult for him to breath

He screaming like a girl..I laugh before making my way further in

"Enough, people... I'd like to have a word with my spoilt prince here"

They leave him

Guy 1:"sho sho boza yam"

Guy2:"awu..skhulu.."

I take a chair and sit in front of him

He starts laughing out loud

Me: "No need to act all tough in front of me big guy,I already heard your girly screams"

Mnce:"we had a deal!!"

I chuckle

Me:"Deal? I don't remember shaking hands with you? Or signing any contract....sooo no we had no deal"

Mnce:"you were supposed to bring my Lisa.. Where is she?"

Me:"wow...(moving my index finger in circular on the side of my forehead).someone is totally Loco"

Mnce:"you going to pay for double crossing me!!"

I start laughing I look around and the others also join in

Me(laughing): "right after you pay for messing with what's mine, right?"

Me:"you pay for your sins..then when I'm done with you,that's if you still alive,I'll pay for mine....deal"

I stretch my hand for a handshake but he spits on me making me angry

I punch his face he groans

Me:"don't piss me off...you know what,too late,I'm already pissed"

I get up and order the guys to strip him naked

Clyde comes back with his electrical equipment looking ready to have fun

There was a time when I hated all this

But today...I've never been more excited

Clyde:"got some chemistry... (Chuckles)....get it? Cause its electronic and stuff"

No one laughs,he shoots them all his deadly glare,everyone pretends to be laughing their guts out while I laugh at him for real...he chuckles once more as he sets up his stuff

Mnce:"No..what is that?..what are you going to do to me!?"

Me:"dude, chill man...so much noise"

Mnce:"y'all not going to get away with this...my father is coming after his diamonds and your precious little Lisa will be history! "

Clyde: "can someone get daddy's baby his dummy and shut him up..please!"

The guys laugh

I sit right in front of him

Me:"now tell me,what's taking you so long to sign the damn papers?"

Mnce(laughs)..you thought.... You thought I was really going to sign those ridiculous

papers?...HA! Never!"

Me:"I see you love doing things the hard way....Clyde? "

Clyde: "yeah?"

Me:"is Mrs Grey on the way"

Clyde: "yep,should be here any second now"

Just then the door busts open and she walks in with two men beside her

I get up and walk to her

Me:"Miss lawyer,thanks for coming in such a short notice"

Her:"please call me Pearl,and its not a big deal I'm still around anyway"

She says tilting her head to look behind me

Pearl:"I see he's getting it the hard way?"

Me:"he just doesn't listen,now you see what I have to deal with?"

Her phone rings

Pearl: "Oh Moses...that's my husband, have to take this"

...

Pearl: "I'm on my way bubu"

...

Pearl: "whatever your highness"

She hangs up

Pearl: "sorry about that"

She takes out a pocket file with the papers

Pearl: "there you go"

Me: "thank you very much, Pearl"

Pearl (nods) "you welcome.... Goodnight gentlemen"

She walks out

I walk back to them and he's now locked on the

electric chair with Clyde carrying picana
electrica ready to roast his brain

I sit in front of him

Me:"you know you don't have to go through this
if you just apologise like a good boy and sign
the papers"

Mnce:"not happening! Lisakhanya is mine and
will forever be mine!"

I feel my stomach turning

Me:"just sign the damn papers!"

Mnce:"No!"

Me:"I really don't like begging.. So fine,we'll have
it your way"

I nod at Clyde, he gives me a devilish smile,he
loves these things.

He presses a button of the electric chair

He screams in agony as he goes through the

shock

Me:"still don't want to sign the papers?"

He just looks at me,I nod at Clyde

He electrifies him together with the chair and
pacana on his head

His eyes flip as his brain is being toasted

I indicate Clyde to stop

Me:"just sign the papers while you can still use
your hands"

He keeps quiet still trying to catch his breath

I nod at Clyde

Mnce:"wait!"

Me:"oh wait...yes mnceshisticks, we waiting? "

Mnce:"I'll sign the damn papers... She's not
worth it anyway"

Me:"are you insulting my girl?"

Mnce:"she's damaged good,I stretched her pussy wide,she's just a pathetic tasteless bi.....

Clyde electrifies him before he could finish his dirty sentence, he goes on for a while till I tell him to stop

Me:"you were saying? "

He shakes his head. I put the papers in front of him and hand him the pen,he can't even hold it properly as he is shaking...he scribbles his signature

Me:"that wasn't so hard now was it?"

Mnce:"just let me go...you got what you wanted"

Me:"oh..that was just half of it....now for your real punishments "

Clyde: "this one will teach you never to lay your filthy hands on our women..we busy taking care of them while you scumbag good for nothing mother fucking asshole go around beating up

and rearranging their beautiful faces.....let's see how you like it"

He takes him from the electric chair and makes him lay down on a big wooden bench with his tummy as he ties his hands around the bench making him hug it he does the same for his legs

Me:"Now...you used your filthy hands to beat Lisa up,rearranged he pretty face into a zombie face,then you clip all sorts of your kinky bondage stuff on her body leaving her with scares and marks...then the worst part you rape her..your own wife whom you had the right to sleep with like a normal person and you go ahead and rape her,you put...you put dildos in her tiny pussy as if you dumping them in the great hole of Kimberly... (He chuckles)

Clyde: "you think this is funny cock-sucking-mother-fucking-son-of-a-bitch!!?"

Me:"we'll see who'll be laughing once I'm done

with you....Clyde do your thing"

He beats him up making sure he leaves his face unrecognizable

He brings in his men,they all butt naked and horny as hell

Me:"lets see how you like being fucked in the anal,since that's how you like it,right?"

They come in with all the kinky bondage equipment, whipping his ass,dripping candles on his back

Me(laughing):"oh oh make him use those safe words they use"

Clyde: "what were Lisa's safe words?"

He keeps quiet sobbing

Mnce:"please...I'm sorry,please don't make them fuck me"

I burst into laughter as I walk up to the table and take a video camera

Me:"let's take a video for daddy shall we..show him how his son is enjoying his nasty little hobby"

I sit and watch as they do all sorts of disgusting things with him

Me:"think I'm gonna throw up.....I'm outta here"

Clyde: "should I finish him off?"

I look at him for a while

""please don't kill him Quinton.. Not you"

"I won't kill him"

promise me you won't "

"I promise"

Me:"do whatever "

I walk out and head back home

[07/29, 08:48] W: Insert 37

LISA

Its been hours Aidan and I just sitting here waiting on the doctors to tell us what's going on

Me:"its been hours...what's going on in there"

Aidan:"I'm sure she's okay,she looks like a strong woman"

Me:"she is"

I say as tears escape my eye

He moves closer to him,he stretches his arm over me making me rest on his chest

Aidan:"all will be well,soon,you'll see"

Me: "my life just seems like a never ending thriller movie,I can't get peace"

Aidan: "peace is for the dead Lisa,this is earth, full of corrupted greedy living souls"

Those words moved in me and rose a lot of anger

"Yonela Griffins?"

We jumped up towards the doctor

Me:"yes doctor?"

Aidan:"is she okay? "

Doc:"she's fine,just a broken arm and cracked jaw and nose,but she'll heal with time"

Me:"is she awake?"

Aidan: "can we see her?"

Doc:"she's not awake but yes,you can see her"

He leads us to her ward

Me:"yonela...babe,I'm so glad you okay,although you not fine but you okay"

I hold her hand

Aidan: "but you are..fine"

Me:"I never knew the thought of loosing you would affect me this much,you mean the world to me yonela"

Aidan: "and the thought of loosing you when we haven't even met...really took a toll on me"

I look at him he has a serious face on him

Me:"really dude?"

Aidan: "oh...sorry....had a moment"

Me:"could you not hit on her while she's on the death bed?"

"Take more than a death bed to get rid of me"

Me(excited): "Hallelujah!! She's awake!"

"Aaaaaameeen!!"

We look at the door and Quinton makes his way
in dancing all holy

Aidan gets up and joins him

Aidan(singing): "Amen!"

Quinton(singing): "Hallelujah!"

Aidan: "Amen!!"

Quinton: "hallelujah!!"

They doing some weird dance, got yonela and I
in stitches

Yonela: "guys...please stop.....it painful"

They laugh, do a handshake then come towards
us as we sit next to her bed with Quinton next
to me and Aidan opposite

Yonela: "how did I even get here?"

I looked at Aidan who has stupid grin on his face

Me:"all thanks to Aidan,he managed to hack the call while we were still busy on the phone"

She looks at Aidan and smiles

Yonela: "thanks"

For the first time since I've met him he flashes a decent smile

Aidan: "you welcome"

She sighs and looks at us

Yonela: "thank you too guys,for everything"

Quinton: "don't mention it"

Me:"you family, we'll always protect you and be there for you"

Quinton: "yeah,plus I should be apologising for not having tight security...I should get that fixed"

Yonela: "its not your fault... I hate the Johnsons with all that's in me"

Aidan(smirks): "looks like we have something in common"

She turn to look at him

Aidan winks at her

She looks at me

Yonela: "okay..who is this guy again?"

Me(laughing):"that would be Aidan,Quinton's crazy younger brother"

Yonela: "crazy....I got that part"

Aidan: "crazy for you mamasitas"

Quinton: "Aidan...(shakes his head)...not the time man...cut it out"

Aidan: "but yonela and I were having a moment"

Yonela: "yeah...count me out"

He holds his chest

Aidan: "my first heartbreak.... I wish someone had warn me it'd be this bad"

She laughed

Yonela: "are you sure this is the guy who saved my life?"

Me:"yeap... That's him"

Quinton: "unfortunately"

Aidan (singing):"I can be your hero baby,...I can kiss away the pain....lalalalalalala"

We burst into laughter

Yonela (laughing): "Yoh ayi mna I can't deal"

She flinches in pain

Me:"Aidan, stop your craziness she's still in pain,you can't have her laugh this much "

Quinton: "you wouldn't wanna kill her with laughter after so much trouble saving her life"

Yonela: "I think I'm better now,I don't wanna

spend the night here,its not safe"

Me:"but the doctor said you....

Yonela:"forget the doctor.. There's people out there who probably still looking for me and won't stop till I'm dead,please don't leave me here"

I look at Quinton

Quinton: "get her ready while I have a word with the doctor"

Me:"you the best"

Yonela: "yeah...thank you"

Aidan:"yeah yeah...he can't be better than me right? "

Me:"weeh ayi let's just get going,before Aidan starts doing backflips trying to charm you"

We laugh and help her up Aidan insisted to carry her all the way to the car and Quinton managed to convince the doctor to discharge

yonela

.....

"What a day!"

He says as he throws himself on the bed

Me:"tell me about it!"

I throw myself next to him as we face the
ceiling

We lie there in silence

Me:"did you kill him?"

I just have to know

He remains quiet for while

Quinton: "No"

I sigh

Me:"what did you do to him?"

Quinton: "taught him a lesson"

Me:"how?"

Quinton: "its best if you don't know...but just know, he'll never be bothering you let alone look at you again, if he knows what's good for him"

Me:"oh..."

Quinton: "he signed the divorce papers too so there's nothing connecting you to him anymore"

Me:"thank God"

silence

Me:"your mother really doesn't like me..and your sister"

Quinton: "don't mind them,they'll come around"

Me: "all those things she said.....really hurt my feelings"

He turns his body to face me

Quinton: "hey...I'm sorry about that,my mom can be very protective of us sometimes, which becomes annoying, but I'll talk to her okay?"

I sigh

Me:"I really don't understand why she hates me so much,I didn't do anything wrong"

Quinton: "I know, if anything she should be treating you like an angel after what her husband did to you and your family"

Me:"it took a lot in me to not burst that out today, it takes a lot in me to not hate her for her husband's doings,it takes a lot in me to try fit in with a family of the man who killed my father,but you don't see me bringing it up every time,so if she's going to keep bringing up the fact that I broke up with you and broke your heart all the time,we not going to get along....cause Quinton... I was also forced by circumstances to make the decisions I made,you know I never wanted to hurt you.....right?"

I look at him,he flashes his lazy smile

Quinton: "I've never met such a mature, strong and loving eighteen year old like you in my entire life"

Me: "I'm just tired of all the drama Q...I want to be happy now.....with you, like we were before when we were still just roommates and best friends"

Quinton: "you see this"

He point at him and I

Quinton: "this right here makes me happy"

He moves closer and pulls me closer

Me: "Quinton? "

Quinton: "Lisa?"

Me: "no matter what happens, no matter how much we might get angry at each other or fight for some reason....please don't leave me or disappear for six months or more"

He chuckles

Quinton: "I'm never leaving you again, you'd have to kill me to get rid of me next time"

Me:"I'm so blessed"

Quinton: "damn right you are"

He kisses me,the kiss deepens as he gets in between my legs

He takes off my shirt and bra and starts massaging my boobs my whole body reacts to his touch,he slides his hands down to my butt and squeezes it,I move his hand away from my butt to my waist,he slides it down again I move them back to my waist, he picks me up to get me further in the center of the bed he takes off my shorts, well his shorts but are on me,anyway he takes off the shorts,then takes off his too...my body is hungry for him, I don't know what's going on inside my head,but its battling with my heart and body..he rubs my dripping punani I moan and move his hands to massage

my boobs, he pulls out of the kiss and looks deep onto my eyes with a frown on his face...he kept his eyes on mine as he touches my punani I arch my back moving up a bit

Quinton: "okay,what's up?"

Me:"huh? What you talking about?"

Quinton: "this"

He rubs my punani again I try to stay still

Quinton: "you can't keep still,you move my hands away when I touch you"

Me(timidly):"whhaaaat?"

I feel him rub his dick on my entrance my breath hitches as I close my eyes waiting for the pain to kick in..but nothing happens he's already off me and now next to me

Quinton: "you not comfortable, you can't even hide the fear...why don't you tell me to stop?"

Me:"I I don't want you to stop "

Quinton: "well your body is talking a whole different story"

Me:.....

Quinton: "I'm not going to force myself on you,I'm not going to tie you up or clip things on your pussy,I'm not him bub,he's never going to come back again and you won't go through that again"

Me:.....

Quinton: "you free to be yourself again"

Me(sighs):"I'm sorry...I really want to make love with you,I do,its all I've been thinking about,I don't know why I keep feeling like he's still here just waiting for me to do something wrong so he can strangle the life out of me"

Quinton: "I think you need therapy bub"

Me:"I'm fine Quinton.. I'll be fine"

He sighs heavily

Quinton: "fine....let's give it a few more weeks, if there's no change,you getting therapy okay?"

I nod

Me:"okay"

He picks me up and we go take a bath,we now in the bathtub with bubbles....We sitting opposite each other

He puts some bubbles on his chin making a beard

Quinton: "Ho Ho Ho....marry Christmas boys and girls!"

I giggle

Me:"Santa clause!! Oh my gosh! Its Santa Clause!! "

I jump on him,he slide down and the water buries us under, I try getting back up but its slippery and Q is holding me down,I pull my head out of the water

Me:"Aah!! Let go of me Santa! "

He slides himself back up we both in stitches
his head is covered with bubbles

The door busts open, I jump on Quinton again

"Somebody said Santa!!? Where?"

Me(shouting): "Aidan !! Get out!!"

Aidan: "but...Santa.. No ...No Santa!?"

Me:"Booooyyyy ...(clenched teeth)...Get you ass
out of here!"

Aidan:"I'm so sorry guys I really thought....

Quinton:"Now!!"

He jumps

Aidan: "of cause....

He runs out and closes the door

Me(sighs):" Geez....

The door opens again

Aidan:"By the way,this is so cute,I have to do this"

He snaps a picture...Quinton attempt to get up but he was too slow for Aidan who has vanished

He sits down and makes himself comfortable again

Me:"can you believe him?"

Quinton: "such an areshole "

Me:"a wanker"

Quinton: "a nincompoop"

Me:"a stupidiot!"

We remain serious for a few seconds before bursting into laughter

Me(laughing): "you said poop"

Quinton: "stupidiot is his new name"

Me:"really? It kinda suits you too"

He stops laughing and becomes very serious

Quinton:"oh yeah? I thought you were on my side here?"

Me:"I am"

Quinton: "wow,if you going to be two faced at least make one of them pretty"

I gasp in total shock trying to digest that insult

Me (speechless): "well...aarrhgg!"

I fold my arms and sulk

Quinton: "I said make it pretty bub,not worse"

I splash him with water and put up two middle fingers for him before standing up to get out of the tub,he pulls me back I slip and fall on him, I think I fell hard on his dick

Quinton (groaning): "aaaahhhhhh holy fucken shiiiiitttt!"

Me(worried):"oohhh love bug are you okay!?"

Quinton:"fuuuuuccckkk!

.

.

.

.

to be continued

[07/29, 08:49] W: continuation

LISA

(SHORT)

"Hhllllii ouch"

Me:"sorry bug...is it not helping? "

We now in bed, I put an ice pack on his dick,well its a packet of frozen veggies, that's all I could find

Quinton: "No!"

Me:"take off your briefs and put it right on the D"

Quinton: "you crazy? This shit is cold"

Me:"come on man up!"

Quinton: "let me try put it on your pussy,see if

you will man up"

Me:"but I'm not a man"

Quinton:"really? Didn't realise"

Wow this guy can diss

Me:"mxm,you know what,if you going to diss me,take care of yourself,nx"

I get in the covers and turn my back on him

He pats me

Quinton: "bub..I'm sorry,its just my dick is so painful and my hormones are all over the place right now"

I can't help but crack up and laugh

Me:"that's just gay man"

I sit up and face him,by the way its way past midnight now

Quinton(fake crying voice): "just I don't know what I'm gonna do of my dick could never work

again"

Me:"yooohhh how are we going to survive?"

Quinton: "I don't know love..I don't know"

Me (whispers):"do you think its broken?"

He gasps

Quinton: "it can't be....ohhh bub this is all your fault"

Me: "my fault? You the one who pulled me back when I wanted to get out"

Quinton: "yeah but you the one who slipped and fell on it...with your huge sexy ass"

Me:"first of all..my ass ain't huge...(chuckles)..
But sexy I agree with....secondly, its your fault I slipped"

Quinton: "whatever,now we will starve to death our whole lives"

Me(mummers): "boy my pussy ain't broken"

Quinton: "what was that?"

Me:"I'm sure its not broken... Let me rub it"

Quinton: "yeah right..that's what you said?"

He gives me the "I know you lying" look

I get up and take the rubbing stuff,I come back with it and sit in between his spread out legs

Me:"let's take these off"

I slide his briefs down,my eyes pop out...ohhh my did it get bigger? Or its been a while

Quinton: "really? You seriously going to drool over my broken dick?"

I look up at him

Me:"huh?"

Quinton: "wow"

I giggle and squeeze the herbal lotion on him

Quinton: "aahhh that's cold"

Me:"sorry baby"

I pick it up and start rubbing

Quinton: "mmmmhhh gentle bub"

Me:"Yes my love"

Oh my damn! I really didn't think my pussy would react to this but its so proving me wrong,its a river down there and it's only been a few seconds

He keeps moaning to my touch...heeeeeyyyy what is this? Why is it getting harder? His eyes are closed and he's facing the ceiling

"Oohhh yeeaah aahh shit"

Me:"Quinton? "

Okay it's really up now and too hard,this hand job is not helping

Quinton: "fuck...don't stop baby"

Hello!? This was supposed to heal you not make you horny

Me:"Quinton.. Is it better now?"

Quinton: "its getting there,just a lil bit longer"

Me:"okay"

Quinton: "shit..okay move your hands now"

I move them he sits up, my eyes widen as I see cum spitted out by his dick

Quinton: "sorry bub,but your hands are magical"

Me:"its cool...so are you feeling better now?"

Quinton: "No,its still painful, even worse now that I'm turned on"

Me:"I'm sorry love bug,I was trying to help"

I get take a towel and I wipe him,we get in the covers and cuddle but he is keeping his distance with his dick from touching me,he really looks like he's in pain

Me:"ohh my baby,we should go see the doctor tomorrow "

He shakes his head

Quinton: "I'm sure it'll be fine by then"

I sleep with my back he moves closer and snuggles in me, he buries his face on my breasts,I forgot how much of a baby he becomes when he's sick or hurt\injured..he keeps sucking my nipple till I got drowsy and lights went off

Me(singing):

I call you my: Baby, honey, sugar, bunny Sweetie Snicker doodle, Baby Doll cuddle poodle,Sweet cheeks. Angel eyes, Pooh Bear cutie pie Cuddle Muffin, Twinkle toes, Honey bunny Tootsie roll.....They all mean the same They just mean. I didn't hear you the day you told me your name.I call you my: Sweet Heart, Sweetie pie, Honey

bunch, Butterfly, Pumpkin, Sweet Potato, honey
pot, hot tomato Sunbeam Sugar peeee
Buttercup bumble bee, Love bird ,Sunshine,
Superfine Angel Mine, They all mean the same
They just mean, I didn't hear you the day you
told me your name.....I call you my: Dream
boat, dumpling dear heart darling Honey Bear
Sweet pea, Sugar plum Honey bee Baby cakes
Sugar pie ap-ple of my eye Snuggle Bunny
Honey Dew... just to name a few.... They all
mean the same They just mean, I didn't hear
you the day you told me your name

"Quinton! His name is Quinton Ambrose
O'Brien!!.....say it with me...QUINTON- AMBROSE
- O'BRIEN!"

Aidan makes his way to the kitchen where I'm
busy making breakfast for everyone

Me(laughing): "Shut up, I know his name okay"

He opens the fridge

Aidan:"I've never heard so many pet names in one sentence all in one day,in one song"

He takes out milk

Me: "So what if I call him my..Sweet Peach hot stuff Angel my love

Gum drop pancake Honey Bun cupcake

Sugar Lips Huggle Bear Honey Suckle I don't care

Puppy Wuppy Awesome possum Snugglicious Cuddle blossom.....

Aidan:" whhooaaa I thought I was the annoying one"

He says as he puts the bottle in his mouth and drinks the milk,Gosh I hate that

Me(irritated): "really Aidan?...come on dude,we have cups for a reason"

He swallow and makes that "aahhh" sound

Aidan: "sorry"

Me:"No you not sorry cause you will repeat it again and again, I have to preach the same thing to your brother,he never listens,I understand you younger but y'all should stop acting like bloody five year olds,actually even a five year old knows better...look let me show you how its done..its really simple"

I walk up to the cupboard and take out a glass

Me:"you just take the glass here..like this"

I grab the milk from him

Me:"then you pour it in the cup...like this"

I poured it

Me:"then you drink....like this"

I splashed it on him

Aidan (screaming): "aaahhhhhhhh cold cold cold cold!!!!!!!"

I burst into laughter, he screams like a girl

"What the hell is going on here?"

A limping yonela walks towards the lounge and throws herself on the couch Aidan immediately stops screaming and starts acting all tough

Aidan (leaning against the wall with his arms folded): "Sup girl"

I laugh at him you should see how cool he's tryna act right now

Yonela(confused): "wasup"

Me(laughing): "Amazing, absolutely amazing"

Yonela: "I thought I heard you scream Aidan..you okay?"

Aidan: "haha pssshhh scream? Me? Haha whaaaaat?"

Yonela: "yeah....you did"

Aidan: "aabbppshhh ...did you see me or hear

me?"

Yonela:"I heard you"

Aidan: "exactly, you didn't see anything so it wasn't me...you have no proof...now Leave me alone! Real Men don't scream"

Me((shouts):"Come clean this mess up Aidan "

He startles and screams a bit as he runs towards me in the kitchen

Aidan: "Yes ma'am"

Yonela and I are in stitches

"Damn, a guy can't get some peace and quiet in his own house"

Also a limping Quinton comes down the stairs

Aidan: "its all your girl's fault man...(fake crying voice)....she's so mean"

Yonela and I still haven't stopped laughing, Aidan's silly faces..he's one character I tell you

I switch off the pots and walk up to my love bug and help him sit, I can be overprotective when he's like this, just like he is to me, it just happens naturally

Me: "you were not supposed to come out the bed"

Quinton: "aahh its boring up there"

He says as he adjusts himself

Yonela: "wow, I wish I got this much attention when I came down"

I giggle

Me: "come on, you know I was watching you right"

She rolls her eyes

Yonela: "yeah right ... anyway what happened to him?"

We look at each other, he shakes his head warning me not to tell

Me:"its a long story"

Aidan: "we got time"

Silence fills the room as they curiously await an explanation

Ding dong

Saved by the bell

Quinton: "you should go get that"

Me:"Yeah,gotta get the door no time for chit chat"

I quickly walk away,as Quinton covers his dick area with a cushion

I open the door and a tall big buff man is standing in front of me,staring down at me with his piercing silver blue eyes,my heart stopped for a few seconds

Clyde: "hey there"

I do a bit of breathing exercise

Me:"h hey Clyde"

Clyde: "how are you?"

He's voice is so deep...I don't know why I'm so scared of him,trust me if you saw him you'd be scared too he's so intimidating

Me:"I I'm good"

Clyde:...

Me:"you?"

Clyde: "I'm cool"

Me:.....

Clyde: "may I come in?"

Me:"of cause..sorry yes you may"

Clyde:.....

Me:.....

Clyde: "can you make way for me to come in?"

I jump out of the way,what is wrong with me...I

feel like I was talking to the president that's how nervous he made me

....

I dish up for everyone and we just eat by the lounge, guess they not as fancy as I thought cause they told me there's no need to set the table.

We were just having light conversations, When yonela decides to bring it up again

Yonela: "ooh yeah,guys you were about to tell us what's happened to Quinton?"

Aidan:"ohh yeah..I'm also curious, he hasn't moved from that spot since he came down here"

Yonela: "hasn't even changed position"

Clyde: "what's up lil bro? Who hurt you, so I can go break their bones"

I look at him with my eyes out in disbelief, while

he has the most serious face...am I the only one who heard that? Cause no one else reacted to his statement

Quinton(chuckles):"you guys...its nothing... I just hurt my foot that's all"

Me:"yeah,he bumped it against the wall...my poor baby"

I rub his thigh as he has his legs on my lap,while my plate in on his legs

Aidan: "really.. Well let me just"

He pulled his legs a bit but Quinton didn't budge

Aidan: "you lying,how come you didn't feel any pain?"

We look at each other and just then he reacts

Quinton: "aahhh ouch Aidan,why did you do that"

But it was a little too late and too fake

Clyde: "come on,what really happened?"

Me:"So guys....the weather today,is looking good,am I right?"

This is me doing a horrible job on changing the subject

Quinton: "yeah very good weather babe"

Aidan: "yeah we not buying it"

Okay they not going to drop this,I look at Quinton he gives me the go ahead

Me: "fine...(looking at Aidan)..Mr nosey parker....Q kinda hurt his dick really badly...I kinda slipped and fell on it... while we were taking a bath.....and now we think its broken"

serious faces and silence

Aidan bursts into laughter like serious laughter... Yonela can't hold it in anymore so she joins in, I looks at Clyde who is trying really hard to maintain a serious face but instead he's turning

red from holding it in

Quinton: "let it out Clyde"

He bursts immediately

Clyde:"I'm sorry..I'm not laughing for real"

He says between his laugh

I get up

Me:"let's get out of here love bug"

I take his hand and we head up stairs

Clyde: "Sorry about your dick man!!"

He shouts while laughing

Me:"don't mind them babe,one day they'll break their dicks too,and we'll see who'll be laughing "

He looks at me with that "are you being for real?" Look

Quinton: "I'm not three bub"

I laugh

Me:"sorry I was just trying "

Quinton: "No stop treating me like a baby"

Me:"okay then..sorry"

I leave him by the bed

And head to the bathroom

"Bub! Please run water in the tub for me!

Thanks!"

So much for not being treated like a baby I roll
my eyes

"And please put that gel that smells like apples,
you always use!!"

.

.

.

.

insert later tonight

[07/29, 08:50] W: Insert 38

LISA

Me:"let's go to the doctor, maybe this is serious
"

Quinton: "I don't wanna have some guy all up on
my O'Brien"

Me:"but baby, the herbal rubbing stuff should've helped,its been hours,please love bug"

I give him the baby face

Quinton:"okay fine,but he won't touch it"

He warns

Me:"okay I'll make sure he doesn't "

I don't know how I'll do that but I need him to go see the doctor

We just finished freshening up we are now getting ready to go

We make our way down stairs with Quinton holding me for dear life if it were up to him he'd make me carry him

All eyes turn to look at us shifting their focus from the game of cards they are playing

Aidan:"how's big D?"

They laugh

Quinton: "fuck you man"

Aidan:"that's gonna be a lil too hard for you,don't you think? "

He attempts to march to him but I hold him back

Me:"we'll be late, you'll get him once you better"

Quinton: "please bub,I'm just gonna slap him a lil"

Me:"No,let's go"

He huffs, they are in stitches, its weird seeing Clyde laugh but when he's done he becomes serious right away like he never even started

Me:"nxa,leave my baby alone"

And that was me standing up for my man, good job Lisa,you did well

We walk out and drive to the clinic

Me:"I hate cues,clinics love being full"

Quinton: "we'll go to a private one,they much better,plus I got a friend there"

Me:"oh good that's better"

Quinton: "I want to show you something cool"

Me(excited):"oh yeah? What is it?"

Quinton: "its a surprise, I wanted to take you there on your eighteenth birthday but..."

My heart sinks at those word

Quinton: "but at least I still get to take you there"

Me:"Yeah,I wish things would've been different at that time"

Quinton: "don't stress about it,all that matters is that you here now,with me"

Me:"and nothing shall come between us again "

Quinton: "I'd be damned if I let it"

I smile widely like a geek who has just been greeted by her crush

We arrive at the clinic

Receptionist: "do you have an appointment?"

Me:"No..but

Receptionist: "you'll have to make an appointment for tomorrow Dr Gonzales is fully booked for today"

Me:"I get that...but you see this is an emergency..... (Whispers).. My boyfriend's dick kinda broke"

She gasps

Receptionist: "is that him over there"

she points at a sad Quinton sitting on the chair

I nod

Receptionist: "I'll go let the doctor now"

Me:"thank you very much"

I go sit next to him

Me:"you okay?"

Quinton: "I'm fine, just really worried about my dick, it's so painful"

Okay now I'm starting to feel really bad this seems to be more serious than I thought

Me: "I'm so sorry... I didn't mean to fall on it"

Quinton: "it's not your fault bub"

"Quinton?"

We look up and it's the doctor coming towards us

Quinton: "Dr Gonzales"

Dr: "hey how are you"

He stands up and they share a hug, I stand up

Quinton: "I'm good and you?"

Dr: "I've been better"

Quinton: "okay, this is my girlfriend, Lisa"

She shakes my hand

Dr:"nice to meet you"

Me:"likewise "

She looks down at his pants

Dr:"heard you got a big problem, down there?"

Quinton (chuckles):"not that big,just a minor thing, you know"

Yeah right Mr 'I'm so worried...its so painful' argh..I roll my eyes

Dr:"okay let's go check it out, follow me"

We follow her

Dr:"oh you can wait out here "

Oh hell no,she's not about to look and touch my man's D while I'm not there

I give Quinton a look

Quinton: "can she please come in,I really need her to hold my hand"

Dr:"okay then,if you don't mind"

Me(fake smile):"he doesn't "

We walk inside the ER

Dr:"take off your pants and lie on that bed over there"

He takes off his pants and he's only left in his undies

He lies on the bed

She writes a few things on her papers

Dr:"okay I'm gonna need you to tell me exactly what happened? "

We look at each other he gives me the 'you tell her' face

Me:"well it was when we were taking a bubble bath...so I wanted get out of the tub but he pulled me back to him and I slipped and fell on his penis.....really hard"

Dr:"mh okay I see...were you hard when this happened?"

Quinton: "hard?"

Dr:"yes,like was your penis hard,did you have a boner?"

He looks around then back at her,he wipes his nose and sniffs

Quinton: "maybe...just a lil"

Dr:"yes or No"

Quinton: "Yes"

I look at him and laugh silently he rolls his eyes

Dr:"right! Okay,let's check you up"

He slides down his undies,I'm really not comfortable with this,did her eyes just widen?
She better not be getting any ideas!

She puts on her gloves and starts touching and feeling it

Dr:"okay,its not broken"

We both sigh in relief

Dr:"but there's a bent vein,we'll have to go check it up on the x'-ray"

She does all the procedures

We now waiting for her in her office

She walks in

Dr:"okay,you will use this,it will help heal your penis faster and no corpulation for at least a full month"

Me:"whoa...you serious? "

Dr(laughs): "deadly"

Quinton: "damn, you know what that means bub?"

Me:"what? "

Quinton: "don't do things that turn me on like ...No more bathing together,you not allowed to get naked in front of me, no blushing, no cuddling, no eye staring those make me wanna kiss you, no spanking my ass, no giggling, no

sad baby faces....et cetera"

Me:"basically you telling me I should be a robot with no feelings?"

Quinton: "now we getting somewhere... That's what I call team work...up here"

He puts his hand up for a high five i just look at him

His smile disappears but doesn't drop his hand as he turns to look at the doctor

Quinton: "up here doc?"

She also just looks at him

He drops his hand slowly in disappointment

Quinton: "tough crowd.."

We laugh at him

I stand up

Me:"thank you Dr Gonzales, you a life saver"

Quinton: "its her job?"

Me:"Quinton! "

Dr(laughs):"that's what I was about to say anyway....wow Quinton, its my first time seeing you this happy?"

Quinton: "really?"

Dr:"Yeah, you've always been the serious type,never laughs,never showed a full smile"

He smiles and looks st me

Quinton:"I guess I've been around good company for a while now"

I blush

Quinton: "I said no blushing bub...great this is really going to be one long month"

Dr(laughing): "okay,you two have made my day...please get out of my office now"

Me:"bye Doc"

Dr:"please don't let go of him...I like this new Quinton "

Me:"I won't "

We walk away.

We now driving to..

Me:"where we going now? "

Quinton: "we'll first pass the mall,its still early and your surprise is only cool at night"

Me:"uuhhh I can't wait!!"

We get to the mall and shop around, there's no food back in that house,which shows that he's been staying alone so I bought groceries

We went to put them back in the car then came back into the mall to just look around, but he insisted I do some clothes shopping for myself. Its been a while since I shopped for clothes,a very long while so I do need this I was in and out of fitting rooms

Me:"how's this one?"

Quinton: "great"

He is busy pressing his phone,he was co operating a while ago but now he's just bored

Me:"Quinton! You not even looking at me"

He glances up then back at his phone

Quinton: "Awesome bub,I love it"

I grab his phone away from him and switch it off

Quinton: "Heeyy I was almost done with that level"

Me:"can you first concentrate on this level"

I point at myself

Quinton:"mmh what did I get myself into.....you look beautiful babe,I love that dress on you "

Me:"really? I think it makes me look fat?"

Quinton: "then why do you ask for my opinion if

you going to shut it out?"

Me:"cause you not being honest with me,you give the same opinion for everything I try on"

Quinton: "because they all suit you"

Me:"that's a lie!"

Quinton: "if you know I'm going to lie why do you ask for my opinion?"

Me:"cause with every clothing I put on I get a little hope that your opinion would change a bit,instead of the same line over and over again"

Quinton: "okay fine! You want me to be honest?"

Me:"Yes!"

We looks at each other for a while, he sighs

Quinton: "you right that dress makes you look fat, it just doesn't go with your skin tone,I mean look at you,you look like a rainbow with all those different colours all over you...and girl..loose the shoes,they make it look like you

have skinny legs,never ever look at dresses like this one...embarrassment"

He breaths out after that as if a load has been lifted from his shoulders

I feel my temperature rising,did he just say all those mean things to me?

I run to him and start punching him on the stomach, which kinda drew attention on us but I didn't care,I felt like I was fighting with a wall cause he wasn't even moving a bit

Me:"Aarrgh I hate you! How can you be so cruel!"

He picks me up like a bag of potatoes and heads to the fitting room where he puts me down

Quinton: "what the hell Lisa?"

Me:"how can you say all those mean things to me in front of people? "

Quinton: "you wanted me to be honest?"

Me:"so all those things were true?"

Quinton: "weelllll"

Me(gasps):"you such a assclown,
twat,cheesedick,sleezebag,butt monkey,
boogerface!"

I feel his soft cold lips on mine doing things that
make my knees weak and tummy bubbly

He breaks it

Quinton: "you were saying"

Me:"cutey pie,handsome face, sweet lips"

He laughs and kisses me again I deepen it, my
leg wraps itself around him he picks me up and
pins me on the wall...he pulls out and puts me
down

Quinton: "shit,its still painful bub"

Me:"I'm sorry love bug,let me get out of this

ridiculous dress"

He was right though this dress is ugly, I don't know what I was thinking

We walk around the mall with him being all lovey dovey and stuck on me

Me:"remember this shop?"

I point at the jewelry store we went to when we were drunk earlier this year

Quinton: "oh yeah,let's go inside"

We walk inside and look around,

Me:"you bought that beautiful ring that caught my eye for our fake engagement "

Quinton: "I was stupidly in love"

Me:"Was?"

Quinton: "I still am"

He pulls me closer and pecks my lips

"Ambrose?"

He let's go of me and we look behind us to be met by a sexy hourglass figure and a face that looks like she's done several botox surgeries

She comes towards us and Quinton meets her halfway

I stand in one place like a fool

Her:"long time no see"

They share a hug...a long one

Quinton: "ahh yeah long time indeed,how you've been Sydney?"

Sydney? Sydney? Sounds familiar

"Quinton baby,you remember Sydney? "

". Sydney fox...how can I forget"

"ohh I remember Sydney... Your old friend since primary till high school"

"and the first girl he's ever bought home"

"I wanted to let you know she's in town, I

bumped into her a few days ago and she said I must say hi"

That's right,that's why she sounds familiar

Quinton: "Lisa!!?"

I snap out of my thoughts

Me:"huh?"

Quinton: "I've been calling you....anyway come closer"

I walk closer to them

Quinton: "this is Sydney Fox my old friend from way back..."

Me:"ohh nice to meet you Sydney "

Quinton: "Sydney, this is my beautiful girlfriend Lisa"

Phew at least he made it clear that I'm his girlfriend.. And he thinks I'm beautiful, I hope that sank in her head

Sydney: "okay...so how's Mom holding up? Its been a while and when I bumped into her the other day I was in a rush,didn't get time to catch up"

Quinton: "she's fine,she's been through a lot in the beginning of the year with the heart failure.. But she's doing much better now"

Did this b*#%\$ just ignore me?

Sydney: "ohh shame....I heard,look we should do drinks sometime and catch up?"

Quinton: "yeah definitely... How about next weekend?"

Sydney: "next weekend sounds perfect...I'll see you then munchkin"

Quinton: "you have to stop with that name"

Sydney(irritating laugh):"I'll try..but I still love it for you....bye Ambrose"

They hug again and she walks away...wow she

didn't even say a word to me,not that I wanted her to,,but that was just rude

Quinton:"wow,people change"

Me:"yeah?"

Quinton: "she used to be skinny as hell"

I laugh

Me:"the botox and buttock surgeries must be doing well for her"

Quinton (laughing): "come on bub,don't be mean"

Me:"really? I'm the mean one? She totally ignored me when you introduced us"

Quinton: "she didn't"

Me:"okay let's pretend we didn't notice that"

Quinton: "okay....maybe she did but it must be because she's in a rush"

Me:"yes let's protect her rudeness "

He looks at me and smiles, what is he smiling at? Nx

Me:"let's go"

I walk away,my mood was down but obviously with Quinton around I can't be down for more than five minutes, I think its impossible cause I was now laughing my guts out

Quinton: "and we here"

Me(excited):"Oh wow, the planetarium? I've always wanted to come here"

Quinton: "Yeah,I know,and here you are"

Me:(teary): "aaww...babe,this is too sweet"

I peck his lips and we head inside,we had lots of fun looking at the starts and all the different planets

It was so romantic, this is literally the most romantic,most nice most generous most loving thing anyone has ever done for me

Me:"thank you Q....thank you so much"

Quinton: "I love you"

We share a passionate slow kiss filled with lots of emotions

Me:"I love you too"

....

We got home really late

We took everything from the car to the house,

Quinton: "aarrgh do we have to unpack?"

Me:"just the ones that need the fridge,we'll pack the rest tomorrow "

Quinton: "I really want to help bub,but I need to rest those pills are really starting to kick in,my feet feel numb"

Me:"that's okay,go up stairs I'll finish up just now "

He leaves me and goes upstairs I continue

packing

"yes y'all will have your ups and downs it won't be an easy road but as long as there's plenty of love you will both be forever happy....don't throw the towel when the going gets tough cause it will, but show him that you love him and you stand by him no matter what, he'll do the same"

Dad's words ring in my mind

I finish up and go upstairs to our room, I find him talking on the phone he's already in the bed covers

Quinton: "I know right?..(laughs)

...

Quinton: "okay it was good bumping into you again after a long time"

....

Quinton: "look..I'll see you next weekend"

....

Quinton: "goodnight... And please remember what I said...Never call me at this hour,this is my baby's time"

...

Quinton: "okay bye"

He hangs up

I have already changed and made myself comfortable on the bed

Me:"who was that?"

Quinton: "Sydney... She wanted to say goodnight"

Me:"to you or us?"

Quinton:"us..now come let's snuggle"

I snuggled closer to him and he dozed off immediately, I guess the pills got to him

[07/29, 09:11] W: Insert 39

LISA

A MONTH LATER

Me(frustrated): "aarrghh this is impossible!"

I'm in the study room working on my last

assignment for this semester,

And its so frustrating I'm not getting it and my brain just doesn't want to work,This is so unlike me! I'm supposed to be smart!

"Need help?"

I look up to be met by yonela

Me:"No I'm fine thanks "

She comes and stands behind me

Yonela: "judging by this blank page,you not fine"

I bang my head on the desk

Me:"argh I have no idea what's going on here"

Yonela:"okay,I understand this part,let me help you"

I look up at her

Me:"I should be saying that to you"

Yonela (chuckles): "well you've been through a lot, you've lost your focus..its understandable"

Me:"but still,I used to be naturally intelligent, I'd be able to make myself understand something without being taught...but now...I'm just so dumb"

I feel tears threatening

it's now towards end of September.. 3 October is Quinton's birthday which is in five days time

Yonela: "you not dumb Lisa,you still very smart,its just your life has changed,you have more things going on in your life and a lot of distractions,you still have nightmares about Mncedisi,maybe once you start therapy you'll go back to normal"

Me:"I don't know Nella,I don't think therapy will do me any good while there's still people who want me dead out there...and some who want to snatch my Q away"

The tears fall as I think about how he's been chatting to her frequently and she always calls

to say "goodnight" yeah right,for more than an hour just to say goodnight, how dumb does he think I am?

She sits opposite me

Yonela: "now calm down,no one will snatch Q away from you, have you seen how whipped that guy is by you? The way he looks at you is like a movie,the way he just randomly kisses you or steal pictures of you when you focused on something else....(chuckles)...yes I've been watching, he truly loves you Lisa,and that Syndenny won't win whatever game she's tryna play"

Her words sink deep in my heart as a little hope sparkles within

Me(smiling): "you right...he does love me,he wouldn't betray me like that"

Yonela: "Not the Quinton I know"

Me(sighs):"thank you Nella"

Yonela: "that's what friends are for"

She takes my hand and kisses it

Me:"can I ask? "

Yonela: "ask away"

Me:"do you still have feelings for me?"

silence as she stares into my eyes

Yonela: "yes...but I like it better if we just friends"

Me:"you sure?"

She nods

Yonela: "yes,I realised that I love you more as my sister than a lover,its just every time when we used to play house when we were kids and we would be mother and father,we used to kiss and hug,we played that game till high school, and remember the time we wanted to try how its like kissing ?"

I laugh a lil

Me:"yeah,like how they did it on TV "

We laugh

Yonela: "yeah...and we tried it when we were doing grade ten,it felt so nice and magical for me,your lips were so soft and warm and sweet,the way you held my head in position the way our tongues played,everything about that kiss excited me,I wanted to do it over and over again, that's when I developed feelings for you"

I'm speechless

Me:"I I don't know what to say?"

Yonela: "from then I thought I was lesbian, but up until now,I've never been attracted to other girls,just you"

Me:"maybe you not a lesbian nella, you just had a crush on me,I'm sure it happens when you are straight but you have a crush on a girl,it

happens to some girls"

She shrugs

Me:"and I've seen how you look at Aidan"

Yonela: "let's get started with that part you stuck on over there"

That's her changing the subject

Me:"mmhh fine"

She helps me out and we finish it off,she also explains the topic to me and I end up getting it.

Yonela: "come let's take a break from studying, and go hep prepare lunch"

Me:"I'm not preparing anything that will go into Sydney's botox mouth"

She laughs

well she couldn't make it the other weekend when Quinton invited her over after we bumped into her at the mall so now she'll be working this

side of town and she decided to come today....argh also Quinton's mom and Candra are coming,somebody shoot me!

Yonela:"is she really that fake?"

Me:"Giirrrll, wait until you meet her today"

We laugh and head to the back where the guys were grilling, well Aidan was grilling, Clyde was not around here and my baby was busy texting on his phone,I walk towards him he doesn't even notice me coming until I stand behind him and hug him from behind around his neck since he was sitting down, he closed his phone immediately, before I could see what he was doing

I kiss his cheek

Quinton: "hey Lisa"

Lisa? Its been a while since you've called me

bub or liss,he hasn't used them for two days
now

Me:"hey love bug...need help with food?"

He shakes his head

Quinton: "naahh I got it"

Me:"wow,you sure went out of your way on this
dinner

Quinton:"really? Looks pretty simple to me"

Me:"you took out your special wine,for special
occasions "

Quinton: "oh?...it just so happens to be Sydney's
favourite.... Did you know she's personally met
the man who created that type of wine?"

Me(sarcasm): "wow she's met Jesus?"

I stand up before he could say anything

I feel him pull my hand

Quinton: "wait Lisa,what's bothering you?"

Me: "I just feel like you don't....."

phone ringing

He looks at it and smiles

Quinton: " sorry,have to take this,later,I want you to tell me what's bothering you okay?"

Me:"but this is exactly....."

Quinton: "hello? Oh you by the gate?"

....

Quinton: "okay I'll open up just now"

He hangs up and runs out,I feel my heart break into million peaces...is it wrong for me to feel this way? I mean they just old best friends who haven't seen each other in a while,who happen to also be ex lovers,who happen to just wanna catch up on the good old times? That sounds honest right?...Hell No it doesn't!

I sit by the chilling chairs as I watch Aidan and Yonela by the grill laughing and being totally

ignorant to the fact that they have something special they share which is more than friendship, they remind me of Quinton and I... To be honest, I kinda miss those days in times like this.

I hear laughter getting closer to where I am

Quinton: "Hey guys, look who's decided to join us"

They walk up to the grill and she's introduced to Yonela and hugs Aidan, I see him make a bored face behind her back

He shows her where to sit, he looks my way, then he remembers I exist

He comes up to me

Quinton: "and why you sitting here by yourself young lady?"

Me: "oh you can see me?"

Quinton: "of cause I can see you, you not

invisible"

Me:"could've fooled me"

He ignores that remark

Quinton: "come,mom and Candra are almost here"

He pulls me up,I drag my feet behind him

The doorbell rings,I go open and its Candra, her mom and Clyde

Me:"Evening ma'am "

Q's mom:"Evening"

She makes her way in

Q's mom: "where my favourite girl?"

She asks as she disappears to the back

Candra:"hey"

Me:"hi"

She passes me and heads to the back

Clyde:"hey Lisa"

Me:"hi Clyde "

Right now I'm too drained to be even scared of Clyde

Clyde:"you okay?"

I make way for him to come in

Me:"I'm fine,you?"

Clyde: "you don't look fine?"

Me:"I'm fine really "

Clyde: "he doesn't love her anymore"

I look up at him

Clyde: "Sydney.... He doesn't love her,trust me"

Me:"you don't have to protect him Clyde,even a five year old can see what's going on there"

Clyde: "that's just Quinton being too friendly and Sydney taking it the wrong way...And Quinton being totally blind to the flirting Sydney thinking

she

Him&l:" was just being nice"

Me:"yeah, I know,but this time I think he can notice, he hides his phone away from me,doesn't let me play games on it"

Clyde: "don't worry about it, just trust him...I know my brother,he loves you, and he's still new to this whole love thing,so you going to have to talk to him if you feel like there's something wrong,cause he won't know,he's never been in love before, so he doesn't know how things work,if you don't talk,you'll definitely get hurt"

I sigh

If only he gave me the chance to talk

Me:"thanks Clyde "

He com's closer and the fear kicks in

Clyde: "make sure no one knows I told you this okay.?"

Me: "yes sir!"

We go join the others ,Sydney made herself comfortable next to Quinton which is so clear that's my spot,the only space left is next to Yonela so I sit there and opposite me is Sydney
mxm

Q's mom:"you know Sydney, I'm so happy you back,now you can teach Quinton how to talk to his mother"

Sydney (looks at Q):"how does he talk to mom now?"

Q's mom: "he raises his voice at me now,something he's never done before"

She gives me a look which gets me heated up with anger

Sydney: "and why is that munchkin?"

Quinton (chuckles): "mom is just exaggerating, I never shouted at her,I just used a firm tone"

Sydney: "now, you know better than to be rude to mom...never happens again, okay?"

Quinton: "it won't happen again"

Sydney: "good boy"

Did she just discipline my man, in front of me?
Am I the only one who feels like this whole thing is just wrong?

Q's mom: "you've always been good influence in his life, that's why I like you so much as my very own"

My throat and chest are so painful right now

Aidan: "yeah...have you guys noticed how he's been glowing ever since he started dating Lisa?"

Clyde: "yeah never seen lil bro this happy"

Yonela: "yeah he's no more the stiff tight guy....Lisa really brought out a side I never knew in him"

Aidan: "a side non of us knew actually "

Q's mom: "also a side where he disrespects me"

Quinton: "mother...stop"

Sydney: "don't dismiss your mother when she's talking Quinton"

Q's mom: "you see what I mean?"

One thing I know about Quinton is that he doesn't like being told what to do all the time

Quinton: "don't tell me what to do Sydney, if mom is saying something inappropriate she should be warned"

Sydney: "I know but munchkin, let's not talk to mom like that"

Quinton: "I'll talk to mom the way I feel like talking to mom, please stay out of it"

I can see he's getting pissed

Sydney: "okay, calm down"

He touches his hand

Sydney: "sorry okay?"

Quinton: "its cool"

I can't take this anymore

QUINTON

I quickly move my hand away

Lisa: "please excuse me"

Me: "where you going?"

Lisa: "I I need fresh air"

Me: "but we outside?"

Lisa: "may I please be excused"

She walks away before I could say anything,
okay she's been acting strange lately

I should go check on her...I get up but Sydney
pulls me down

Sydney: "where you going?"

Me:"I need to check up on Lisa,she's not looking
well"

Mom:"she looked perfectly fine to me"

Candra: "just give her the fresh air she needs"

I sit down

Yonela: "mxxxm"

She gets up

Yonela: "wake up Quinton"

With that said she leaves to the direction Lisa
went

Me(confused): "okay....what did I do now?"

Aidan:"hope you don't realise it when its too late"

He gets up and leaves too

Me:"guys...someone tell me whats going on here?"

I look at Clyde he shrugs

Clyde: "its not my place,you just have to figure this one out on your own man"

Mom:"nothing is wrong sweetie,that girl of yours just wants to draw attention to herself "

Candra: "anyway...Sydney how's that make up business going?"

They start talking about her successful business

Me:"I'm really proud of you Foxy you made something big of yourself"

Sydney (laughs):"oh my Gosh when last have someone called my foxy"

Mom:"that's cause he's the only one who called you that"

Sydney: "Gosh I missed you guys"

Mom:"we missed you too"

She looks at me

Sydney: "I know when I left I didn't say a word, I'm sorry, I missed you"

Me:.....

Sydney: "come on say it...I know you wanna say it"

Me:"I missed you too"

She kisses my cheek

Sydney and I were once in love,well I think it was love,but I'm not so sure,but she was a crazy freak when it comes to the bedroom, that's one thing that gave me a rush about our relationship which was best friends with benefits,everything was smooth between us

until she caught feelings, she told me and I said we could try something out, only for her to leave without saying a word a week later, that's when I knew falling in love is not for me. Until I met Lisakhanya Mthethwa, I don't know what that little girl did to me but she changed my whole concept about love, made me feel things I've never ever felt before....just a little secret...is it allowed for a guy to get butterflies? Cause if its not, Then that guy is definitely not me! Although I know nothing about the do's and don't's of a serious relationship but so far I think I'm doing well with Lisa, she seems happy and she makes me happy too, so I'd say things are going well for us

Me: "hey, where did Lisa go? She's been gone for quite a while now "

Sydney: "would you look at the time....sorry guys, I have to go"

Me: "oh so soon?"

Mom: "come on, there's plenty of rooms here, please spend a few nights, you live so far and we won't get to see you much, just for a few days"

Candra: "Yes pleeeeeeeaaase"

Sydney: "oohh I don't know, I wouldn't wanna intrude...and its a little short notice which is a little inconvenience for Quinton"

Candra: "brother doesn't mind, even Aidan and Clyde spend most of their time here"

They all look at me

Me: "uhm..I don't know, this is also Lisa's house soo..."

Mom: "there we go again... That little girl is controlling your life, you can't even make small decisions without asking her, and when she says jump you ask how high...can you just make this one little decision on your own"

Candra: "I don't like the way my big bro who's always been his own boss takes orders from a girl, a little girl who is twice younger than you"

Sydney: "No mom, please if it will be too much trouble, I really don't mind checking in the nearest hotel"

Mom: "nonsense... Quinton?"

Me: "I'll talk to Lisa first"

Sydney: "but do you mind?"

Me: "I don't mind, but if Lisa says no, then you might wanna consider the hotel"

Mom: "if you don't mind then it's settled, you can stay for a few days"

Clyde: "mom!?"

Mom: "what?"

He shakes his head and leaves

Clyde: "I'm out of here"

Mom: "Clyde! Get back here!"

He continues walking

Me: "did you bring clothes?"

Sydney: "No...I'll get them tomorrow... Thank you Ambro"

I smile and nod

Mom: "well that's our cue to leave....bye guys"

She kisses and hugs us, Sydney and I walk them out.

Me: "okay, let me show you to your room"

Sydney: "okay..after you"

I walk in front of her and go show her to her room, she throws herself on the bed

Sydney: "I love it!"

Me: "I'm glad you do"

She walks closer to me

Sydney: "thanks again munchkin"

I move away

Me:"you welcome....goodnight"

I walk back to my room and Lisa is not here,I
look in the bathroom she's not there

Me:"Lisa!?"

I notice the balcony door is open so I go there
and find her staring out in space in only her
underwear and my vest

Me:"I'm loving this view"

I play with her butt cheeks but she doesn't
budge, I wrap my arms around her

Me:"hey there bub"

I kiss her neck

She turns to face me

Lisa: "her car is still there?"

From the balcony you can see the cars going in

and out and the whole front yard

Me: "that's what I wanted to talk to you about"

She folds her arms and gives me the 'I'm listening' look

Me:"she asked to crash here for a few days,since she'll be working this side of town and doesn't have a place to stay....I know it sounds stupid but can she please stay here just for a few days"

Lisa: "No"

She walks to the room I follow her

Me:"but bub,she has no where else to go"

Lisa:"there are plenty hotels here,and she's a big shot something,I'm sure it won't bruise her card,if its just for a few days"

She fixes the bed getting ready to sleep

Me:"the thing is,mom kinda forced everything and I kinda ended up agreeing "

Lisa:"without bothering to ask me first?"

She walks to the bathroom I follow her

Me:"I tried liss but it was just a forced situation, and she's a friend I can't let her sleep and pay hotels when we have plenty room"

She spits out the water as she's brushing her teeth

Lisa:"I see you already made a decision, so why bother still telling me?"

Me: "don't be like that Lisa"

Lisa: "No its your house Quinton,you the only one who decides who can stay here and who can't, the same way you did for yonela and Aidan,you never asked me..so why start now? You can also sell this house if you want to and not tell me,cause its yours...I don't even know why you make me believe that its my home too,just like how you made me believe that our old apartment was ours..until you told me its

yours..remember that day?"

.....

"uhm...I see you sold our apartment "

"you mean my apartment"

.....

Lisa: "so don't mind me Quinton.. Maybe I should start paying rent cause this is definitely not my house"

She bumps my shoulder as she makes her way back to the room

Me:"I'm sorry my love...look I'll tell her to leave first thing tomorrow "

Lisa: "why you telling me? Its your house"

She switches off the light and covers herself with the duvet

I go back to the bathroom to freshen up,before going back to bed

I snuggle closer to her

Me: "please don't be mad at me"

She moves my hands away from her then
moves a bit far from me

Me:"bub?..bubby?"

Lisa:"I'm trying to sleep"

I switch off the lamp and we turn our backs on
each other

My heart sinks,I hate it when we fight,Sydney
needs to go

[07/29, 09:12] W: Insert 40

LISA

Yonela: "ayibo she slept here?"

Me: "yeah "

Yonela: "and you allowed that?"

Me: "I wasn't given a choice"

Yonela: "ayi Quinton amazes me by the day"

Me: "it was his mom who forced the situation actually "

Yonela: "but this is his house and yours you should also have a say"

Me: "but I made it clear to him that I want her

gone by today, so she must be packing now"

Yonela: "good,you should also make it clear that he should stop texting her or ever talking to her again"

"Good morning good people!"

She shouts coming down the stairs wearing only her underwear and one of Quinton's shirts? Somebody better hold me before I jump on a bitch...Aidan's eyes who's by the couch spot her,he moves with her as she comes towards the kitchen,until he lifts them up to meet yonela,he instantly looks away and back at the TV

Sydney: "hey ladies...Lizzy right?"

She doesn't even know my name... If I don't kill her now,with this knife I'm using to chop these onions, I might never get the chance

Me:"its Lisa "

Sydney: "Lizzy lizza lissaa same thing"

Me:"yeah siya siyanda sidonu sidunu sydneyyyy
same thing "

Yonela bursts into laughter

Sydney: "whatever, anyway I just wanted to say
thanks for allowing me to crash here for a few
days"

Me:"yeah about that, you need to
leave....today.....now"

Sydney: "oh but Ambro said I can stay"

Me:"and I say you can't "

Sydney: "but he's mom said I'm more than
welcome"

Me:"do you see his mom anywhere here? I'm his
girlfriend his best friend and roommate and I
say...girl yous gots to go"

Sydney: "I don't understand, why do you hate me
so much?"

Oh wow she's going to play innocent victim when she knows that she's after Quinton's dick

Me:"did I say anything about hating you? I just need you out that's all,we have way too many people in this house,there are plenty hotels around I could recommend you a few?"

"Morning FAM!"

That's a shirtless Quinton coming down the stairs

Sydney starts to act up

Sydney (breaking voice): "I don't know why you hate me so much,what have I ever done to you...(crying).. its fine,if you want me out sso bad I'll go!"

Quinton comes towards us

Quinton: "what's going on here?"

Me:"nothing I was just....

Sydney: "She made it clear that I'm not welcome

here and I should crawl to whichever hole I came from....She hates me and I'm not going to stay where I'm not wanted"

Quinton looks at me disappointedly

Quinton: "Lisa?"

Me:"Quinton...I didn't even say it as mean as she's putting it"

Quinton: "I told you I'll talk to her didn't I.... You didn't have to be so harsh about it"

Yonela: "excuuuusee you?.....first of all..."

Quinton(firm tone):" Yonela stay out of this please"

Me:"why you getting all worked up,she's not even really crying, she's just faking it..just like the rest of her fake....."

Quinton (agitated): "Lisakhanya!"

I startle and hold my chest at the way he shouted at me

Sydney(crying): "its fine Quinton..let me just get going"

Ha!! Satan! Can't he see those are crocodile tears

Quinton: "No,please you can't go,not when you a mess like this"

Sydney: "No,Ambrose, I'm leaving"

Quinton (firmly): "Sydney... Go upstairs, find something to wear in my woredrope, we going to get the rest of your clothes"

She nods and makes her way upstairs

Me:"so you going to let her stay?"

Quinton: "after the way you treated her,she has no one here Lisa,her family is overseas, what she needs now is a second family...can't you at least try being nice to her?"

I feel tears threatening

I don't know whether he's stupid or he's kind

heart is blocking him from seeing what's going on

Quinton: "you know,I expected this kind of behavior from her...not from you,you have a beautiful heart Lisa,please don't ruin it because of whatever pathetic reason you have"

Me(high pitch breaking tone):"Pathetic!?...my Pathetic reason?....wow!...you know what Quinton do whatever! I'm out!"

I walk away

Quinton(shouting): "Is that what you going to do every time things don't go your way!? Walk away!?"

I ignore him as I make my way into our bedroom and bang the door as soon as I enter,I break down and throw myself on the bed,I hate Sydney!! And her fake self! I hate Quinton's mom!! I hate Candra!! I hate Quinton and his arrogant cute self!! I hate everyone!! Hate hate

hate hate!!!!

I suffocate myself on the pillow and scream as loud as I can

"Aaaaaaaaahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!!!!!!!"

I'm angry, I can't be here right now, I need to get out of here before I kill myself!

I freshen up, I put on my sweatpants and a loose vest with flops, I just tie my hair without combing it, I just took a bath yet I look like I haven't bathe in ages when I look at myself in the mirror

I already called an uber so it'll be here any minute... I don't even know where I'm going

I pass everyone by the lounge they all turn to look at me

Yonela: "where you off to"

Me: "out"

He's sitting on the high chairs looking at me

I stop and look at him for a while

Me:"when I get back,I don't want to see her here"

He looks at me with attitude

Me:"mxm"

I walk out,I find the uber already by the gate

Driver:"morning miss"

Me:"morning..please take me to Braamfontain"

He drives me there and drops me near Our old apartment

Me:"thank you "

I pay him and he drives off, I turn and look at the house, its renovated and very beautiful, the yard has freshly cut grass,memories come flooding in as I stare at the yard

....

"bring that here before I kill you!"

"you see people, there's the threat I was talking about"

He gets up coming towards me but I'm too fast for him I'm already outside

"You better give me that phone Young lady And I'm not playing with you,Delete that video now"

"you better be nice Young man,cause you still on camera... So smile for the camera chocolate face!"

I giggle then he starts chasing me

"you think you can outrun me...I don't think so Missy"

.....

I sigh and wipe my tear then head inside

I knock

The door opens and a handsome middle aged man opens

Me:"hey"

Him:"hey,can I help you? "

Me:"uhm yes,I'm looking for Isabella "

Him:"oohh okay,and who's looking? "

Me:"Lisakhanya "

He turns and shouts out

Him: "Honey! A Lisakhanya is looking for you!"

"Oh! Let her in Love!"

He looks back at me and makes way for me to come in

Him:"come on in"

He leads me to the sitting room,this house looks better than the last time I came here when I first met Bella

Him: "I'm Lloyd, Bella's husband"

He stretches his hand for a handshake

I shake it

Me:"ohh congratulations, last time I came y'all were still engaged "

He chuckles

Him:"thank you,can I get you anything to drink?"

Me:"water will be good thanks"

He disappears to the kitchen

Bella:"hey girl,how are you"

I stand up and we share a hug

Me:"I'm good thanks and yourself? "

Bella:"I'm exhausted "

She says as we sit down and Lloyd comes back with water

Him:"there you go"

Bella:"I see you've met my husband?"

Me:"Yeah, I have,awesome man"

They laugh at me

Lloyd: "why thank you, its not everyday I'm told I'm awesome"

He looks at Bella slyly

Bella: "oh please,go away"

He excuses himself, now its just Bella and I

Me(smirks):"and what's exhausting you so much? Mmmh?"

I keep throwing my eyes to the direction of where Lloyd disappeared to

She laughs

Bella:"haa! You so naughty...well partly his fault but mostly me little Rebecca is keeping me up all night"

I drop my eyes and its only now I realise that her belly is flat and she has lost a lot of weight but she looks good,I guess she went back to her normal weight

Me:"oohhh my God... Shut the front door!..you gave birth! When?"

Bella:"three weeks ago "

Me:"wow..and you married,did y'all marry before or after birth?"

Bella: "before...we couldn't wait any longer"

Me:"aaww man,y'all so cute...I need to see the little princess "

Bella: "I just got her to sleep"

Me:"okay,I'll peak on her before I leave"

Bella:"yeah.."

Bella:"so I don't mean to be rude but how can I help you?"

I sigh

Me:"I just needed to get out of that house really,before I go insane"

Bella: "your spirit is very down,you heartbroken"

I look at her she smiles faintly, I look up to push back the tears

Me:"I was just wondering, does that offer still stand?"

Bella: "you want to start therapy?"

I nod

Me:"Yes,I just need to get rid of all these nightmares, Bella, I can't get him out of my mind,every time I close my eyes I see his evil brown eyes looking at me and he'd be calling me all sorts of names and forcing himself on me,I can't take it anymore,I tried praying before I sleep but it doesn't help.....and its really affecting my sex life with Quinton, every time we about to do it,I feel like he'll just loose control and not stop when I ask him to.....as much as I try to convince myself that I trust and love him with all my heart, but nothing works"

Bella: "and you think this is affecting your

relationship with him?"

I wipe the one tear drop that escaped

Me: "I'm afraid that he'll lose his patience and will easily get tempted to sleep with other women"

Bella: "and I sense there's already an available candidate?"

Me: "Yes, her name is Sydney, they were best friends from way back and they've also dated, she's back in town after years and she needed a place to stay, Quinton's mom likes her a lot and she hates me, so she suggested she stays with us, and Quinton being the good Samaritan he couldn't say No"

Bella: "She's bad news Lisa, your gut feeling about her is right, she's not here for work as she says, She was called by your man's mother, she's on a mission to separate you and Quinton... Quinton's mom does not like her but she just

doesn't want you to be with her son"

I can't believe this! I knew it!

Me:"but...why?"

Bella: "You gave Quinton the diamonds?"

I nod

Bella:"she wants them,with you on the way she knows Quinton won't give her cause he listens to you,but if you out of the picture she can convince Quinton to give them to her"

Me (stunned): "Ayibo! Why does she want them so bad?"

Bella:"it hadn't been revealed to me"

I sigh

Me:"I should just give her the diamonds, then she leaves me and Q alone"

Bella:"You can't let those diamonds land in the wrong hands "

Me:"I want nothing to do with them"

Bella "Lisa, it hasn't been revealed to me why,but you can't let Quinton's mom or the Johnsons have those diamonds"

Me:"These diamonds are a curse I swear"

Bella: "for now they might seem bad...but I believe there's a good reason why they belong to you"

Me:"what about this Sydney? how do I deal with her?"

Bella: "it won't be easy,you need to be strong,fight for him,pray for him"

Me:"I can't stay in that house with her Bella,I'll go crazy,Its like Quinton can't even hear me when I talk anymore,its like he's listening but her can't hear me,the only person he listens to is this Precious Sydney and his mother "

Bella:"Quinton was meant to protect,its who he

is,its in his blood,when he feels like protecting someone he'll protect with his life,its what he does for people he's heart is close to.....but right now,he's protecting the wrong person and he needs your protection, you leave him,you throwing him to the wolves and yourself....y'all need each other"

Me:"Bella "

Bella: "yes?"

Me:"I'm too young for this"

Bella: "you way stronger than you think,tell Quinton about your gift"

Me:"how did you?....oohh yeah you have it too"

Bella: "yes,but they not exactly the same"

Me:"Quinton doesn't believe in these kind of stuff,he won't believe me"

Bella: "don't put such little faith in him...he loves you,he'll believe you"

baby crying

She jumps up

Bella:"uuhh let me go get her"

She disappears to the room then comes back with her baby

I play with her as she breastfeeds her

.....

Hours later

I pay the uber and make my way inside,I notice her car is still here I guess he doesn't care about my opinions anymore

I make my way inside the house and find them all watching what looks like a horror movie,no one even heard me coming in,they sitting in one big couch,Quinton is sitting next to Sydney and Aidan next to Yonela

I look at the screen of the TV

"Come out come out wherever you are!"

*silence"

Bang!

"Got you!!"

He chops the girl's head off

I startle, Sydney buries herself in Quinton's arms as she screams a little, then she stays in that position with his arms around her.....I hold my mouth so that no one hears my sudden outburst as I cry,I run up the stair

"Hey Lisa you back!"

Aidan shouts

I bang the door and throw myself on the bed and cry my lungs out..I don't change I just go inside the covers

....

The door opens and its now past midnight, he

comes inside the covers,I sit up and look at him

Quinton (whispers):"oh sorry. Didn't mean to wake you up"

Me:"where were you,cause the movie long finished?"

Quinton: "oh I was helping Sydney fall asleep...(chuckles)...she couldn't sleep after that movie"

Me:"Do you still love her?"

Quinton: "okay,we still at the bitter mode...goodnight"

He turns his back on me

Me(breaking voice):"Do you still love me?"

He ignores me

The tears start all over as I feel like my heart has been stabbed by a thousand daggers

Me:"cause I still love you....very much"

...

Me:"I just want you to be happy"

...

Me:"is it sex?...is that what you want?"

...

Me:"okay fine.. You can have it,I'm right here..make love to me Q"

I take off my clothes and underwear

I sit on my knees and face him,I remove the bedcovers from him

Quinton: "Lisa...stop"

Me(crying): "No...come on,let's have sex

Quinton... Come on sleep with me,I'm begging you"

I get on top of him and kiss him but he doesn't respond

I remove his briefs

Me:"come put it inside me Quinton! "

He pushes me away

Quinton (shouts):"Would you stop this craziness! "

I quickly get back to my side of the bed and burst into a loud cry

Quinton: "don't do this to yourself Lisa...of cause I love you,its not about sex, I want you to heal first...I am happy with you,its just you've been acting strange lately,its like you distancing yourself from me"

Me:"its the other way around Quinton "

Quinton: "its not Lisa,look I'm very tired,can we talk about this some other time? I really don't wanna fight you right now,let's just cuddle and sleep okay?"

I get inside the covers and turn my back on

him,he comes closer and wraps himself around
me..I cry myself to sleep

....

[07/29, 09:14] W: Insert 41

SYDNEY

I've been here for four days now and things between Quinton and I are going very well than I imagined, can't say the same for her girlfriend and him. He still listens to me and he still cares a lot for me,we've always had that strong bond. I was shocked when his mother called me to come visit this side cause the last time I checked she never liked me,when Quinton and I started becoming more than friends,she bribed me and told me to stay far away from her son,it was a lot of money so I accepted it, but now she needs my help,she gave me a whole lot of money for me to do this for her and I'll be getting more if I pull it off and make them break up, so I'm gonna go by all means to pull it off..there's just one problem now, I'm falling in love with him all over again, once I pulled this off I'm never letting him go again.

That bitch Lisa is so naive, she's been trying to be nicer to me, but of course I make it impossible for her I keep provoking her so Quinton always walks in on us and she's all worked up, yesterday I picked a fight with her, a physical one and I let her beat me and Quinton walked in on her beating me up, the way he was so mad at her, shouted at her, even threatened to kick her out, of course she tried to pin it on me, but the scene went against her, I was the victim, his brothers though they hate me and they can't even hide it Aidan went back home Yesterday he said he can't watch Quinton pushing away the only girl he's ever loved..Ha! He's mine, always has been and always will.

It's his birthday today Lisa and her friend Yonela went to campus, then Lisa has therapy, Yonela will wait for her, so they'll be back late it's just him and I in the house, I've been walking around half naked and I see the way he checks me out, I

know that he hasn't been getting it for a while now, and tonight all that will end I'm going to seduce him, then use that drug Ambrose's mom gave me to make him loosen up and become very horny... I know... I rock!

Me: "birthday boy can't be working, no no no!"

He's in the study buried in his work

Ambro: "I have to finish up this assignment... Then I have to look at how's business holding up"

Me: "I refuse you work on your birthday, come on, I baked a cake for you"

Well Lisa baked it early in the morning, I guess she was going to surprise him later but I saw where she put it

Ambro: "really?"

I go around him and massage his shoulders

Me: "yeah, I know how much you love chocolate

cake"

Ambro: "chocolate.. Mmmh that's my favorite, Lisa loves making that on special days, but she'd make a bigger one on my birthday and we'd...."

Me(interrupts):" shhhhh....relax you so stiff"

I massage him a bit harder he groans

Ambro: "aahh yeah...that's the spot"

I whisper close to his ear

Me(whispers): "let's go feed you some cake"

He turns to look at his side where our faces are only an inch apart we look at each other for a while, the chemistry is still there, and I just know he misses the crazy sex we used to have

Ambro: "yeah I'm starving"

He stands up just when I thought we were going to kiss, I wish he could look at me the same way he looks at Lisa, we've been close to kissing so

many times but he always finds the strength to resist and walk away mxm. We'll see how he'll resist later.

We head to the kitchen, I take out the cake

Ambro: "wow its so huge"

I'm even shocked myself,damn this girl love Ambro to wake upon that early and bake such a huge cake when she still has to go to school

Me:"you know I'd go all out for you"

Ambro: "yeah but this is a first, last time I checked you never knew how to even fry an egg?"

I laugh

Me:"I grew up Ambrose"

Ambro:"I guess you have"

I put it on the counter and start singing for him

Me(singing):"happy birthday to you,happy

birthday to you... Happy birthday dear
munchkins happy birthday to yooooouuu....hip
hip!!!

Hurray hip hip hurray"

He is just smiling and staring at me

Ambro: "thank you so much"

Me:"hope I'm the first one to wish you"

I cross my fingers

Ambro: "actually Lisa left me a card, my
brothers and sister called earlier and mom...but
hey,you the first one to give me this an
awesome gift"

Me:"great, at least...please cut the cake already!
"

He chuckles as I hand him the knife and he cuts

I take the slice he cut and feed him

His eyes automatically close

Ambro: "mmmmh soooo goooood"

I have a bite and he's right its so good

Ambro: "damn this is the bomb,did you ask Lisa for the recipe? Cause I swear it tastes just like the one she makes once in a while after I beg her for days..and she doesn't want to give me the recipe"

Me(irritated): "not everything has to be about Lisa Ambrose.. I baked you this cake with my own recipe...thanks for appreciating!"

I sway my ass out the kitchen he follows me

Ambro: "I'm sorry Sydney, I didn't mean to make you angry,its just it reminded me of.....okay look I'll stop,I know you two aren't in good terms so I won't talk to you about her anymore"

I smile and look at him

Me: "good,now go freshen up so we can celebrate"

I kiss his cheek,he gets up and runs upstairs, I also go to my room and freshen up...I apply some make up,combe my hair and puff some cologne, I take out the black number I bought just for him and put it on.

Then wear a night dress over it,I walk down stairs slowly and he's on the sofa staring at his phone,I peek at what he's doing and notice he's going through pictures of Lisa and himself,he keeps chuckling, argh what's with this girl anyway,what does she have that I don't? I clear my throat he looks at me up and down

I hold up the bottle of wine

Me:"let's celebrate "

Ambro:"yeah sure"

He looks down and sad

I sit next to him

Me:"what's the matter?"

Ambro: "its just I.... Argh its nothing, I shouldn't talk about her with you"

I sigh

I go take glasses in the kitchen and I put the small pill in his

I come back and pour us some wine

Me:"its fine, you can tell me"

He sighs

Ambro: "its just I feel bad"

Me:"why? "

Ambro: "the way Lisa has been acting lately, I feel like its my fault"

Me:"its not your fault,that girl has issues maybe therapy will do her good"

Ambro: "maybe I shouldn't have let you stay here,maybe things wouldn't be like this.,....no offence"

Me:"non taken, I understand, I mean if I were in her shoes I'd probably be a lil jealous, but as long as you show her love and affection she shouldn't be bothered, I mean you've made it clear that there's nothing going on between us and nothing ever will..she should just trust you"

Ambro: "you know...you have a point,I've done nothing wrong,I'm just helping an old friend in need,I don't know why she's acting all crazy,this is so unlike her and its a big turn off...I mean I know she's been through a lot but I've done so much for her,to help her but she still doubts me? She even moved to the other guest room last night..."

Me:" she's acting like a brat,that's how girl's from poor backgrounds are,they act all sweet and nice at the beginning, you help them out and show them love,give them money,then they change to being all controlling and forget everything you've done for them"

He gulps down the wine looking very frustrated and cute at the same time,oh man he's eyes are to die for the way they change colour,so magical

Ambro: "you right, she's forgetting where we come from together, everything we've been through,she used to be so kind,she'd do anything to help someone in need,but now....mxm"

I pour him more,he gulps it down as he talks more and more about his Lisa who's changing, from my point of view,Lisa is a sweet girl,she loves Ambrose but I guess her woman instincts are warning her...a woman always knows

Me:"come,let's release some of that stress"

I massage him, he remains quiet, I check the time,and they'll be back any minute now

I remove his shirt,he's drunk now

Ambro(softly):"Sydney?... What are you doing?"

Me:"releasing some stress"

I push him on the couch and get on top of him,his dick is already hard

Oh my,its still so big, I take off my night dress,his eyes widen as they land on my boobs, I take off his shorts, I sit right on his dick,I move my face to his

Me(whispers): "do you like this gift?"

He remains quiet

I take off my lingerie

Ambro: "Sydney... This is wrong"

He says in a low tone with his eyes half open

Me:"then stop me"

I kiss him and he response, I grind on his dick,as the kiss gets heated up

His hands running all over me

Ambro:"damn Liss"

Liss? I ignore him as we continue

LISA

Me:"I should've skipped today's session"

Yonela: "if I knew it were going to take this long I wouldn't have waited"

Me:"I can't wait to surprise him with the cake I baked for him this morning"

Yonela:"mxm..I don't get why you even bothered, y'all had a huge fight last night,you should be mad at him,you even slept in the guest room"

Me:"I know,but how can I be mad at him when its his birthday? I just can't he needs to be spoiled"

Yonela:"dude,things will never go back to normal with that witch in that house,I'm telling you let's just go back to my apartment, let him miss you a little and let him realise what kind of person Sydney is"

Me:"Yonela, I love Quinton, I get what you saying, but let me give him this one last chance,if nothing changes,then we will move out okay?"

Yonela: "I can't take it anymore,I can't watch you torture yourself like this,I'm moving out first thing tomorrow, feel free to come with me"

Me:"one more chance, I mean he also gave me a chance when I messed up,I think he deserves it too"

Yonela: "but your situation was understandable,

you were forced into marriage, you had no choice"

Me:"but that didn't mean I should've gave up on him"

Yonela: "oh my gosh Lisa, I hate how you defending him right now"

Me:"we need to stick together more than ever right now,he needs me by his side and I need him too"

Yonela: "but right now,he doesn't even want you,when last has he touched you? Or make a joke? When you in the lounge he's in the bedroom when you in the room he's by the lounge, I hate that you don't see how closer he is to Sydney and not you anymore"

My heart throbs at the painful truth she's telling

Me:"I notice everything yonela,...but everything will go back to normal soon...you'll see"

The uber drops us off at the gate,we walk in,I'm rushing in front of her I just want to sing for him already!

Me:"hurry up!"

Yonela: "yeah whatever"

We run towards the house

I bust the door open and head to the kitchen

Me(singing):once a year we celebrate with stupid hats and plastic plates.....the fact that you were able to make the trip around the sun (gasps)and the whole plan gathers round and gifts and laughter do abound.....we let out a joyful sound and sing that stupid song! Happy Birthday, now your one year older. Happy Birthday, your life still isn't over. Happy Birthday, you did not accomplish much. But you didn't die this year i guess that's good enough."

My singing fades as I see the cake already cut

Me:"oh no,he found it"

"Uhm Lisa.... I think you might wanna see this"

She staring at something by the couch I walk up to her

Me:"he found the surprise cake I....."

I trail off as I see what yonela is staring at

Quinton's clothes are on the floor and his breifs,also lingerie and my night dress, I look at the table and notice two empty glasses the other one has lipstick stains

Yonela(breaking voice): "oh no...Lisa...I'm so sorry"

I chuckle then start laughing for real

Me(laughing):"No...this is not Quinton's clothes... It can't be"

I walk up stairs

Me:"Q!! Baby!!"

I open our room and I swear my heart slipped out of my body as my body freezes and I become cold, they under the covers and are moving so fast, her moans fill up the room, not this again!.. I feel my head getting dizzy, I hold it with both my hands as it feels like its going to fall off

Me(softly): "Quinton?"

She immediately gets off him, he sits up and just looks at me

She covers herself with the covers

Sydney: "oohh Lizzy..its not what it looks like"

My eyes are glued at the man I thought loved me

Me: Quinton? "

Quinton: "ppsshhh...oops"

My jaw drops did he just say that? Its like he's not even shocked I caught him, he doesn't care

Quinton: "how long are you going to just stand there?"

I swallow the biggest lump on my throat it almost choked me

Me:"in our bed? In our home?"

Quinton: "my bed...my home...my dick"

Me:.....

Quinton:....

Sydney:.....

Me:"happy birthday, hope you enjoyed the cake I made for you.....enjoy the rest of your life
Quinton..... I'm done!"

I run out and run down the stairs, I throw myself in Yonela's already open arms

Me:"let's go...let's go right now...I'm done with Quinton, I don't care anymore, the Johnsons can kill me if they want to, my life is over anyway"

Yonela:"Let's go baby"

We don't pack anything we just leave,the uber drops us off at her apartment. The first thing I do is run to the room and cry my lungs out...that's all I'm good at nowadays. Its so painful,I can't get the image out of my mind...what have I done so wrong to you universe? Why you keep hurting me me like this? Why?

♥ NARRATED♥

THE NEXT DAY

Quinton wakes up with the most painful head ever, he sits up and holds it, its buzzing

He turns to look beside Him and Lisa is sleeping beside him and has her back on him, she's naked..he snuggles closer and kisses her back

Quinton: "Bub? Wake up"

She turns to face him

Sydney: "hey you"

She's so beautiful, he thinks to himself

Quinton: "hey bub....don't you have classes today?"

She first looks at him confused

Sydney: "Ambro? Are you okay?"

Me(chuckles): "since when do you call me by my second name?"

Sydney thinks to herself for a while, what exactly was that pill he gave her? Quinton's mom gave it to her, but she only said it would make him sleep with her, she said nothing about changing her to look like Lisa.

In Quinton's eyes, Sydney was Lisa, but when she looked at herself she still looked the same, she smiles to herself and decides to go with the flow

Sydney: "oh I don't know, I just felt like it.. No I don't have classes today"

Quinton: "that's great..look bub, I'm sorry about the way I've been acting lately, I don't know what's wrong with me, I promise I'll make sure Sydney leaves today okay"

Sydney: "really?..you'd do that for me?"

Quinton: "I love you so much Lisa, I hate it when we fight, I won't allow anyone to come between us anymore"

Sydney: "I love you so much Q"

Quinton: "I enjoyed my birthday gift yesterday"

Sydney: "really?"

Quinton: "Yeah...I missed us"

Sydney: "wanna go for round two?"

Quinton: "hell yeah"

They share a kiss and make sweet love, Sydney has finally got what she always wanted, unconditional love from her long lost lover, Quinton feels content that he finally fixed things with the love of his life and things can finally go back to normal??

.

.

.

.

to be continued

[07/29, 09:16] W: Insert 42

LISA

TWO WEEKS LATER

"Lisa! Open this door!"

Me:"go away! "

"You have to eat Lisa, you can't keep avoiding food all the time"

Me:"I'm not hungry yonela,now please go I'm trying to read"

"If you don't open this door right now, I'm breaking it down!"

Me:"Go ahead,its coming out your pocket anyway "

She continues banging the door making it impossible for me to drown in my thoughts, I was so close to getting the courage of slicing my wrist with this razor,I ignore her,she stops,finally!

Now where was I? Oh right!! I'm about to leave this cruel world it doesn't deserve me,I move the razor closer I cut myself a little and blood came out...

"Aaahhh"

Damn I didn't expect it to feel this good? I pushed it even deeper, a lot of blood came out, and I felt excruciating pain, my head is panting and my heartbeat is getting weaker

....

"My bed....my home....my dick"

....

Those were the only words that kept ringing in my mind for the past two weeks and the image of them on top of each other....

at least now it will be removed permanently...
My body gets weaker I get inside the cover and close my eyes

.....

YONELA

Its like I've been living with a zombie for the past two weeks, her daily routine is sleep wake up go to campus come back sleep, every time, I don't remember the last time she put something in her mouth, she's lost so much weight and its really torturing me to see my girl like that, she stopped attending therapy after Quinton's birthday. I hate Quinton, I really thought he was smater than this, the way he's so happy now, its like the break up with Lisa hasn't affected him at all, I bumped into him once with his Sydney holding hands, then he

stopped and asked me why don't I visit anymore?
The nerve! I ignored him, I don't even want to
waste my breath talking to him....but I'm afraid
if he doesn't do something Lisa will die of
depression.... Speaking of Lisa,I gotta check up
on her

I knock at her door she remains quiet

I knock even louder but she remains quiet

Okay why isn't she shouting at me to go
away,like she always does

I bang the door

Nothing

I get out and go around the house, I knock at her
window,luckily and also unluckily there's no
burglar guards and the window is a bit open so I
open it more and climb up, I fall as I make it into
her room,I get up and remove the curtain from
my way, I notice she's sleeping I move closer to
her,I remove the hair covering her face,my eyes

widen as I notice foam coming out her mouth...

Me:"oh no oh no..."

I remove the blanket and blood was all over the bed

Me:"oh no no no no!!!"

I feel her pulse and its very weak it won't last long

There's no time to go back for my phone so I grab her phone and call an ambulance

Me:"hello!? Please help my friend committed suicide she's going to die any minute now please please hurry up!!!

"I need you to calm down mam and tell us where exactly are....

I hang up, they will take their own freaking time!
Think think think! Aidan!

As much as I want nothing to do with that family but I have no choice

He picks up immediately

"Lisa thank God you finally get back....."

Me:"please hurry and get here!!! Please!!!!"

"Nella!? What's...."

Me:" She's dying please get here now!!! I'm at my apartment.. Please Aidan she doesn't have much time left!!"

"I'm on my way"

I hang up

I try shaking her...I run out to take a cloth so I can cover the part where blood was coming out

Me:"please don't do this to me Lisa, please you can't leave me now...what about your mother? You the only family she's left with,what about me..I love you so much, I can't loose you now,you the best sister I never had....please babe"

I pick her up and take her to the sitting room

where it'll be closer to the door

Me(crying): "where the fuck is that boy!"

That's it I'm calling an uber

"Where is she!!!?"

He busts inside as he flys towards me, he picks her up and I run behind him as he carries her to the car,he drove like a maniac and I wasn't complaining I wished he could drive even faster,I kept feeling her pulse

Me:"Its gone!!! No!!! No!! Come back!!!"

.....

We now in the waiting room pacing up and down as the doctors attended to her, Clyde comes running in

Clyde: "Aidan!?!..(runs towards us).... How is she?"

Aidan:"I don't know man"

His voice sounded like he's about to cry

Clyde:"she'll be fine"

I feel him rub my back,I look up at him and its the first time I'm seeing his sad reaction with a frown,he always keeps a straight emotionless face

Me:"how? She's dead,her pulse was gone,she's dead Clyde,she's not going to be fine, no one is going to be fine, my one and only friend....she's gone"

He pulls me to his embrace

Me:"I blame Quinton... He killed her, he broke her heart so many times and now she's dead! She's left with no heart to continue living... I blame Quinton, he killed her..I warned him,you warned him,Aidan warned him, Lisa warned him,but he's so stupid he doesn't listen! Now look where his stupidity has gotten us!?"

Clyde: "sshhhhh"

I cried even more

"Lisakhanya Mthethwa?"

We all jumped up

Doc:"her heart stopped..."

Aidan:"No..no she can't be gone...its too soon"

Doc:"I've never came across anything like this before,but we tried everything but nothing helped, I even declared her dead,you see...(showing us his papers)....but somehow she woke up,just when I was about to exit the door to tell y'all she's gone"

Me:"so she's alive?...oohh thank you Jesus"

Doc: "Jesus indeed, cause we definitely had nothing to do with it,this is the first time anything like this has ever happened for the past five years of my life that I've been a Doctor, this is a miracle"

Aidan: "unbelievable"

Clyde: "can we see her?"

Doc:"yes of cause"

He leads us to her ward

She's lying on her back facing the ceiling with her eyes closed

Me:"Lisa?"

She lifts her head up and looks at us

Lisa: "Yonela"

I attack her with a hug we hold each other for dead life

Me:"don't do that, ever again! Do you understand!?"

Lisa (chuckles): "I won't do it again"

Me:"we still have so much to accomplish Lisa, after we graduate, we become top dog lawyers, buy our families houses,travel the world,get married to Hot African Americans at the age of

forty when we have fully enjoyed life..remember that?"

She nods

Me:"now how were we supposed to do all that with you dead?"

Lisa: "I'm sorry"

I hug her again

Lisa:"I love you "

Me:"I love you more"

I break the hug and wipe her tears

She looks at Aidan and Clyde

Lisa: "come here"

She hugs Aidan who has shed a few tears, they break it, she look at Clyde for a while

Clyde: "hey Lisa"

Lisa: "hi Clyde"

Clyde: "should I hug you or handshake?"

She smiles

Lisa: "anyone"

Clyde: "I'll hug you"

She shrugs her shoulders

Lisa: "okay"

They hug

Me: "Weird"

Aidan: "tell me about it, this is exactly how they were the first day they met"

Lisa: "where's Quinton?"

We all look around avoiding that heartbreaking question

Lisa: "he didn't come to see me?"

The hurt in her voice is not hard to miss

Aidan: "Lisa..."

Lisa:"I was about to die...and he never came to see me?"

Me:"he doesn't deserve you Lisa"

Aidan: "he hasn't been himself lately Lisa,he doesn't even come home to visit anymore, its like he's under some sort of spell the way he's carrying on,he doesn't listen to anyone besides that Sydney girl"

Me:"forget about him Lisa, you don't need him"

Lisa: "why is he doing this to me?"

She breaks down

Me:"you have to move on Lisa, this is not healthy "

QUINTON

Thank God its holidays, assignments were draining me,now I can relax and enjoy this time with my baby, I can't believe I almost let Sydney ruin things between us. I love Lisa and I can't imagine life without her,but something is just not right with her nowadays, its like she doesn't know me somehow,she asked me how many spoons of sugar do I like in my tea? She should know that better than anyone,she even let's me eat as much take outs as I want,I know I love fasts foods but she used to hate it when I have them all the time she preferred cooking but nowadays she doesn't cook at all..I know these are just little things but its the little things that make me love her so much,and these little things are slowly vanishing. I love it when she

calls me Q but now she likes calling me by my second name? Its not that I don't like my second name but I always thought its sexy when she say "Q" or "Quinton" She doesn't even call me love bug anymore just baby,I like baby but I loved the way she says "love bug" its such a turn on... But maybe I'm just imagining things "OMG! Ambrose! You won't believe this!"

I switch off the TV and turn to look at her

Me:"what is it bub?"

Lisa:"remember how I was telling you I'm not feeling well?"

Me:"Yeah,are you better now?"

Lisa: "No..but I just found out why"

She comes and sits next to me

Me:"why? "

Lisa:.....

Me:.....

Lisa:"I'm pregnant "

Me:.....

Lisa: "I'm two weeks pregnant... Look"

She shows me the pregnancy test

I heart beats in excitement I can't believe this

Me:"you pregnant? "

She nods biting her lower lip

Me:"I'm going to be a father?"

She nods excitedly

Me:"for real?"

Lisa:"Yes, for real"

I get up,pick her up and spin her,she giggles,I put her down and we share a kiss

Me:"oh liss you have made me the happiest man on earth"

I kiss her, I pull out then make her sit down

Me:"look,I know this pregnancy might be too much on you cause you still young,I'm sorry for making you a teenage mother, we really should've used protection, its not safe for us to be having babies when there's still people like the Johnsons who are probably plotting their next move to get hold of the diamonds, we have to be very discrete about this pregnancy... Other than that,I'm so very much excited,I can't wait for the next eight months"

Lisa:"diamonds?"

Me:"what?"

Lisa:"after the diamonds? Which ones?"

Me:"what do you mean which ones,the one and only"

Lisa:"oohhh oh yeah (chuckles) the diamonds,sorry I don't know where my head is at"

Quinton: "you know mom has suggested they stay with her,she'll be able to keep them safer....I told her No...but since they yours...do you think we should give them to her?"

Lisa:"Yes "

I did not expect that

Me:"you sure? You didn't even think about it"

Lisa:"yes I'm sure,give them to her,they'll be safer with her"

Me: "I don't know if that's a good decision cause

Lisa:" then why do you ask for my opinion of you not going to consider it? This is just like the time you allowed Sydney to come stay with us even after I said.....

Me:"OK OK... Geez, calm down,you don't have to bring that up all the time,how many times do I have to apologise?"

He sighs

Lisa: "Give them to her"

Me:"As you wish bub"

She smiles

Me:"mommy of Quinton junior "

She laughs

Lisa:"I love you Ambro"

This was the perfect time to call me Q, I never thought something this small would bother me so much

Me:"I love you too Liss "

Lisa:"let me go take a nap,I'm tired"

Me:"okay"

She kisses my cheek and walks upstairs, I take out my phone,I find myself looking through our pictures, I know she's right here even pregnant with my baby,but why do I miss her so much? I

feel like I love her more on the picture than in real life.....argh what's wrong with me..I should be excited making love to that woman who just told me the best news ever.

I get up and walk up the stairs when a call comes through before I reach the end of the staircase

Its Clyde

Me:"hello?"

"You need to get to the hospital"

Me:"what? Why? Is mom okay?"

"Its Lisa, she tried to commit suicide, you need to get here quick before you loose her forever"

Me:"mxm...I don't know what sick game you trying to play with me,bit its not going to work..Lisa is in our room taking a nap,so whatever Lisa you talking about is not my Lisa..

So I don't give a damn"

"What? Man I'm telling you Lisa is here! You've been dating Sydney not Lisa,Lisa is in hospital... Wake up man! What's wrong with you!?"

What the hell is going on?

Me:"Clyde, brother are you okay? Did you hit your head on a wall or something? I think whoever you saw just looks like Lisa "

"QUINTON! GET YOUR FUCKEN SKINNY ASS AT THIS FUCKEN HOSPITAL THIS FUCKEN INSTANT! DON'T FUCKEN MAKE ME COME GET YOU!"

Me:"you know what Clyde you have totally lost it,I'm not going to entertain your little meltdown right now.. I have a pregnant girlfriend who needs me...bye"

I hang up, I chuckle, talking about Lisa is in hospital when I can see her with my own two eyes right here, I get on the bed

I shake her

Me:"bub?"

Lisa(sleepy): "mmh?"

Me:"you okay?"

Lisa:"mhm"

I kiss her cheek and lie on the bed thinking
about what's wrong with Clyde?

.

.

.

to be continued

[07/29, 09:20] W: Continuation

LISA

ONE WEEK LATER

I wish I can say I'm happy I didn't die, but I really dislike my father for not allowing me to join him in the peaceful world, he says my purpose in this world has not yet been fulfilled... What is my purpose anyway? To get killed by someone else? Or to live with a broken spirit?

I must say I really enjoyed the physical pain when I tried to kill myself

I really need more of it, its way better than the emotional pain way more better so I'm now in this place called Tattoo Palace, Yes, I am getting myself a tattoo, I hear its very painful and pain is what I'm looking for.

Guy:"hey little miss,can I help you?"

A big strong buff guy with tattoos all over his body and piercings on his nose eyebrows and ears, stands right in front of me

Me:"h hey...I'm here to get a tattoo?"

Guy:"are you telling me?"

Me:"yes?"

He chuckles

Guy:"how old are you?"

Me:"eighteen "

Guy:"ID? "

I huff and take it out from my small bag, he

looks at it for a while

He smiles...weird

Guy:"where would you like your tattoo? "

Me:"I don't know, which is the most painful parts to get one?"

He chuckles

Guy:"well, in areas where the skin is more attached to the bone,with no meat,like the ankle,the knee,the rib part....but even on the meaty parts its still painful just more better, but you can't go around the pain no matter where you get it"

Me:"I want it on the rib part just below my breasts on the side"

Guy:"I see you not afraid of pain"

Me:"naaah, things that don't talk don't scare me"

I say mimicking his voice,he looks at me with

the scariest look I've ever seen ...I guess that was a bad joke

Guy(chuckles): "I like you kid...come let's get you tattooed up"

I follow him to a small room behind a curtain, I take off my shirt and I'm only left with a bra

Guy:"so what tattoo do you want?"

Me:"in Italics I want Quinton Ambrose O'Brien "

Guy:"Quinton Ambrose O'Brien "

He writes it down, he first draws with a normal pen,then he starts going over it with the needle, It was the most painful pain I've ever felt but I enjoyed it,it made my mind concentrate on it more than anything else...aahhh the adrenaline, the pain is such sudden rush for me,I don't want him to stop

Him:"seems like you enjoying this pain?"

I'm sleeping on my back with my eyes closed

Me(nodding):"ooohhh yeah!"

Him:"do you want colour?"

Me:"yeah...any colour that will make it beautiful"

He chuckles

Me:"I want you to write a poem right at the back of my neck"

Him:"what style of writing do you want it in?"

Me:"Aphrodite slim pro"

Him:"okay I'm almost done with this one...you will write it down in a piece of paper for me"

Me:"okay"

Oh yes this is the life, I want to do this more often

...

The next day

.

I don't want this pain to end its really helping me relax

"Can't believe you got a tattoo?"

I chuckle

Me:"can't believe I got his name on my body forever"

Yonela: "even a poem for him,are you crazy!?"

Me:"I think so....oh no! I've lost my mind! "

Yonela: "if love makes you this stupid,then remind me to never fall in love"

Me:"yeah whatever "

Yonela: "what if y'all never get back together, or just fall out of love with each other?"

Me:"then be it, I don't care, I still love my tattoo and I don't regret getting it"

Yonela: "what if in future you fall in love with someone else, how do you think that tattoo will

make him feel?"

Me: "I'll never fall in love with someone else...
Trust me"

Yonela: "how can you be so sure, you don't know
what the future holds"

Me(chuckles): "I know a lot about the future and
trust me, there's no one in this world who I'll ever
love like this guy tattooed on my body"

Yonela: "but y'all not even trying to get back
together"

Me: "I'll never get back with that betraying
cheating mother fucking scumbag"

Yonela: "but?....you just said....ayi I give up"

She puts her hands up in surrender and leaves
me in the sitting room

I've been eating like a maniac ever since yonela
forced me to eat, that has been my other new
hobby, I've gained so much weight but it's all

going to the ass and thighs and a bit if my arms and cheeks, my tummy refuses to expand,I would like to experience how it feels like being fat just a lil bit,one think I haven't stopped doing is crying, every night before I sleep a lot of things run through my mind and I can't help but cry...other than that,I'm doing just fine,although I failed a module this past semester,that really took a toll on me,its my first time failing,I've lost my focus the only thing that kept me going through high school,its gone now,I've become one of "them" the ones I've avoided becoming, the ones that date and get heartbroken I've become one of them.

My phone rings disturbing my thoughts

Me:"hello"

"Hey Lisa, its been a while,you haven't been attending your sessions?"

Me:"yeah look Bella I'm doing fine now,I don't

need them"

"But I'm the one who should make that decision"

Me:"yeah well you don't know me like I do and I'm telling you,I'm totally fine now, I'm over what the Johnsons did to me or what they still going to do to me which I don't know why they still haven't done it to me,but really I couldn't care less,Quinton can keep the diamonds, I don't care, you see Bella I don't care anymore, therapy is for people who still care,and I don't "

"Listen to me...go to Quinton's place now,he needs to see you"

Me(laughs): "Ha!! Oh please, Quinton is perfectly happy with his new lover,very happy in his home,on his bed and with his dick,he don't need me"

"Lisa,he needs you now more than ever,he's under a spell"

Me:"I really don't care what he's under in..whether its a spell or Sydney, let him stay under"

"Would you stop being stubborn, if you still love him and you care for his life, you need to go see him...today!"

Me:"Bella,Quinton and I were not meant to be and be happy together, even if I do fix us, something else will come"

"And you will keep fighting, come on,he needs you"

Me:"once he sees me will the spell be broken?"

Bella: "you will have to make him believe its you,yes brothers have tried making him see that Sydney is not you,but he's too blinded he really believes its you, please go there before its too late"

Me:"fine..I'll go there but that doesn't mean I'll get back with him"

"Just go"

She hangs up

I sigh more like huff

Me:"Oh Quinton! what have you gotten yourself into"

I lazily get up from the couch,I'm such a snob nowadays, I don't care about how I look,why should I?

I breath on my hand to smell my breathe..oh that's not good... But I'm too lazy to brush my teeth..I look at myself in the mirror I'm wearing my long PJs...

Me:"well they don't look much like PJs so I can go out with them right?"

I convince myself cause I so font feel like changing or bathing.. I smell my armpits, not thaaaat bad

Me:"nothing a little perfume won't solve"

I spray it on a little then smell myself

Me:"okay nothing 'a lot' of perfume won't solve "

I tie my messy hair,I walk closer to the mirror,
oohh god the eye bags! Dark eyes! I think I'm
getting wrinkles!! Damn I'm ugly! And I don't
give a fuck!

I hate not having a car,my driving skills are
useless

An uber picks me up

Me:"thank you"

I give him the money, I see him look away with a
bit of a disgusted face on him

Me:"something wrong?"

He looks away from me

Him:"nothing wrong mam,can you please hurry,I
need to be somewhere"

Me:"mxxxxm"

I open and get out of his car he drive off immediately

Me:"how rude!!"

Why was he so disgusted.. My breathe can't be that bad? I smell it again, okay,maybe a little, but that guy was just overreacting and plain rude! I could use some gum right now

I press the intercom it rings for a while

"Hello?"

Argh Sydney is here? This will be way harder now

Me:"Hi"

"Lizzy?"

I swear to God I'll punch the eyes out of that shitty face dodohead ..cause I know she's doing it on purpose, Lisa is the most easy name to remember

Me:"Lisa"

Sydney: "oh,you not welcome here"

Me:"can I talk to Quinton, the owner of this house?"

Sydney: "he's not here,sorry"

"Who is it Bub!?"

Did he just call her???.....oh fucken hell no! He's definitely bewitched!

Sydney: "its no one love"

Sydney: "look stay away from Ambrose, he's madly in love with me,not you,he wants nothing to do with you"

Me:"I'd like to hear him tell me that "

Sydney: "you lost bitch..accept defeat and walk away"

Me:"open this gate plastic face"

She drops the call, argh I so don't have the energy for this

I take my phone and call Quinton

"Hello"

My heartbeat accelerates, my palms become sweaty, I don't think I can do this, I thought it'd be easy since I don't care anymore.. But hearing his voice just brought back bad flashbacks, the only one that has been stuck on my mind, him uncontrollably fucking Sydney

"Anyone there? Hello?"

I take a huge breath in and out

Me:"Hi"

"Who's this?"

Me:"its me...Lisa "

"Why you calling me when you right down stairs?"

Me:"please open the gate"

"where you going?"

Me:"just open the gate please then you come down stairs to open the door"

"(Confused):oh okay"

I drop the call the gate opens, okay! This is it!

I walk up to the house,damn what a distance!
When last did I take a long walk? I'm sweating
and tired by the time I reach the door

I ring the bell and hold onto my knees for
balance

"I'll get it!!"

I hear him shout as if he's coming down the
stairs

The door opens,I breath before I stand up
straight and our eyes meet

There's a moment of silence,he's looking at me
in disbelief..I don't even know what to say to
him right now,the last time I saw him was the
day I hated him... well at least that's what I

thought

Me:"hi"

Quinton: "hi"

Talk about Awkward moments!

He looks back inside the house then looks back at me

Quinton: "how did you do that?...is this some kinda prank?"

He laughs and goes inside I guess I should just let myself in

He walks up to Sydney who's sitting by the lounge

Quinton: "Lisa? Why am I seeing two of you? Is this some sort of prank? You hired someone to look just like you?...(laughing).. Wow you good,you almost got me there"

He walks up to me and starts pulling my cheeks and playing with my face

Quinton (laughing): "she looks real,like she really looks like you bub,how did you pull this off?"

He asks looking at me...okay he has lost his mind completely! What do I say now?

Sydney (laughing): "yeah! Totally got you babe..its a prank..(pushes me towards the door)...thank you very much for the help,you can go now"

I push her away from me and walk up to Quinton

Me:"Quinton.. Its really me, I'm The real Lisa "

He puts his index finger under his nose

Quinton: "damn"

Okay I really should've brushed my teeth

I walk to the kitchen I know where I kept my gum,I open the draw and yep they still there sealed, I take one out and put it in my

mouth,then walk back to him

Me:"better now?"

He nods

Me:"good,now sit down, we need to talk"

He goes and takes a sit looking confused as hell ad Sydney sits next to him I sit on the couch opposite them

Me:"Quinton, that girl sitting next to you is not Lisa, that's Sydney "

Sydney: "she's lying Ambrose, I'm Lisa, you not going to believe someone who just came into your door step now?"

Me:"I'm Lisa Quinton... Think about it,since when do I call you by your second name? Sydney is the one who used it more"

He looks at Sydney

Sydney: "don't listen to her baby,she's just trying to separate us,you promised, you won't let

anyone come between us anymore"

Quinton: "why is there two of you?..what's going on here?"

He looks at me

Me:"tell you what's going on,that witch there ukuthakathile (bewitched you)..there's only one of me here you the only one who sees two,Quinton you have to believe me"

Sydney: "baby just think about everything we've been through, you just going to let someone who just came in here two minutes ago ruin what we've shared for so long,think about our baby,you can't afford to throw all that away,because you believe some obsessed bitch who tried to make herself look like me,cause she just want to destroy what we have"

Baby? Baby? Did she say baby?

Me:"what baby?"

Sydney: "I'm pregnant"

There's that sharp pain again, if I don't die now, I'm one hella strong woman, cause this is beyond being physically abused or emotionally, this is just plain soul destroying, I don't think I want to continue fighting for him right now, we'll never be happy

Quinton: "Lisa..."

We both look at him

Quinton: "am I going crazy? Have I lost my mind? Someone tell me that this is just a dream a very very bad dream"

He looks down holding his head

Oh No I can't stand seeing him like this

Me: "Quinton its me love bug"

He raises his eyes and looks at me

Me: "okay, let's do this, ask us any question..

That you know only the real Lisa will know the

answer"

Sydney: "This is ridiculous! Quinton get this bitch out of here,I can't be stressed like this,its not healthy for the baby!"

Quinton:"SHUT UP! everyone just shut up!!...okay?"

Silence

Quinton(sighs):"when was the first day we met?"

Sydney&l: "18 February 2016"

I look at her she gives me a sly look..oohh I see she did her homework, nx

He shakes his head

Me:"come on Quinton ask something you know no one else but Lisa will know"

Quinton: "What's the wildest thing we've ever done together"

Sydney: "we stole a bag from a shop and ran away from security while we were drunk as hell"

How the hell does she know that?

He looks at her and smile

Quinton: "you remember"

Sydney: "cause I was there sweetie"

Quinton: "what is the most embarrassing thing that's ever happened to me"

He told me to never ever tell anyone that secrete,he said only his mom and I are the only people he's told, not even if someone points me with a gun threatening to kill me,I should never talk about it,so I keep my mouth shut,I guess I've lost him

Sydney: "in fifth grade when you were going to say your speech,you were so nervous, that by the time you finished saying it your pants were wet and the whole class laughed at you, you

were the talk of the whole school for the whole year,they started calling you Mr Huggies"

She is even laughing,how does she even know this!? Unless Quinton's mom told her! Quinton looks pissed right now

Sydney: "you see baby,you only told me and your mom about that, that's why she couldn't answer you"

Me:"mxm..you know what,I give up"

I get up and attempt to leave but I feel someone grab my arm

Quinton: "wait!"

I turn to look at him,come on tears don't betray me,I've been doing a great job holding them in

Me:"Look Q, only you can get yourself out of this mess,I tried helping you but its beyond my control "

Quinton: "why didn't you answer when I asked

about the embarrassing moment of my life?"

I sigh

Me:"because Q...you made me swear not to ever say or mention it to anyone,whether they got a gun pointed at my head,I should never spill it out, its one of the secretes we promised each other we'll die with,and I didn't answer cause I know how much you don't want to be reminded of that day,and I couldn't say it with Sydney over here"

He looks at me for a while he pulls me into a tight hug,okay? He let's go

Quinton: "it really is you! You my real Lisa"

He cups my face,my heart beams with joy,he's back! My Q is back

Sydney: "Quinton! I'm the real Lisa!"

He looks back at her

Quinton: "Sydney... I know its you,I can see you"

Sydney: "what? Impossible!"

Me:"you witch! Your spell has been broken"

Quinton: "what?"

Me:"she cast a spell a spell on you..please believe me Quinton, I know you go way back with her she's your best friend and what not but I'm telling you the.....

He smashes his soft lips on mine

Quinton: "I believe you, I love you"

Me: "I love you too Q"

Quinton:"you have no idea how much I missed you saying that "

Me:"what Q?"

Quinton: "mmh yeah"

Me:"like this...Quuuuuuee"

He holds his chest

Quinton: "oh yes baby..just like that"

Someone clears her throat

We shift our focus on her

Quinton: "as for you...nc nc nc I'm very disappointed in you Sydney, to stoop that low...witchcraft?"

Sydney: "Quinton let me explain, please"

Me:"there's nothing to explain, you a snake! You came into our lives only to destroy what we built...I know you are working with Quinton's mom in all this and.....

Quinton (shocked): "what!?"

Me:"I swear Quinton I'm not making this up"

He looks at me

Quinton: "Lisa...calm down,I trust you"

Me:"sorry "

Quinton: "don't apologise"

I just feel like he's going to let her manipulate him again and he won't listen to me

Quinton: "you going to sit down and tell me everything"

He says looking furiously at Sydney

Quinton: "sit down!"

She startles and sits immediately

We also sit opposite her

Sydney: "Ambrose I came here because of work, I bumped into your mother weeks back, she asked me to contact you cause you needed someone by your side, she said since things between us didn't end well this is my chance to fix things since you are single"

Me: "but he wasn't single"

Sydney: "I'm explaining to Ambrose not some....."

Quinton: " I'd watch my mouth if I were you...I don't want to do something I'd regret....continue"

"

Sydney: "so then when I bumped into you at the mall,I knew I wanted us to go back to the way things were and that's where everything started"

Me:"you lying"

I look at Quinton

Me:"she's lying "

Quinton: "do you know the truth?"

Me:"Not really, but I sense she's she's not telling the truth"

Quinton: "Sydney tell us the truth while I'm still calm about this"

She keeps quiet

Me:"Today!"

She startles,Quinton looks at me amused

Sydney: "okay,fine,I never came here because of work,your mother called me, she told me you in

a relationship that is only bringing you down and you starting to ignore the family business because of her, she's changing you, you were doing great in looking for your father's diamonds, but when you finally met the girl who has them, you neglected the mission of getting the diamonds and fell madly in love with the enemy of the family, and now she wanted me to help her separate y'all and to make you love me like how you love her so that I can have control of you and the diamonds"

Me: "you've been after the diamonds too?"

Quinton: "that was before I knew you the one who has them"

Me: "oh No..(looks at Quinton)... I hope you didn't give her the diamonds yet "

Quinton: "I have"

Me: "no no, this is not good"

Quinton: "how did you make yourself look like

Lisa?"

Sydney: "I don't know, your mother gave me a pills, she said they will make you horny so that I can easily seduce you.. what I didn't know was that once I've had sex with you, you'll see me as Lisa so I first played along, then your mother told me to play along until she gets the diamonds"

Quinton: "what about the pregnancy, was it also mom?"

Sydney: "Yes"

Me: "she's lying "

They both look at me he looks back at her

Quinton: "was it also mom?"

Sydney:.....

Quinton(firmly): "what about the pregnancy, was it also mom?"

Sydney: "Yes"

Me:"lies"

I don't know how,but I can sense it when she lies

Quinton:"are you even really pregnant? "

Sydney: "yes"

Oh my Gosh she's not lying

Quinton: "my baby?"

Sydney: "yes"

Quinton: "Your plan?"

She keeps quiet for a while

Quinton: "I really don't like repeating myself"

Sydney: "Yes"

Quinton: "get out"

Sydney: "huh?"

Quinton: "OUT!"

She get up and heads for the door not even

taking her things

We look at each other as I think of the worst thing that came out of all of this,that I don't know if we'll ever move on from it,I feel my heart sink just by the thought of it

Me(whispers):"she's pregnant "

[07/29, 09:24] W: Insert 43

QUINTON

I've really messed up this time, Lisa doesn't wanna move back in with me, I understand this house brings her bad memories that led her to depression, I can't believe she tried killing herself because of me?

I can't believe she had to go through all that all because of me, Why didn't I notice what's been going on as much as Sydney looked like Lisa she acted and felt nothing like her but its like every time I looked into her eyes something within me would make me believe that its actually her but the love wasn't there I wasn't happy, she didn't have her humor or her laugh, I really thought I was just imagining things.

"WHERE IS SHE!!"

I roared as I made my inside the house looking around

"Quinton! Oh my gosh bro I missed.....

Me(furiously):" Where's your witch mother!?"

Candra:"what...what are you....

Me:"Dammit Candra! Where is she!?"

Candra:"she's in her office...but she....

I stormed away towards her office, I just made my way in

Me:"are you even my real mother?"

She closes her laptop,takes off her glasses then looks up at me

Mom:"I'm good thanks and yourself? "

Me:"give me one reason why I shouldn't kill you right now?"

Mom:"why you so worked up son?"

Me:"why did you use Sydney to destroy my relationship with Lisa?"

Mom:"I don't know what you talking about?"

Me:"witchcraft mom? To bewitch your own son?
How cruel can one be?"

Mom:"look, whoever is giving you this
information is messing with your head"

Me:"You the one who's messing with my
head,making me see Sydney as Lisa? What kind
of sick minded person are you?"

Mom(laughing): "what!? Is that even possible?
Son..are you okay?"

I move my hand to the back of my pants where I
feel my gun

Me:"you think this a joke? You think messing
with my mind and life is a joke!?"

Mom:"Quinton.... Honey...I'm your mother,how
can you even believe I'd do anything like that to
you?"

I let go of the gun leaving it still tucked in my

pants

Me:"I know everything, You fake ass side kick told me everything, the pills you gave her to drug me and make me see her as Lisa, just so you can get the diamonds... How could you put my life in danger like that? Why do care so much about these diamonds, there's plenty more diamonds that dad owned why do you want these so bad?"

Mom:"you don't understand Quinton, these aren't just normal diamonds "

My anger,hate and rage has now been fully replaced by curiosity, I sit comfortably on the chair opposite her

Me:"what do you mean they not normal? They look the same as the bunch of the diamonds in the vault?"

Mom:"you see your father had a friend who was from Bhutan, in the southern slopes,eastern

Himalayas, it is very known for its dark and white spiritualistic magic, This country is ruled by Chinese king, Jigme khesar Namgyel Whangchuck, who happened to own these special diamonds, thousands of them they were believed to carry some powerful source that could give one great power, so your father wanted the diamonds for himself so he could experience the so called great power, you know how your father was always wanted to be best, so he asked his friend from Bhutan who was the King's right hand man to steal the diamonds for him little by little and his friend agreed, your father would send the man he trusted which was your girlfriend's father to collect them from Bhutan, but little did we know that he kept the diamonds for himself and used to give us fake diamonds, your father found out, that's when he went after him but Mthethwa still refused to tell him where the diamonds were so he killed him"

Quinton:"wait wait, so you saying the diamonds have some sort of magic?"

Mom:"Yes"

I throw my head back and burst into laughter

Quinton: "and y'all actually believe in that crap?"

Mom:"Yes,you may laugh,but if you just let me keep these diamonds I'll show you what I'm talking about"

I get back to my seriousness

Me:"this is bullshit you would go to extents of bewitching me,because of some fairytale story? You are unbelievable, you crazy, you and your late husband... Give me those diamonds woman,cause its clear,not only did you have a weak heart but a weak mind too"

She gasps in total shock holding her chest

Mom:"how could you disrespect me like that,

with something so personal?"

Me:"mom,or whoever you are, you used witchcraft to make it look like I'm crazy,and ruined the only good thing that has been a big part of my life,so don't be surprised if I don't have the respect for you anymore, in fact if you don't give me those diamonds,I'm gonna send you to go join your husband in hell,where he's still burning "

Mom:"you wouldn't dare"

I take out my gun and put it on the table right in front of me

Me:"wanna bet?"

Mom:"look what that good for nothing whore turned you into...you'd actually kill your own mother because of her?"

Me: "you'd actually bewitch your own son because of diamonds?"

Mom:"Quinton I did what had to be done! You abandoned the mission in finding the diamonds because of her!"

I pick the gun up and point it at her

Me:"the diamonds "

Mom: "Quinton! Stop this nonsense"

She holds her chest as if she's gaping for air

Me:"just tell me where the fucken diamonds are!?"

Mom:"they belong to us! Not the Mthethwas!"

She's getting breathless, she picks up the glass with water on the table and drinks up,calming herself down

Me:"I'm gonna count to four"

Mom:....

Me:"one"

Mom:"Quinton, would you...

Me:"two"

Mom:"Is she really worth it?"

Me:"three"

Mom(screams):"I'm your mother!!!"

Me:"four!! "

I pull the slide of the gun back getting ready to pull the trigger

Mom:"okay okay okay....wait! Wait!"

She says with her hands up as she slowly gets up and walks towards her safe,she does the pin and opens it,she takes out the small black bag,she looks at them for a while without turning back to look at me

Mom:"we finally got what we've been looking for,for years and you just going to give it up for some loose pussy"

I feel my blood boil as I become more aggravated

Me:"the diamonds "

She turns around and throw the bag to me

Mom:"I'll get them back,one way or the other"

Me:"even if it means kill me?"

Mom:"here we are,you have a gun pointed at me,so why not?"

We gape into each others eyes inflamed

Me:"I guess you gonna have to try and kill me first"

Mom:"are you sure you want to be my enemy son? Cause things aren't going to end well"

I tuck my gun back into my pants

Me:"I really don't get it,you have everything you could possibly dream of,dad left you a bunch of money in two huge vaults and jewelry, how much more luxury do you want?..even if these diamonds had some kinda 'powers' (I roll my eyes).. Which is absolutely absurdity... What are

you going to do with that power?...just let the poor girl keep the diamonds so she can get her family out of poverty and also have a luxurious life like you..don't be greedy, mother"

I turn and walk out of her office,banging the door behind me, I hear a glass break against the door,as if she threw the glass at the door.

Me(chuckles): "crazy witch"

Magic powers? Ha! She's really lost it this time

"Quinton!"

I turn to be met by Aidan

Me:"Sup man"

I stretch my hand to do our famous handshake but he just looks at it,I move my back back

Aidan:"why are you so stupid man?"

Me:"excuse me?"

Aidan:"udom, you are stupid,empty headed, a

blockhead, a chump, a wanker, a Muppet,
numbskull, schmunck...

Quinton: "okay! I get it!

Aidan:" do you?"

He knocks on my head

Aidan: "cause I swear it seems like there's
nothing in there"

Me:"that's enough Aidan,its not my fault your
mother and Sydney used some messed up pills
and potions on me"

Aidan: "what!?"

Quinton: "I'll explain some other time,have to go
try fix things,if it happens they can't get
fixed.,....your mother is dead to me"

I walk out leaving him confused AF

.....

I knock three times and wait for someone to

open,I hope she's better than yesterday, I didn't even get the chance to talk to her,after Sydney left,she was too overwhelmed by Sydney's pregnancy,she just told me she can't make any decisions yet.

"What do you want?"

I look up and I'm met by a disgusted yonela looking at me like she looking at dog shit

Me:"hey,how are you?"

Yonela: "I'll be better once you disappear"

She pushes the door but I hold it before it closed

Me:"can I please come in?"

Yonela: "you not welcome"

Me:"please "

She sighs and walks away,I let myself in

Yonela: "if you here to cause more heart ache...."

Me:" No no never... I'm here to try mend things"

She looks at me for a while

Yonela: "seyiphelile nah ikorobela yaSdunu?"(Sydney ran out of love potion?)

Me:"is Lisa here?"

Yonela: "no she's gone"

Me:"where?"

Yonela: "far away from your idiot face"

I sigh

Me: "please don't....

" oh my gosh nella you should see the new tattooooo.....

She trails off as her eyes land on me and our eyes lock,she makes her way further inside

Lisa:"Quinton?.....hey"

Me:"Lisa,hi"

"Yonela,gone"

She says as she disappears I don't know where
cause my eyes are glued to this beautiful green
eyed creature

Lisa:"wanna sit down?"

I look at her for a while

Me: "yeah,sure"

She leads the way giving me a complete view
of her back,wearing that floral shot dress of
hers I like alot, I notice a fully exposed tattoo on
her neck but I can't read what it says, she sits
down and I do the same

We just gaze at each other

Lisa: "soo would you like something to drink?"

I really don't like being treated as a visitor by the
girl I love,but I really can't blame her

Me:"eerrm no thanks"

She sighs

Lisa:"okay"

She looks so gorgeous, she's gained weight and I'm so loving it

She looks better than yesterday, she's clean and smells good now,her hair is combed but her eyes are still puffy,I hate to be the reason behind that

Me:"Lisa... (Sighs)... I'm sorry "

She looks at me concerned

Lisa: "who died? Oh my ghoshh is Aidan okay? Clyde?..."

Me:" what?.. No.."

She sighs in relief

Lisa: "oh! Don't scare me like that"

I chuckle

Me:"I'm sorry about the past three weeks, I

really am Liss, besides the fact that I wasn't myself, but I'm sorry I didn't listen to you after you said no to the idea of letting Sydney stay with us, I'm so sorry Lisa, I don't know what to say, I just need your forgiveness, desperately"

She remains quiet as she lays her back on the couch and folds her arms with a very sad expression on her face looking straight forward

Me: "I know its not easy for you, after everything you've been through, I've put you through, but please bub, I need you in my life, I promise to listen to you and never doubt your decisions, I need your guidance, your love, I need you by my side Lisa "

She remains quiet in the same position

The silent treatment, I hate those, I just wish she could throw a tantrum at least

Me (whispers): "please..... say something"

Lisa: "why Quinton? "

Me:"huh?"

Lisa:"why don't you trust me?"

Me:.....

Lisa:"what have I done so bad that made you not trust me?"

Me:"I do trust you"

Lisa: "you don't..... you always believed her word over mine..and that was before she used a spell on you...you trusted her more than me"

I feel my chest getting heavy and painful as the cat has caught my tongue

Lisa:"she'd pick fights with me,but you always took her side,even though I tell you she started it, you never wanted to hear it,I tried making you see how uncomfortable it makes me when she's there,but you never paid attention to me,I'd try to get closer to you but you just turned your back on me..(she wipes her

tear) she made everything seem like I was the bad guy, and you believed it..Quinton..you loved her more than me, while you were still yourself "

Me:.....

Lisa: "I tried talking to you but it would always turn into an argument, you were always against me while protecting the devil...you spent more time with her, before she even moved in, you texted her more than you talked to me, she came between us before she even moved in, of didn't all start with the spell Quinton, it all started with you.....but you were too damn blind to see it"

I bow my head down as I let the hard sad truth sink in

Me: "I'm so sorry Lisa "

She's now crying silently

Lisa: "do you know what was most painful though?"

Me:....

Lisa: "seeing you make love to her....on the same bed that we shared, they way you dismissed me thereafter..... On your birthday, the day I woke up in the middle of the night to bake you your favourite cake,the day I told myself I'll try to accept the situation of staying with Sydney, the day I decided to forgive you for the way you've been treating me,cause I thought it was because of your good heart that blinded you,the day I was willing to put everything behind us and start over,was the day you killed not only my heart, but crushed my spirit,that same night,was the night you destroyed me,all of me"

Me: "Lisa... I've done you wrong, I fell under the trap,I was stupid... Please,please don't do what I did to you,please don't turn tour back on me,I love you too much,its literally painful"

I hold her hand which is covered in a beautifully

designed tattoo from her wrist and all over on the back of her hand

Lisa: "how Quinton? How can I forgive you when I have so much anger towards you? You treated me like last nights trash,like I didn't matter,the only thing that mattered was Sydney being safe and happy, you ignored the fact that I wasn't happy,even if I literally told you,but I was communicating with myself"

Okay,we never fully moving on from this,my throat is dry, my heart is too heavy, this is way harder than I thought, I really did a number on her,I hate myself so much right now

Lisa: "even if I wanted to forgive you....she'll now always be a part of your life,she's carrying you very first born baby,she's carrying something special, something that I can only dream of carrying for you,your very first child"

Me:"Lisa.....

Lisa: "and its a boy"

Me: "how do you....."

I trail of

She sighs and remains silent for a while

Lisa:" I've been meaning to tell you something important about me,but you always shut me out,or we'd end up arguing and I never got the chance to tell you"

Me: "please tell me"

Lisa: "I have a special gift....I don't know how it works yet,and I can't use it until I have forgiven all those who've done me wrong and my heart must be pure,with no hatred or anger, so I guess it will never work cause those things I don't think I can achieve..... But, sometimes it works but its still a bit rocky,I don't have control over it yet"

Me:"you have supper powers?"

She chuckles between her tears as she wipes them

Lisa:"wouldn't call them super powers, like wonder woman or superman or anything of that sort"

Me:"aw man! I was really looking forward to flying above the city at night,using your super speed to go get me a few things from Paris, or your super strength to carry my car when it breaks down...I'd be like..'yo babe,stupid car broke down again, do me a favour and carry it to the mechanic for me?'"

She giggles,I join in,at least she's laughing

I see a glimpse of happiness for a few seconds there,I get down on my knees

Me:"please bub, please,we can work things out,please"

Her expression changes to sad again

Lisa: "I almost took my life away Quinton, because I couldn't handle it anymore.... I don't want to go through that again"

Me:"Lisa, I know nothing will be perfect,but please Liss,I need you,I won't be able to carry on without you"

Lisa:"I want to forgive you Quinton, I really do,it'll take time until I fully completely wholeheartedly forgive you"

Me:"I understand.... Can you at least come back home?"

She shakes her head

Lisa:"I can't Quinton, it'll make it even harder for me"

Me:"I understand...how do we move on from here?"

She helps me get up from my knees to sit on the couch

Lisa: "I don't know....I don't know if I can move on from this,its just too much"

My burning eyes finally give in as tears manage to escape

Me:"but Lisa... I love you, what am I suppose to do about that?",

Lisa: "I think its best we just remain friends..."

Me:" No,please don't say that...anything but that"

Lisa: "that's all I can give right now...I can't take the heartache anymore Quinton, its all just too much for my already broken heart"

Me:"friends until when?"

Lisa: "until....I don't know,we'll just have to wait and see"

silence

Is it healthy for a human being's heart to be this painful?

Me:"friends it is"

I stretch my hand,she looks at it for a while before bringing her hand in for a handshake

Lisa: "friends"

We both in tears,she chuckles

Lisa: "oh God, would you look at us...we such a mess"

She gets up then comes back with tissue

We clean our face up

She sighs

Lisa: "phew! Would you like ice cream?....I feel like we need it"

Me:"yeah I could use some of that"

She gets up and disappears to the kitchen

I take out the black small sack from my pocket and pour the diamonds on the small coffee table

"I've got vanilla guess its our lucky d.....

She trails off as her eyes land on the diamonds

She comes sit next to me and give me the ice cream tub

Lisa:" you managed to get them back?"

Me:"yeah,you were right about her Lisa, she's evil, she said she will get them back one way or the other"

Lisa: "you know what's so weird?"

Me:"what?"

Lisa:"as soon as I saw them I felt some kind of excitement, I feel so attached to them somehow"

She takes them and looks at me

Lisa: "weird right?"

Me:"do you know what's crazy?"

Lisa: "what?"

Me:"mom thinks they have some kind of magic that gives one powers or something like that"

I laugh

Me:"crazy right?"

She looks at them for a while

Lisa(chuckles): "yeah...that's crazy"

She puts them away

Lisa:"are you going to eat that?"

She says as she grabs the tub from me and opens it,we dig in

Me:"damn,they not lying when they say this shit makes you feel better"

She giggles

Lisa:"wait until you we have some of that chocolate, and chips and my very famous dagwood and cold drink and..."

Me:"whhooaaa slow down...is that what you've

been eating everyday?"

She looks down

Lisa: "Nooo"

I chuckle her phone rings before I could say anything

She pick it up

Lisa:"hey Bella"

....

Lisa:"yes he's right here with me"

...

Lisa: "he's okay...why?"

...

Lisa: "No he's not hurt,he's fine,we having ice cream"

...

Lisa (chuckles): "okay..don't worry we fine"

She drops the call

Me:"what was that about....."

Bhaa!!

I jump on her for us to get down

Bhaaa!!!

Another shot goes out,coming from the window firing towards us

We stay low with Lisa under me as I cover her head with my arms

The shooting stops

Lisa(clinging on me,breathlessly):"what was that about....."

She trails off as she stares at my tummy and holds her mouth in shock

Me:"what?"

Lisa:"you bleeding! "

I feel my body getting weaker.....

.....

[07/29, 09:27] W: Insert 44

LISA

I'm pacing up and down in the waiting room

Yonela: "Lisa, calm down"

I stop and look at her

Me:"calm down? How can you expect me to calm down right now... Oh my dear God I hope he's alive...what the hell is taking them so long!? It can't be that bad!...(softly)...its not that bad right?"

Aidan:"he'll be fine"

Me:"really!? Has he been shot before?"

He shakes his head

Me:"then how the hell do you think he'll be fine....if you have nothing nice to say,please shut up"

He looks at me as if I'm crazy

I wipe the tears that are running uncontrollably down my face

I think I'm going to loose my mind right now! I can't stay calm,I start pacing again

Me:"who would want to kill my Quinton... Who!?"

Aidan: "Clyde is sorting that out now"

Me:"then once he's found that person,I want to see him kill that asshole"

I'm fuming with anger and many other emotions

I notice his mom and Candra running towards us but his mom is just walking calmly

Candra:"Is he okay,what did the doctors say"

No one answers her

Candra: "hello!!?"

Yonela: "yooh can't you see we in the waiting room? Which means we still waiting..geez!"

Candra: "mxm"

She looks at me,I ignore her and carry on pacing

Q's mom:"if my son dies,I blame you"

I look at her

Me:"since when do you care what happens to your son,when you the same witch that casts

spells on him,not even caring of the after effects that could happen,so don't come here acting all holly and motherly Nx"

I know Quinton said I should respect my elders but I hate his mom and I'll never respect her after what she's done

Mom:"you so disrespectful, you even passed it on to my son,he can now raise his voice at me and make demands because of you"

Aidan: "Mah! This is so not the time for this!"

"Mr O'Brien?"

He interrupts before she could say anything

We run up to the doctor

Candra:"how is he?"

Doc:"serious damage around his pelvic area,also cracked the pelvic bone,so he will be using a wheelchair "

Aidan:"so he's awake? "

Doc: "he's still unconscious, but you can see him"

He leads the way

Doc:"I'll leave y'all to it"

He walks out, my heart breaks as I see him lying there all pale and cold,I run my hands on his face,he's so cold,his lips are dry,his eye lids are the only red part that shows he still has blood in him left, Aidan gives me a chair to sit,I take his cold hand into mine and kiss it

Candra:"Quinton, I'm so sorry,for acting like a spoilt brat,I promise I'll give you the respect you deserve that you always preach to Aidan and I, please just wake up and be better "

I'm staring at his body I can't get over how white and pale he is

Candra:"and Lisa? "

I look up at her

Candra: "I'm so sorry for the way I've treated you, I shouldn't have acted the way I did, I should've been there for you when my brother disappeared, not hate you, I'm sorry for the pain I've caused on top of the pain you've been going through..please forgive me"

I wipe my tears and smile at her

Me: "I forgive you"

She smiles widely then comes all the way around the bed to me and attacks me with a hug

Candra: "you've been nothing but good to us, you so humble, even when we said things we knew would hurt you, but you never for once fought us or defended yourself, which makes me feel so horrible"

Me: "it's okay Candra, I'm just happy we cool now"

Candra: "my brother is so lucky to have you in

his life,please I know my brother can be mischievous at times,but please be the girl who'll stick with him no matter what"

Me:"I will"

She turns to look at her mother

Candra: "mom,I think you should apologise too"

She looks at Candra up and down,then clicks her tongue, oh my gosh I've never met such an evil mother in my life,to think of how I felt for her when I first saw her lying helplessly on the hospital bed,to think of all the prayers I said for her to get better,I thought I was helping a human not a witch

Yonela: "Quinton...although sometimes you can be so stupid and blind and....."

I clear my throat

She sighs

Yonela:" but we still love you,so wake up

already"

Aidan: "yeah man,you need to be there when we sort out the person who did this to you"

His mom walks closer to Quinton's bed,she bends as she lays a kiss on his forehead

Q's mom:"mommy loves you"

I feel like strangling her right now,is it wrong of me?

Aidan's phone rings

Aidan: "I have to get going"

He excuses himself as he answers his phone on his way out

Aidan: "I'll be there in a second"

Candra: "I also have to be somewhere,I'll see y'all"

She kisses her brother on the cheek

Her mom follows after her not saying a word

I breath out

Yonela:"finally! Thought they'd never leave"

I chuckle

Yonela: "I'm sure you want some alone time with him...should I wait for you outside or..?"

Me:"no, you go home and rest,I'll be here for some time"

Yonela (sighs):"okay then"

She kisses my forehead

Yonela: "he'll be fine... I'll see you later"

She walks out and closes the door behind her

I look at him

Me:"okay they gone,you can wake up now"

Yeah that didn't work

Me:"I'm serious Q, you have to wake up now,I need to hear your voice or see you blink,please"

I pull the sheet that's covering only his lower body up to cover his whole body

Me:"you must be freezing,don't they have proper warm blankets here?"

I sigh as I feel my eyes burning again

Me:"are we ever going to be happy like for a long time,why is it that our happiness is always so short lived, please just wake up Q, look,I've long forgiven you,wholeheartedly, I forgive you Quinton cause I love you....yes,despite everything, I just can't help but love you even more..(laughs)..something must be totally wrong with me,I mean I should've long left your ass...,...but I can't, you stole my heart and now,I can't even live without you"

I move my chair closer and play with his hand

Me:"a lot has happened, a bit too much,I have forgiven, but you were right,its not easy to forget,from now on,our lives will never be the same,there's just so much that I'm not sure we can ever move on from,but I'll try,just give me some time, it won't be easy watching you play daddy with a child of another woman,but I have to accept that its your child too and you have to be there,just please don't allow her to use this to get between us again, cause I won't be able to take it.. I will kill her next time,I'm not joking, I'll start by popping that fake ass of hers..(chuckles).. But I will love your child as my very own cause God knows how much I love kids, they bring so much joy..... Quinton, I really do still think,friendship is the relationship that's best for us,but it'll be very hard with all these feelings and chemistry.. I'm afraid Quinton... I'm afraid things will never be the same and we'll end up drifting more and more apart"

I look at the time,I need to go so I can bring him clean clothes tomorrow

Me:"I have to get going now...I better come back and you awake tomorrow "

I stand up

Me(whispers): "I love you"

I bend over and kiss his lips,I feel him kiss me back

I try getting up but his hand pulls me back,I stare at him,his eyes are still closed,he pulls my head closer and pecks my lips

He opens his eyes,a silent short laugh escapes my mouth

Quinton: "I love you too"

Me:"you awake"

Quinton:"mhm"

I hug him

"Aahh ouch"

I quickly let go

Me:"I'm so sorry... I'm so happy you awake"

Quinton: "its still too soon for me to leave you alone in this world"

Me:"you right we could use a hundred more years "

He laughs but it changes into a groan

He tries getting up but he can't move his lower body,he looks at me

Quinton: "why can't I feel my legs?"

I bite my bottom lip, scared for him

Me:"uhm.....

Quinton (whispers):"why can't I feel them Liss?"

Me:"you will feel them....just not now"

He lays back looking distraught

Me:"don't worry Q, you'll get better in no time....you'll see"

Quinton: "I won't be able to use my legs?"

Me:"its only temporary Q"

Quinton: "my legs Lisa,how am I supposed to do anything without my legs?"

My heart sinks at the sound of his sad tone

Me: "it won't be forever Quinton"

Quinton: "is that what the doctor said?"

I shake my head

Me:"no but..."

Quinton: "so you a doctor now?"

I look down and fiddle with my fingers

Quinton: "I'm sorry,I didn't mean that"

Me:"I know...I have to go"

Quinton: "so soon"

Me:"its getting late and I don't have a ride back,I have to call an uber"

Quinton: "please don't leave me here,alone"

Me:"but visiting hours are almost over"

Quinton: "please....don't go"

We stare at each other for a while

Me:"okay"

He smiles and pats the on the space next to him

I roll my eyes and make myself comfortable as I lie next too him

Me: "okay fine,I guess I could ask to spend the night"

Quinton: "that's my girl"

Me:"but if they charge me,its coming out your pocket "

Quinton: "geez,let's make the niggas who almost

died pay for everything"

I laugh as I fidget to make myself comfortable,the bed is a bit wide so its just enough, so we both facing the ceiling, he moves the blanket so that it also covers me

Quinton:"that's better"

I turn my face to look at him,only to find him staring at me leaving only an inch between our noses

Me:"thanks"

Quinton: "you welcome,sqemeza"

Me:"argh not that name please!"

He laughs a little

Quinton: "but it suits you"

Me:"let me get going "

Quinton: "okay! I'm just kidding you not sqemeza"

Me:"good"

Quinton: "you greeneyezilla"

I attempt to get up he pulls my dress

Quinton: "I'm kidding I'm kidding.. Don't go"

I'm failing to keep an angry face as my lips curve up betraying me

Me:"call me names again, I'm leaving your ass"

Quinton (chuckles): "you sure you wanna leave this sexy ass of mine?"

I lay back on the bed

Me(laughing): "full of ourselves much?"

We laugh softly and the room fills with silence

Quinton: "did they even give me injection?"

Me:"what for?"

Quinton: "to ease the pain"

I turn my whole body to face him

Me:"that bad?"

He nods, my heart cracks in sympathy

...

"You were born with a great gift you are a healer
and a

foreseer"

...

Me:"maybe I can help"

Quinton: "how?"

Me:"I don't know,but part of my gift is healing "

He turns his face to look at me

Quinton: "that's awesome...well,work your
magic girl!"

I laugh as I sit up...I slide the blanket down to
have a view of his bandaged wound...I look at
the bloody bandage for a while,then it hits me!

Me:"just one problem "

Quinton: "what?"

Me(biting my nails):"I don't know how to use it"

Quinton: "wow,thanks a lot Lisa"

Me:"okay,let me try"

Quinton: "yeah,please do"

I stand on my feet next to the bed..okay,so how will I do this?..uh'ha!

I stretch out my hand towards his wound

Me:"I call healing unto this wound, heal heal heal!!!"

He bursts into laughter, which kinda annoys me cause I'm trying to help him here...his laugh changes to groans as he's in pain

Quinton: "Lisa..are you trying to kill me!?"

He says with a big grin on his face

Me:"Quinton.... You find this funny? I'm trying to heal you here,and I'm also trying to figure

myself out..and you find humor in that?"

He tries to maintain a straight face but he's failing dismally

Quinton: "okay,that was really stupid of me,I'm sorry... Please carry on"

I sigh

I place my hands over his wound, I close my eyes tightly

Me:"uummm...uummmm when I open my eyes.. Ummmmmm this wound will be gone....uummmm....Quinton will be able to walk....uummmmm...in the name of the power of healing..ummmmm"

I hear sounds coming from Quinton as he is struggling to hold in his laugh

I sigh and open my eyes with hopes that it worked

To my disappointment its still the same

Me: "how are you feeling now?"

He folds his lips inside his mouth and nods giving me a thumbs up and a wink

Me:"can't believe you holding in so much laughter right now"

He shakes his head no,he can't even talk the way he so badly wants to laugh

Me:"argh just let it out"

He let's it out and laughs hard

Quinton (laughing): "ooouuuchh.. So painful"

His laugh is mixed with pain

Me:"stop laughing Quinton,you hurting yourself"

Quinton: "aahh fuck...aahh"

He's in real pain

Me:"I'm sorry Q...I guess my powers don't work yet or I just don't know how to use them"

Quinton: "its okay Lisa, you'll figure it out,don't

worry about me,I'll heal with time"

I sigh in frustration, I really wanted to heal him,I wonder if I'll ever be able to use my gift... I'm starting to doubt if its even there

Me:"let me try again"

He shakes his head continuously

Quinton: "NO! its okay bub, I've felt too much pain for one day"

He signals me to come back to bed,I go back and sleep beside him

silence

Me:"hey Quinton? "

Quinton:"hmm"

Me:"do you notice anything different about the diamonds when I hold them?"

He turns his head to face me and frowns a little

Quinton:"I don't know, I never pay attention, do

you see something "

Me:"its just....earlier today, I think I saw them glow a bit"

Quinton: "really?"

Me:"Yeah...weird I know"

He remains quiet for a while

Quinton:"yeah,weird"

We talk about other random things for the whole night

[07/29, 09:28] W: Insert 45

LISA

I stretch my hands looking to feel some comfort on someone's body but nothing, I slowly open my eyes and I'm alone on the hospital bed.

I sluggishly sit up as I rub my eyes, I open them to look around only to find his family except this mother and Clyde sitting on the chairs minding their own business also yonela, I yawn and manage to get their attention

Aidan:"oh..good morning sleepy head "

Me:"morning everyone..... And you Aidan"

They greet me back

Yonela: "can't believe you slept here"

Candra:"in such a small bed"

Aidan:"who needs space when you can just snuggle with your man?"

We all look at him

Aidan: "oh no,not for me,I mean like for you girls,like why do y'all need space when you can snuggle with your man."

Candra:"why are you explaining yourself bro,we never said anything? "

Yonela:"Guilt"

Aidan:"don't start with me Nella"

Yonela: "ayibo..what did I say? I didn't say you gay?"

We laugh

Aidan: "who said you said I'm gay?"

Yonela: "oh...sorry,I thought I was thinking out

loud,guess I wasn't"

Aidan: "so you think I'm gay?"

Yonela: "I think I should stop thinking so much"

Aidan:"you just wait....we'll see who's gay"

Ayi these two are always on each others throats

Me:"where's Quinton?"

Candra:"they changing his bandage"

Me:"oh okay,when did y'all get here?"

Yonela: "just a few minutes ago

Me:" weeh Eish... I forgot to ask you to bring clean clothes for Quinton"

Candra: "don't worry,I got that covered"

I sigh

Me:"phew! You a life saver"

She laughs

Candra: "geez its just clothes,he could've worn

the hospital's light dress and go home wearing it"

Me:"haaa no,those things expose your whole butt outside "

They laugh

Candra: "you don't want them looking at your man's junk girl"

She winks at me,I throw my head back and laugh

Me:"oh God y'all all crazy"

Finally the cool loving and fun Candra I first met is back

The doctor walks in pushing Quinton on the wheelchair, my mood drops as I notice how down he is,my lips curve down,I feel my heart sink

Doc:"good morning"

Us:"morning doc"

Doc: "who can I talk to who will be responsible for this man?"

Candra: "he's gonna have to come stay at home he can't stay alone while he's like this, so I guess I'm responsible"

Quinton: "No...I'm not going back home, I don't want to be anywhere near your mother"

Yoh, the talk about awkward!

Aidan: "then who'll take care of you, you can't stay alone"

Quinton: "I'll hire someone, a nurse"

Yonela: "yoh a nurse? Will bathe you, feed you, clothe you.... Okay"

Doc: "okay, so do you need me to organise a nurse for you, now?"

Quinton: "Yes"

Me: "No"

All eyes land on me

Me:"I'll be responsible for him"

Doc:"are you okay with that Mr O'Brien? "

Me:"yes he's okay with that "

He smiles at me

Quinton: "I'm down with that"

Doc:"okay then,this is what you'll need to do.....

He goes on and on telling me about his medication

and changing of his bandage

Candra took us to Quinton's apartment, now I'm not so sure if I made the right choice, this house just brings back so many bad memories only a few good ones...but its only for until Quinton gets better after that,I'm out,specially now that we back to friendship, I really think this way is best,in that way we still stick together and

protect each other without being romantically involved which will hurt so much if things go South again...so yeah! My mind is made up..I'm not getting back together with Quinton again but I'll always be by his side

We get to the house and Candra helps me get Quinton out of the car into the wheelchair, he's being so difficult, he doesn't want to be helped

We finally made it to the house, I'm pushing him to the lounge

Quinton: "I can't take it from here Lisa"

Me:"but I want to....

Quinton: "I said I can handle it"

I let go and he pushed himself to the lounge

I sigh and turn to look at Candra who's behind me

Me: "looks like this is going to be harder than I thought"

Candra: "one thing about Quinton, he doesn't like being useless, he's always been hands on with everything, and he's usually the one who helps people, so now that he needs the help...."

Me:"he doesn't like it"

Candra: "just be patient with him,he'll come around, this mustn't be easy on him"

I sigh

Me:"I understand "

Candra(sighs):"okay girl,good luck,I'll keep coming to check up on you"

Me:"cool,thanks Candra"

Candra: "don't mention it"

We share a hug

Me:"bye"

Candra: "chow"

She cats walk out I follow her,closing the door

right after her

I take a deep breath before walking back to the lounge

Me:"would you like something to eat?"

He's watching cricket..he looks up at me

Quinton: "no thanks"

Me:"but you..."

Quinton: "I said no thanks"

I sigh for the hundredth time,he thinks this is easy for me?

Me:"fine suit yourself"

I attempt to walk away but he pulls my hand

Quinton: "sorry,its just when I say no,can we please leave it there?"

Me:"but you only saying no cause you don't want my help,not because you not hungry "

Quinton: "okay fine,sorry, does the offer still

stand?"

Me:"mxm,no"

Quinton: "I'm starving here"

Me:"die"

He gasps

Quinton: "says the girl who was crying her lungs out when I was dying in front of her yesterday"

I shiver

Me:"please don't remind me of that, it was the worst torture I've ever went through "

Quinton: "I'm sorry bub,didn't mean for you to experience that"

I look at him confused

Me:"its not your fault,you didn't know that we were going to be ambushed"

Quinton: "please come here"

He pats the on the space next to him,I walk

closer and sit there

He looks at me for a long time,I could literally see the sparks and I can hear the fireworks exploding and making a beautiful image...am I going crazy?

Me:"Quinton..... How long are we going to play this staring game?"

Quinton: "until you blink"

Me:"is that a challenge mister?"

Quinton: "oohhh yeeaahh"

Me:"challenge accepted "

I squint my eyes and move closer

Quinton: "you so wanna blink right now"

Me:"what ever you trying to do,is so not going to work "

Quinton: "oh my God"

Me:"what?"

Quinton: "there's something on eyelash"

Me:"not buying it"

Quinton: "really? Its kinda big"

Me:"I'm not dumb Quinton, I would see it"

Quinton: "I'm not kidding Lisakhanya"

He called me by my full name! He's serious! Oh my gosh!! OK don't panic Lisa stay calm!!!! Why am I shouting!!! In my mind!!!

Quinton: "that's really going to get into your eye..we should stop playing"

I blink uncontrollably

Me:"get it off me!!! Get it off!!"

I jump up and down hitting my eyes

He bursts into laughter...I stop and slowly turn to look at him

Me:"why do you like doing that? "

I huff and throw myself next to him he can't

stop laughing

Quinton (laughing): "Bub!! Please stop!..aahh you killing me!"

Tears are even running down his face...like seriously!

Me:"mxm..you know what Quinton... I..I..I'm never talking to you again! Ever!"

He wipes his tears but still laughing a bit, he fans himself with his hands

Quinton: "oh God,you hurting me Liss...you love seeing me in pain don't you?"

I huff and turn my on him

Quinton: "Lisa?"

I ignore him

Quinton:"oohh Lissaaa"

Mxm you not going to laugh Lisa!

Quinton: "yo maLilliza"

Not going to laugh!! And that's not funny! Nx I should turn with a hot slap

I feel him trail his finger on my back

Quinton:"malillizana"

Oh I know he did not just call me that!?!... I'm so not looking back,when I say I'm not talking to someone.. I mean it!

Quinton: "mlizisto!"

Haaa! I turn

Me:"mlizisto? mlizisto! Really Quinton?.... Do I look like some gangster or drug lord to you!?!..aarrgh! Nx nx nx nx..mxxxxxmm!!!"

I stand up

Me:"and FYI this was so not me talking to you!! I'm shouting at you...so I'm still sticking to my word...Never talking to you again!!...Queenzisto!"

I walk to the direction of the kitchen

Me (talking to myself): "mlizisto? Can you believe that guy?...calling me mlizisto?.... Imagine people calling me that?....yo wasup mlizisto! Haaa...God forbidooooo!"

I can hear him still laughing.. I don't get what's so funny? When I'm clearly mad at him! Bloody motherfather!

I open the fridge ohh my goodness gracious me! So much take outs?

Its like he hasn't been living with a woman, cause this is the same as when I used to leave him alone during holidays

Me (shouting): "Fasts food Quinton!! Really!!?"

Quinton:"it wasn't me!"

Me:"lame! Try another Lie"

He laughs...he should really stop laughing, he's hurting himself..wait a minute, did I just talk to him? Ohh Noo..well it was shouting.. Eish okay

I'll ignore him from now on....wait why am I not talking to him again? Am I even mad at him? I'm so confused,I'm moving out,he should hire a nurse. What am I saying? Okay let me get on with that...what am I going to make again?..

I take out some chicken.. I'll just get on with cooking

I decide to call Bella while I wait for the food to get ready

"Lisa...how is he holding up?"

This woman amazes me,I didn't even tell her he got shot,can't wait till I can do that

Me:"he's okay...he's still in too much pain"

"I can't imagine, but I know you'll do a great job in getting him better"

Me:"how? I tried using my healing powers, but they were a miserable failure "

She laughs..why is everyone finding this funny?

"You'll get there Lisa don't worry"

Me:"you know I tried the whole meditating technique but kwaa..nothing"

She laughs more, what's so funny? Did I just crack a joke? Am I Steve Harvey?

"Lisa,there's still a lot of people you haven't forgiven and you full of hate,you should make peace with your heart,that's the door to your gift"

I sigh

Me:"but Bella, there's just some people I don't think I can ever forgive"

"Sure you can...you were born with the pure heart,forgiveness is in your blood"

Me:"really? Then why do I feel so much resentment "

"You need to pray Lisa,God will reveal the rest"

Me:.....

"Did you get the diamonds?"

Me:"yes,Quinton did"

"Its still haven't been revealed to me why they belong to you"

Me:"there's something strange about those diamonds Bella "

I walk up to the pots and stir

"What is it?"

Me:"yesterday...when I held them..they started glowing, just a little then stopped"

"

Me:" I don't know maybe I was imagining, but it was a light green glow"

"Just like the colour of your eyes"

Me:"yeah"

"Interesting"

Really? That's all you going to give me?

Me:"yeah do you know what it could mean?"

She sighs

"Nope,this is for you to figure out on your own"

Me:"wow, I'm never going to figure this out"

"That's the problem right there..you know my gift only started working when I started believing in it,that there was something greater inside of me,and I did my all means to find myself,before I knew it,I was having visions"

Me:"I try to believe in myself Bella but, nothing, all I get is Quinton laughing at me"

She laughs...is she serious right now? I'm pouring my heart out here?

Me:"just like how you doing now"

"I'm sorry..its still early Lisa, you'll find yourself eventually"

Me:"can you please tell me this one thing"

"What?"

Me:"please tell me that,we've passed the storm now...this is too much..I mean there was even a hurricane"

"I won't tell you that the storm is over because this is earth, they'll always be trails...all I can say is pray harder and stick by your mans side,he needs you"

Me:"yeah about that....he's not my man anymore,we broke up,we decided to stay friends now"

She bursts into laughter....ayibo!. .I move my phone from my ear and look at it in disbelief

Me:"Bella? Are you okay? What did you smoke today? "

"(Laughing).. Friends! Yeah right!"

Me:"Yes..and there's nothing funny,this way we can still be together without being together "

"Honey, we'll see how long that friendship lasts,let me tell you a secret"

Me:"okay"

"You two can never be just friends...y'all have never been just friends, ever since y'all met"

Me:"hey we were friends,for a whole year"

"Trust me .y'all never been friends, y'all were just avoiding your feelings,y'all always been lovers,think about it,what you guys have been through, was it all just a friendship journey?"

I think to myself for a while

"Exactly.. Look I have to go..Becca is about to wake up"

Me:"wow..you that good, you even know when she's going to wake up before she does?"

"No,I just know her time schedule"

Me:"oh..yeah..of cause... Okay bye"

"(Laughing) bye Lisa"

I hang up

I dish up for us then head to the lounge

Me:"lunch is served"

I stop and look at him as a smile creeps in my face..he's fast asleep,seated on his butt his legs on the table and his head layed back on the couch facing the ceiling, he's mouth is a bit open,I love the way he's eyes don't close fully when he sleeps

I put the plates down,I shake him

Me:"Quinton "

He moves his head a bit then relaxes again

Me:"Q..wake up,food is ready"

Quinton: "mmh mh"

Me:"you have to eat,so you can take your medication "

He lazily opens his eyes and looks at me for a while then smiles

Me:"food?"

Quinton: "do I have a choice"

Me:"yeah...but you have to eat no matter what"

Quinton: "then why do you say I have a choice?"

Me:"to make you feel better"

Quinton: "mxm"

I laugh as I take his plate and give it to him

He has a disgusted face as if he's in pain

Me:"painful? "

Quinton: "its so painful. Damn"

My heart breaks at how much pain he's feeling

Me:"I'll feed you then"

He nods reluctantly

Me:"open up "

He opens a little, I feed him, he's only eaten five spoons

Quinton: "I'm full"

I frown

Me:"but you haven't eaten half of your food?"

Quinton: "I'm really fine Lisa"

I sigh and go put his food away, I don't even know why I dished up for myself

I take his medication

Me:"okay let's drink up"

I help him drink his medication

Me:"don't you want to go rest on the bed?"

He nods

I help him up,damn he's heavy and all his weight is on me as I walk to the wheelchair

Me:"okay,I'm not carrying you up those stairs"

Quinton: "its fine I'll sleep in the guest room that's down here"

That's the one Aidan slept in,I push him to the room, next to the bed I just stand in front of him trying to figure out how am I going to get him on this bed by myself,no Candra helping me

Me:"okay..how am I going to do this"

Quinton: "I hate this"

I look at him

Me: "don't be like that,I don't mind helping you"

Quinton: "I just feel like a nuisance"

Me:"you can never be a nuisance, even if you tried...now wrap your arms around my neck"

He does as I say,he holds on tightly as I pull him up holding him around his chest,we move a little until we fall on the bed with him on top of me

Quinton(groans): "shit"

Me:"sorry"

I try to spin us so he can lie on his back

Me:"okay, on three....one..two....three!! "

I turn, he's now lying perfectly on his back with me on top.. I move but he holds me

Me:"Quinton.. You'll make me hurt you"

Quinton: "but I miss you being on top"

I'm not putting my full weight on him

Me:"come on Q"

Quinton: "don't you miss this"

He pulls me closer

Me:"I do"

We gaze into each other

Me:"you need to get some rest "

I remove his hands from me and get off him

He sighs disappointedly

I kiss his forehead

Me:"we friends Quinton, let's stick with that"

He looks away,I tuck him in and walk out with a heavy heart

I hate seeing him like this.. I need to call Clyde I want to meet the person who did this to him in person... And forgive them..Ha like hell,how am I supposed to do that when I want to shoot their stupid brains out!

[07/30, 13:15] Ron: Insert 46

LISA

One week later

"Lisa!"

I startle as I sit up on my butt

"Lisakhanya!"

I run out of the room to his room, I bust inside
looking around holding my shoe

Me(panicking): "What's wrong! Where are they?
I'll kill them this time!"

Quinton: "what? No man,I need the toilet"

I sigh in relief

Me:"ohh I thought someone wanted to hurt you"

I walk up to him and help him up, he can't even try to move his legs so I'm literally carrying him,with his legs around my waist from the front,his head on my shoulder,I feel like I'm carrying a sleepy baby...one hella heavy baby! I put him down on the open toilet seat and pull down his briefs,he'll have to pee sitting down...I look away as he does his business

Quinton: "you don't have to look away..I mean its nothing you haven't seen,or tasted or felt..."

Me(chuckles):" would you hurry up"

He laughs softly

Quinton: "uhm Lisa?"

Me: "Quinton?"

Quinton: "I think number two is on the way"

Me:"sick man! I'm outta here!"

I attempt to walk out he laughs

Quinton: "I'm kidding!"

I stop and look at him he gives me a big silly grin wiggling he's eye brow

Me:"you such an idiot though"

Brrrr!

A loud sound comes from him

Me:"aaahhhh sick man!! Quinton!! Ah Dude! "

He laughs

Quinton: "I guess it was just a fart after all...I'm done"

Me:"mh mh mh mh...damn uyanukisa shit"(smells bad)

I take the air freshener and spray it all over

Quinton (laughing): "oh come on...its not thaaaat bad"

Me:"oh trust me its thaaaat baaaaad!"

I help him pull up his briefs, I pick him up

This time his face is right in front of mine...I'm walking slowly cause he's so heavy

Me:"you so heavy"

Quinton: "you so strong"

I feel something poking me

Me:"really Quinton?"

Quinton: "come on Lisa, what do you expect?
Your nunu is so warm against me"

Me(chuckles): "wow,you so naughty"

Quinton: "for you"

We reach the bed I put him down and adjust him to sleep properly, he doesn't let go of my neck

Me:"let go Q"

Quinton: "how long did you say we'll be friends

again?"

Me:"for a long time"

Quinton: "this is real torture though"

Me:"Quinton.... please"

He let's go of me

Quinton: "why does everything have to be sad
Lisa?"

Me:.....

Quinton: "I'm tired of being sad, I just need you
and everything will be better"

Me:"but I'm here aren't I? "

Quinton: "its not enough"

Me:"we talked about this Quinton, its only been
a few days "

He sighs

Quinton: "feels like a lifetime"

Me:"this is also not easy for me,it hurts so much,I want to move on Quinton, but I've been through so much,my heart has hurt so much, the way you treated me,it felt like our relationship was not strong enough, the love you have for me was not strong enough for you to believe in me and trust me,you would choose another woman's word over mine easily because in your eyes I'm the bitter jealous naïve teenage girlfriend "

Quinton: "that's not how its like Lisa"

Me:"that's how it felt like Quinton, you didn't even feel any sympathy when I cried myself to sleep every night,you'd raise your voice at me to sky high protecting her,I thought maybe if I give you sex it would remind you how much you love me and you'd listen to me,I threw myself at you forcefully even though I knew I wasn't ready for sex yet after the whole liam thing,but you didn't notice anything, for the first time you made me

feel invisible "

I feel the heartbreak all over again,

Me:"its all too heavy on me Quinton "

I look up holding back the tears and swallowing
the big lump on my throat

Quinton: "I...I'm..."

He sniffs and looks up trying to hold back his
tears but it was too late as the escaped one
after the other

Me:" I'm sorry..I.. "

I get up and walk out back to my room, I get in
the covers and that's when I let it all out, I hate
feeling like this,I thought I was over it,I thought I
didn't care anymore...I lied! I get up and go to
the kitchen,luckily there's a bunch of junk,I go
sit in the lounge,I stuff myself right there in the
dark,food has now been my escape,I take out
my frustrations in it and its making me chubby,I

hear Quinton throwing things at the door he's groaning loudly, I think he's throwing a tantrum

Me (shouting): "Stop that!!!"

He carries on making a noise screaming and throwing things

I break down, I can't do this... I don't know how to do it!

I storm to his room and bust in, he was about to throw the side lamp but stopped as he saw me

Me: "What the fuck is wrong with you!! Huh!?"

Quinton: "get out!!"

Me: "why are you being so difficult!! I came here to help you but you just keep pushing me away!"

Quinton: "I'm not pushing you away Lisa.. You the one who doesn't want to be here!!"

Me: "then why am I here Quinton!! Why am I here!?"

Quinton: "I don't know!! Why are you here Lisa!! Cause its clear you want nothing to do with me!! You think it's easy having you here and pretending to be just your friend!?"

Me:"I'm Here to help you Quinton!! To heal you!!"

Quinton: "you've been here for the whole fucken week, keep telling me about stupid diamonds that glow! Do you even have these useless powers!?"

I feel like a thousand daggers just stabbed my chest

Me:"If I'm so USELESS then maybe I should just LEAVE!! "

Quinton: "Good!! What are you waiting for, Christmas?... Go..And never fucken come back!!"

I gasps as I open my mouth to say something.. But words fail me

Not this again.

Me:"Nx! Fine!!"

Quinton: "close the door behind you"

I look at him for a while and he's fuming with anger

I walk out and bang the door and head to the main door,I open it and that's when I realise its still dawn and very dark, I walk out anyway

....

" won't tell you that the storm is over because this is earth,

they'll always be trails...all I can say is pray harder and stick by

your mans side,he needs you"

...

I sigh as I'm by the gate..You know what..Not this time, The devil is a liar!

I run back to the house and lock the door, I storm back to his bedroom and find him crying facing the ceiling he doesn't look at me

Quinton: "I said leave Lisa...I don't need you..I don't need anyone"

I walk up to the bed, he's in the centre of the bed, I get on top of him

Me:"I'm sick and tired of you feeling sorry for your useless self all the damn time!! You think this is easy for me? You think I'm enjoying keeping the distance between us?"

Quinton: "just go Lisa, I don't want you here,you don't love me anymore,you'll never love me again, so just do us both a favour and walk away and never come back... Leave me and my stupid blind self"

Me:"you know what? You fucken talk too much bullshit"

I bend closer and kiss his lips he responds

immediately with as much hunger and excitement, I take off my PJ shirt, he chuckles naughtily as he's eyes land on my boobs

Me:"missed your babies?"

He nods with a big smile on him as he grabs them and explores them with his tongue, moans escape my mouth,as I feel all kinds of pleasures,the butterflies fluttering in my tummy,shivers down my spine an ache and river running down my nani

Oh Lord its been a long while

I take off my pants and panties

Quinton: "I want Miss M in my mouth bub"

I giggle as I walk up to his face on my knees with him between my legs,I reach his face,he digs in almost immediately as if he was a thirsty fish experiencing drought,sucking and nibbling like a little baby sucking on a mother's breast for the first time

"Aahh Q!...I'm ...cu ...uuhhh"

I release,my legs all shaky

Quinton: "mmmmhh so tasty"

I can't even open my eyes fully as I move back to sit ontop of Mr B...well since he calls mine miss M its only fair I also name him

I kiss his lips as I grind on him slowly, careful not to hurt him

I leave his lips and take off his briefs I sit on Mr B and move in circular motion on top of him

Quinton: "let me in bub"

I shake my head

Me:"A-ah...ask nicely.... The magic word"

Quinton: "fuuck?"

I shake my head

Me:"na-ah wrong word"

Quinton: "pleeaasee"

I smile and bite my lower lip

Me:"that's the one"

I move my butt up a little as I take Mr B and lead him inside,I slide him slowly it's painful,when the hell did she get this tight!? I sit on him as he slides inside,loud moans voluntarily escape my mouth he moans just as loud

"Shhhiiii!! Aahh tight pussy!"

I move up and down faster loosing myself in our own world that we always disappear to

Me:"mmhh fuck!!"

I pick up the pace as I feel like I'm close to.....

Quinton: "I'm close bub Jus....."

He releases and so do I, BEST FEELING EVER!

I collapse on top of him he groan

Me:" oh sorry"

I move and make myself comfortable next to him,I cover us with the blanket as I snuggle into his body..I can't remove the smile on my face and I can feel the fairies dancing in my heart....

He looks at me

Quinton: "I love you"

Says the guy who just kicked me out a few hours ago

Me:"I love you more"

Quinton: "are you tired?"

Me:"No..why? "

Quinton: "its not ready to rest"

I look at him for a while he has one of his most stupid grins ever

Oh my gosh...there goes the fireworks again!!
Can you hear them!?

Me:"do you hear that?"

Quinton: "if its the sound of the bed that's being bounced on....No"

I laugh ayi this guy!

Me:"I mean the fireworks.. Can't you hear them?"

He laughs at me

Quinton: "fuck me until you come back to your senses please"

We laugh as I get on top again

Me:"I'm loving this authority "

He chuckles between his moans

Quinton: "enjoy it while it lasts bub"

I hear something coming from the spare room,the one that we don't use,it sounds whistles of something spinning in the air ,I get up from the bed,I didn't sleep in the same room

as Quinton,there's just so many rooms in this house,I'm also using the one downstairs, the noise is coming from upstairs.. I remove my blanket and slowly walk out the room..I walk towards Quinton's room,its still in the middle of the night

Me:"Quinton? Is that you?"

I open the door to his room,my heart skips a beat as he is not on the bed

Me:"Quinton?..."

I walk up to the bathroom he's not there,I walk back to the room,its so dark, I notice his wheelchair is still there,how did he get up without he's wheelchair?

I turn on the lights but they don't want to go on..huh electricity must be gone,I go take a torch in the kitchen and a knife as I walk up the stairs

Me:"Quinton!"

I try to on the other lights but nothing, I keep turning back keeping my torch and knife steady, I knock at the main bedroom and try to open but its locked

Weird? Okay now this is getting creepy

Me:"Quinton! Where are you?"

I notice a green light coming from the spare room,thats the empty room that we never use its just there...I walk closer to it,I lift the knife and hold it right over my shoulder

Me:"okay...This is so not funny anymore..I can do a lot of things with a knife..ask the onions and all the other veggies I chop all the time!"

I'm the worst when it comes to threats but I'm really freaking out

The glow gets brighter, the same glow I noticed from the diamonds,the noise gets louder, its definitely coming from that room

I open the room as I get in quickly ready to kill
But there's nothing, the noise stops, I move the
flash around looking for anything weird, right
there on the floor I notice the diamonds formed
in a circle, they are their normal colour...but
how did they get here? I'm sure I left them back
at Yonela's apartment.. But most
importantly, who arranged them in a circle!?

bha!

The door bangs closed startling me, before I
can look back at the door the diamonds start
glowing into a very bright green almost lime
I move backwards slowly.. What kind of voodoo
is this!

Just when I think I've seen it all, they float in the
air and start spinning really fast in the same
circular position they were at

"Aaaaahhhhhh!!!!!! Heeeellpp...QUINTON!!!!
QUINTON!!!!!"

I bang the door and try to open but its stuck no
no no ..I'm too young to die!

"Quinton!! Help me!!"

I look back at them as I press my back against
the door and at that instant the light shines
right through my eyes,its like a light is also
coming from my eyes...I zone out as I stare
deep through the light.

Everything becomes peaceful again, I see
myself healing Quinton

..

Quinton: "wow bub..you did it! You finally did
it....I can walk"

He jumps up and down

Quinton: "I can run"

He runs around then comes back to me and
picks me up spinning me around

Me:"I did it Q!! I finally figured it out!!"

He puts me down and we share a kiss

The scene changes I see myself pointing a gun right at her head

Q's mom:"please don't kill me...I'm sorry!!!

Please!! Forgive me!!"

Me:"you killed my baby!! I'll never forgive you!!"

Q's mom:"PLEAEEASE!!!! DON'T!! "

Me:"its a little too late"

Bhaa

Gun shot goes off

Me:"Nooo! What have I done!!"

.....

I close my eyes and open them again,the diamonds go back to their normal colour and fall back on the floor but not in the circular position anymore, my eyes also stop glowing...I feel my heart beat fast

Me:"No no no....Quinton!!! Help Get me out of here!! Quinton!!!

"Lisa!."

Me(softly): "Quinton..help"

"Lisa..wake up bub"

I lazily open my eyes

Quinton: "its just a dream okay"

I look around and we still in the same room

Me:"oh"

I move closer to him,he holds me tight

Quinton: "don't worry,I'm here now"

Me:"I love you Q"

Quinton: "I love you even more bub"

I lie on his chest and listen to his heartbeat which is my lullaby

That was some fucked up dream..WTF !?

[07/30, 13:16] Ron: Insert 47

LISA

"I don't care how you find them just find them!"

I open my eyes and notice he's talking on the

phone

Quinton: "well maybe you looking too far,I suspect your mom,she threatened me before I left home that day,said she would kill me if needs be,then right after that,this happens"

.....

Quinton: "then maybe she sent someone to follow me?"

....

Quinton (sighs):"then if its not her,who could it be!?"

....

Quinton: "its been a whole damn week,come on Clyde..I want this person in front of me in my very caring hands"

....

Quinton: "good..no I want to do it myself,with my own bare hands,that'll teach him never to

mess with me"

...

Quinton: "cool"

....

Quinton: "yeah whatever"

He hangs up, I stretch my body around then wrap myself around him

Quinton: "rise and shine sunshine"

I look up at him

Me: "morning handsome "

Quinton: "good morning buttercup"

Me: "mmh upgrade?"

Quinton: "after last night awesome performance, you deserve this upgrade"

Me: "wow I should always be in control if I earn more cute pet names"

Quinton: "buttercup?"

Me:"love bug?"

He lifts my face up from his chest to look up at his eyes..his gorgeous rainbow eyes

Quinton: "I saw your tattoo beneath your breast and the cute poem at the back of your neck"

I look away

Me:"oh..I'm sorry"

Quinton: "for what?"

Me:"I should've asked for your permission before using your name like that"

He lifts my face again and we look into each other's eyes

Quinton: "you kidding me right?...I fucken love it!"

Me(smiles):"you do?"

Quinton: "bub..that's the most beautiful thing

anyone has ever done for me"

Me:"really?"

Quinton:"I wouldn't want my name tattooed anywhere else but on my beautiful sexy body"

Me:"you mean my body?"

Quinton: "that's what I said.. My body"

Me:"my body"

Quinton: "yes bub, my body"

Me:"not your body...my body"

Quinton: "I don't know how you want me to say it...my body...this(pokes my chest)..is my body"

Me(sighs):"argh..I give up"

Quinton: "I wanna kiss it"

I get on top of him and move my body up so he can kiss the tattoo, he ends up burying his face between my boobs making those fart sounds

Me(giggling): "stop!"

He grabs them and starts kissing them repeatedly, playing with the nipples and sucking them..this guy can be such a baby,I swear he loves boobs more than Miss M

Me:"Quinton.. Leave my boobies alone"

Quinton: "aaw but these are my babies"

I attempt to get off him he holds me

Quinton: "let's stay like this"

Me:"this will just end with you inside me"

Quinton: "psshhh girrrll please..you too full of yourself, I'm not even thinking about that right now"

I look at him with my one brow up,I grind my ass on him

Me:"then why is Mr B hard?"

Quinton (chuckles): "Mr B?"

Me:"Yes,you have a problem with that?"

Quinton: "if the B stands for Big dick,then I gots no problems with thats"

Me:"big dick?...this little pinky?"

I say touching his hard crotch definitely not close to what I just said

Quinton (shocked):"little pinky?"

I giggle while nodding,somehow he managed to enter me without warning.. I gasp with my eyes wide open my as he slides it inside

Quinton: "oops.. Didn't think you'd feel that"

He smirks

Me:"oh whatever! "

After hours of riding his giant pinky I collapse

Me:"that was awesome!!"

Quinton: "let's do that again!"

Me:"uphanbene!"(you must be out of your mind!)

Quinton: "you just so damn good at this"

Me:"thanks but I know"

He looks at me with one brow up

Quinton: "but you not better than me"

Me:"says the guy who wants to go for round
hundred and sixty infinity "

He laughs, I just stare at him, his laugh gets
fainter as he looks at me realising I'm staring

Quinton: "what?"

Me:"do you believe in magic?"

He chuckles

Quinton: "I believe all the things you do to me
are magical"

Me:"oh God,you just had to be all cheesy"

Quinton: "my cheesiness is the reason you
naked under these cover with me"

Me:"you think so?"

Quinton: "its either that or my killer dick"

I burst into laughter

Me:"do you ever run out of something to say?"

Quinton: "you should know that by now mlizisto wam"

Aargh he remembered this name,now he'll never stop using it,specially now that he knows how it irritated me

Me:"queenzisto...please don't start with me"

He squints his brows together

Quinton: "I don't like the queen at the beginning of that name"

I laugh out loud

Quinton:"not funny"

Me:"I'm so sorry....your Highness! "

I laugh even harder,he's trying by all means to keep an angry face but the grin is just stuck on him making him look so cute,the way his lips

keep moving trying to be angry but keeps smiling

He turns and looks away

Me:"did you notice how quick that joke turned?...(laughing)... Damn,I final got you!"

He pulls the covers over his head trying to ignore me...oh yeah I was about to have a serious conversation with this fool before he decided to take the spotlight all to himself!

Me:"Quinton?"

He ignores me, oh come on,he wants me to beg him now,when he started it

Me: "oohhh Quiiiiintoonn"

Silence

Me:"ma Quiniza?"

Let's see how he likes it

Me:"Quininizana?"

Lol I'm laughing my ass out in the inside!!

Me:"come on now..my Quincy Quincy "

I can see the blanket shaking as if he's laughing

Me:"my Quinini Quinunu I lub you"

He removes the blanket and looks at me,he looks like he's high as he is laughing silently, I can't help but laugh

He tries to turn to fully face me,I help him do so, he adjusts himself and pulls me closer,I throw my legs over him letting his one leg get in between mine...as soon as we nice and tangled up,the laughing stops

Quinton: "never call me by any of those names again, we clear"

This is him all serious and threatening

Me:"understood "

Quinton: "good"

Me:"your Highness! "

I laugh he rolls his eyes back and sighs shaking his head as if he's given up on me

Me:"ok ok...I'll stop"

Quinton: "mxm"

Me:"you see how its like when you make fun of me all the time?"

Quinton (smirks):"its way more fun when I do it"

Me: "fun for you..not me"

Quinton: "but me making fun of you is the glue of this relationship"

Me:"do you know what else is the glue?"

Quinton: "what?"

Me:Mr B being inside Miss M which is never happening again! "

His eyes widen

Quinton: "okay I'm joking, hey no need to make

such big threats now"

We laugh

Me:"ayi Quinton! Please shut up now"

He looks at me in disbelief

Quinton: "iyeyeni bo!"

I crack up at his reaction, I should stop laughing now,I really want to have a serious conversation with him!

Me(laughing): "I'm being for real now dude"

He chuckles,I think he can notice I really need to tell him something

Quinton: "okay you can talk...you were asking something about magic?"

Wow I'm surprised he still remembers after so much distraction

Me:"do you believe in it?"

He looks at me for a while

Quinton:"I don't know,what kind of magic are you talking about?"

Me:"uhm..oh I don't know... The real kind,like the one we watch in movies,like for example mirrors that show you the future, time travel,teleportation,wizards or the story your mom told you about the diamonds being magic and all that sort of stuff"

He shakes his head

Quinton: "I don't believe in those fable incantations"

Me:"I sometimes forget you a scientist....you don't have imagination "

He chuckles

Quinton: "I guess I do believe there's a greater force that's beyond us and I also recently came to believe in dark magic,since I was a victim of it,my mom being the culprit"

That witch

Me:"okay so you believe there's dark magic? "

He nods

Quinton: "Lisa,I saw another woman as you and believed it was you, it's hard not to believe that witchcraft exists,the sad part is your own mother being the one whom makes you believe in such evil..the last person I would have never thought of,a person who I thought loved me more than anyone in this world who would do anything for me but....."

He trails off..despite the whole tough guy act towards his mother's doings,he's really hurt,the person he trusted with his life is the person who wants to take his life.

I move my face closer and lay a kiss on his forehead before looking back into his eyes,he smiles,he places his hand on my cheek and caresses the side of my face as he brushes the

hair back, why do I love this person so much?
Why do I feel so safe when I'm with him? Why
does he make me feel this way?

Me: "do you believe in good magic? "

Quinton: "guess I'll believe it once I see it"

Me: "do you believe in God?"

Quinton: "as I said, I believe that there is a
greater force that's beyond us, that watches
over us, so yeah, I do believe there's a God, a
spiritual father, somewhere up there"

I laugh he holds me tighter

Quinton: "what's with the million questions
bub..something bothering you?"

I sigh

Me: "do you believe in spinning diamonds that
show you the future? "

He squints his eyes

Quinton: "talk to me Lisa"

Me:"its just,I had a dream last night"

He runs his fingers through my hair with his one hand while their other is around my waist

Quinton:"go on"

Me:"it was the diamonds, they were spinning in the air in their green glow,I was stuck in the spare room upstairs, then the same green glow came from my eyes,its like the glow in my eyes attracted the glow from the diamonds and they somehow connected, its like they hypnotized me,then right there as I was staring deep into the light coming from them,that's when I think I saw the future, I'm not sure,but I saw myself healing you and you could finally walk and move around like before"

Quinton: "really?"

Me:"yeah...but then the scene changed and showed me something so scary"

Quinton:"what was it?"

I don't know if I should tell him this,what if he hates me for having such dreams about his mom

Quinton: "tell me bub"

Me:"uuhmm....."

Quinton: "you know you can tell me anything that's everything right?"

Me:"I shot your mother"

He smiles

Quinton: "what?"

Me:"I pointed her with a gun and I killed her"

He chuckles

Quinton: "you did that?"

He emphasizes the YOU

Me:"it was just a dream right?"

Quinton: "yeah, but after everything she's put you through together with her late husband, I wouldn't be surprised if you wanted to kill her"

Me: "No Quinton I'd never do that, I wouldn't even kill my worst enemy, it's not up to me to take someone's life"

Quinton: "you too good for your own good... Do you know what drove you to killing her?"

I shrug

Me: "something about her killing my baby"

Quinton: "baby?"

Me: "yeah"

Quinton: "as in me or a baby baby?"

I shrug

Silence fills up for a short while

Quinton: "have you thought of going to check yourself up after the whole mncesh scandal?"

Me:....

Me:"No...I haven't.. You don't think I'm pregnant now do you?"

Quinton: "possibly, I mean you have gained a few kgs"

Me:"are you saying I'm fat?"

Quinton: "No..but you a bit chubby and you love junk nowadays"

Me:"you know I only eat a lot junk when I'm sad...and I went into depression, so of cause I was eating unhealthy one way,that's the only reason for my weight gain"

Quinton: "we have to go get you checked,just in case...were you even using the pill?"

My heart skips a beat as fear overcomes me

Me:"No...he forced me to stop,and he stopped giving me money,so I couldn't even secretly buy them,he was always around me in campus and

if I wasn't in campus I was at home in doors"

He breaths out heavily

Quinton: "he better pray you not pregnant"

Me: "or else?"

Quinton: "nothing"

I look at him carefully he gives me his lazy smile

Me:"I'll go to the clinic to get tested then I go yonela's place to fetch the diamonds"

Quinton: "do you think the dream could come true?"

Me:"I don't know, it felt so real"

Quinton:"you can't leave me here alone though"

Me:"I'll ask Candra to come over till I get back"

He sighs sounding bored

Me:"you don't want Candra? "

He shakes his head

Quinton: "she can be irritating at times"

I laugh

Me:"okay then I'll ask Aidan?"

Quinton: "Hell no"

Me:"the sexy neighbour?"

He looks at me and smirks

I raise my eyebrows at him

Quinton: "weeeellll I guess if that's the only option we have I could...."

Me:" mxm I'm leaving you here alone"

I get up and throw my leg over him to get off at his side but he holds me instead

Quinton: "I'm joking....can't you take a joke Liss?"

Me:"the only joke here is you"

He gasps

Quinton: "ouch...that was too deep..you just stabbed my heart"

Me:"I love you"

Quinton: "get off me"

Me:"okay"

I get up but he holds me and looks at me in disbelief

Quinton: "seriously? You not even going to fight for me?"

Me:"ufuna ukuncengwa kanti?"(you want me to beg you?)

Quinton (baby voice): "yeah...it makes me feel special"

I laugh at him as I get off and walk to the bathroom

Me:"if I entertain you...I'll never leave this house"

I run water in the tub then come back for him,he was already naked and so was I so I just helped him up to the bathroom and we took a very long bath,I even had to keep adding hot water as it keeps getting cold..after an hour or so we decided to finish up since we were staring to have wrinkled skin,it was hard carrying him while we were both wet,but I managed,this is a lot of workout, sometimes I hear him cry at night,he really is not taking this whole being a cripple thing well,next week the doctor said he can start physiotherapy.

I lotion and dress him up,he can put on the shirt by himself, I just help with his undies and pants and shoes,we are now all dressed up

Me:"where are the car keys?"

Quinton: "in the that draw over there"

He points next to the bed,well I got my licence last week,although I'm not used to driving but

Quinton says I should get myself used to it

Me:"Got them,let's go"

Quinton: "oh well,see you next year my dear house"

Apparently I drive very slow,even a tortoise is faster than me..so he says

Me(laughing): "mxm whatever"

I roll my eyes as I push him and we make our way out

..

We make our way in the clinic. While I was still enjoying Quinton's funny stories the doctor calls me up

Me:"I'll be right back,you'll wait here okay?"

Quinton: "why you talking to me as if I'm a baby?"

I laugh

Me(baby voice):"that's because you my bhabha"

He blushes with a huge grin blinking repeatedly with his head tilted to the side...okay he's an idiot,its been proven

I laugh and peck his lips then follow the doctor

Doc:"you may take a seat"

Me:"thank you"

Doc:"so how can I help you beautiful"

Me:"I'd like to do a blood tests to check my status and a pregnancy test"

Doc:"that could be arranged "

He writes something down

Then does what I asked from him he also did an ultrasound

Doc:"I got your results back,but you gonna have to come back tomorrow for your status"

I nod, he looks at the piece of paper with the

results

Doc:"well,you not pregnant "

I sigh in relief

Me:"thank God"

He smiles faintly

Me:"something wrong?"

Doc:"yes"

Me:"what is it?"

Doc:"you might not be able to have children at all in future"

My heart literally stops for a few seconds

Doc:"Miss Mthethwa ? Are you okay?"

I look up at him

Me:"at all?"

Doc:"there's a very low possibility.. 20% chance maybe,your womb is scarce "

Me:"wha wha what?"

Doc:"it might be cause by something you've eaten or rough sex can also damage your cervix, and with a bruised or damaged cervix it'll be really hard to carry a child"

His words hit home, I know I was happy I'm not pregnant, that's because I'm still to young to have children... But that doesn't mean I don't ever want to have children of my own, why Lord?

Me:"okay..."

I get up

Me:"thanks"

He looks at me with pity

Doc: "don't forget to come back tomorrow"

I nod and walk out towards Quinton

Quinton:"its about damn time,what took you so long?"

I shake my head and push him to the car,we drive in silence till we get to Yonela's place, I attempt to get out but he holds my hand,I look at him

Quinton: "before we go inside,I want you to tell me what's eating you? Is it something the doctor said? Oh god..are you pregnant?"

I feel tears threatening as I shake my head

Me:"No"

He looks at me confused

Quinton: "is that a bad thing?"

Me(teary):"No"

Quinton: "then why are you sad?"

Me:"I'm fine Quinton let's go get the diamonds already "

He let's go of my hand

Quinton: "okay...I'll wait here"

I walk out as fast as I can with my heavy heart,
leaving him in the car

[07/30, 13:16] Ron: Insert 48

LISA

(Short)

Bella:"that is a weird dream,that's how the diamonds will work and that's how you'll see the future "

Me:"but..that's just so unreal"

Bella:"I know but that's just how it is"

Me:"what about the visions it showed me,do you think they true?"

Bella: "Yes..your visions never lie,its either you'll continue dreaming about your visions or how it happened in the dream is how you will do it in real life"

Me:"what about healing Quinton, I'm not quiet sure how I did it"

Bella:"Lisa its just a simple touch, by your healing hands and a pure heart"

Me:"how I hate that..pure heart story,how am I supposed to have a pure heart when it

constantly gets hurt like this?"

Bella: "you almost there,the dream was a start"

I sigh

Me:"why are all these things happening to someone who's supposed to have pure heart...how's the heart supposed to be pure ? How am I supposed to move on? I'm starting to doubt if there's even a God"

She holds her chest

Bella:"don't ever doubt his presence,ever!.Lisa you need to have faith in him especially in times like this,you not going through so much pain for nothing,this is your faith being tested,you need to believe, harder than ever before,the devil never gives up,yet he's so weak,the only thing that makes him strong his you, by giving up and doubting God's presence...don't let him win Lisa,God placed this gift in you for a reason,there's a reason you going through what

you going through... God loves you Lisa,he loves you so much and that's why he's chosen you to carry this wonderful gift,the gift of healing the same healing he gave his one and only son Jesus Christ...Go home and Pray Lisa, go around the house shouting his name let the devil hear you let him know who's in charge,tell him his not welcome,find an empty space your own praying room where you'll pray and pour out your heart to your father,involve Quinton, pray together... You'll see,everything will start making sense"

Her words reached the deepest parts of my heart

Something within me moved giving me goosebumps

Bella:"you felt that?"

I nod

Bella: "he lives within you Lisa,that little faith

that was shaken in you right now, is the faith that needs to be wakened up, seek the Lord, in his word, all will be revealed"

Me(sighs): "the lord huh?"

Bella: "are you born again?"

Me: "yes, when I was thirteen, grandma liked taking me to church with her, but at that time I was just going to the front cause the pastor was really persistent and I felt some sort of pressure and guilt of being in church but not accepting the Jesus as my saviour, and the whole, 'if you shy of him he'll also be shy of you in front of his father' that scared me and the stories about hell"

Bella: "yes that was the faith in you that pushed you, that little voice in your heart that gave you pressure, telling you to go to the front and confess your sins, that was God...but now that you're old enough, you have to live up to your

salvation, and pray,fast if you have to,do this
and you might not even need my help anymore "

I look at her with my eyebrows raised up

Me:"what about what I saw? Me killing
Quinton's mom? Can the future be changed?"

Bella: "a prophecy can not be false,but it can
change,in a way that what you saw will still
happen no matter what but won't happen the
exact way you saw it...but those are rare cases"

Me:"I know you also once said you foresee
blood in my hands.. . I don't want blood in my
hands Bella"

Bella: "I know, everything will be clear with
time,sometimes your visions can change"

I sigh

Me:"you know two days ago I just found out I
won't be able to have children"

Bella(shocked): "what?"

Me:"yeah..apparently my cervix is bruised which will make it hard almost impossible for me to be able to carry a baby"

She looks at me with pity

Bella:"I'm sorry to hear that, I really am"

Me:"can you perhaps peep into the future for me? See if this is all a lie,that I will have children some day"

She smiles faintly

Bella: "I'm afraid I can't do that,you see, I can't control my visions,they come to me naturally.... Unlike you,once you able to use the diamonds you can be able to look into the future anytime you want,but not everything will be shown to you,sometimes you won't see anything at all"

Me:"so you don't know whether I'll ever have children? "

Bella: "No"

Silence fills the room

Bella: "forgive baby, pray, you way stronger than you think"

I look at her for a while, its all too easy to say but not as easy to do

Me(sighs): "let me get going, I left Quinton with the physiotherapist, I asked her to not leave before I come back"

She smiles

Bella: "your love for Quinton is too strong, I respect it a lot, but y'all fight a lot, communication is weak, y'all need God, he will still mess up, pray for him, he's not a strong believer too, you'll have to convince him to pray with you somehow "

Me: "he'll still mess up? Oh no! I won't be able to take it Bella, I'll die trust me"

Bella: "you'll survive Lisa..he's human he'll mess

up at times and so will you,y'all just have to fight against it all like how y'all have done so far"

Me: "Quinton doesn't even believe in all these things, even when I tried to get him to get used to praying while his mom was in hospital, he only did it for three days then after that I was praying alone"

Bella: "I don't know how you'll do it,but I believe you will"

I shake my head

Me:"this is just too much,why couldn't universe just let us stay friends? "

She chuckles

Bella: "I told you the friendship you were trying won't last"

I don't know how but I laugh

Me:"can you believe we got back together with an argument?"

She laughs

Bella: "you two are so cute though"

Me:"Bella? "

Bella: "yes?"

Me:"how do I make Quinton stop his shady businesses?"

Bella: "just talk to him,the rest is up to him"

I look at the time

Me:"would you look at that,it's almost dinner time,let me go now before someone gets all grumpy on me"

She laughs

Bella: "I should also start with the pots, hubby will be home any minute now"

Me:"sorry for delaying you"

Bella: "oh please,don't even,we had a little fight,I shouldn't even be cooking for him,but the good in me can't bring me to punish him with hunger"

I laugh

Me:"wow,you too kind for your own good Bella... At least there's more than one way of starvation "

I wink at her she burst into laughter

Bella: "get out of my house you naughty child!..fire!"

Me(laughing): "bye Bells....consider my punishment though"

I shout as I make my way to the car

She waves at me laughing

Well I'm driving Quinton's golf,its so old I have to start it twice before it starts then I have to wait at least five minutes to warm it up before I hit the road

"Honeeey I'm home!!"

I shout as I make my way inside the house

"In the lounge!!"

I walk towards the lounge and find him lying his whole body on the couch watching TV

I walk up to him and peck his lips

Me:"hey love"

Quinton: "is this the time to come back home?"

Eish Mr grumpy is awake

Me:"come on its not even half past six"

Quinton: "its still past six.. You still going to cook for another hour which means supper will be ready by something to eight,then we'll eat after eight?"

Me(laughs): "I see you got it all calculated?"

He looks at me with the 'don't mess with me' look

I immediately stop laughing

Me:"okay,I'm sorry,let's order in tonight, please"

Quinton: "you come home late..now you want to feed me junk?"

Me(smirks):"oh come on...I know you want it?"

He looks away,with that hidden smile that only I can see

Quinton: "whatever Lisakhanya Mthethwa"

Yooohh even surname!

Me:"where's the therapist? "

Quinton: "I sent her home,the poor girl was worried that it was getting late, worried about her responsibilities.. Unlike some people I know who don't have one of those"

Me:"oh come on, don't be like that"

Quinton: "mxm"

I throw my legs over him and sit on him

Me:"undnxamele ngoku?"(you mad at me now?)

Quinton: "get off me"

I lay my body on him,I like being all over him
when he's mad

Me:"please don't be mad at me love bug"

Quinton:"just leave me alone..like how you did
for a whole four hours "

Me:"No! I'm not leaving you until you laugh"

Quinton: "ha-ha...now get off me"

I laugh,was that supposed to be a fake laugh?
Sounded like he was breathing out

Me:"come on my Queenzisto..your mlizisto
needs you cheerful "

I see his serious face slowly vanishing,I know
he wants to laugh so bad

Me:"don't make me tickle you Quinny...you know
you giggle like a girl"

He looks at me

Quinton: "you wouldn't dare"

I place my hands under his armpits

Me:"is that a dare?"

Quinton(warningly):"don't do it Lisa"

I move my fingers tickling him,he moves around trying to stop me while holding in his laugh

Me:"laugh!"

He shakes his head with his lips folded

I tickle him all over his chest and tummy he bursts into laughter more like giggles,I know,its weird he giggles but it sounds so cute and funny with his deep voice

Quinton (giggling): "Stop it Lisa!!"

Before I know it I'm the one being tickled,I move around burying my face on his chest

Me(laughing): "Q!!! I'm gonna pee myself!!!"

Stop!!!"

He stops, we both out of breath with laughter

Quinton: "never tickle me again Lisa"

Me:"never be an old grumpy grandpa again

Quinton"

Quinton: "just get your sexy ass to the kitchen and cook for your man"

I frown

Me:"but I thought we were ordering? "

Quinton: "since I can't fuck you senselessly...
Your punishment is to cook.. And I want a seven
course meal with seven colours.... a home
made milk tart and ice cream for desert"

He gets me off him

Quinton: "I want it ready and tasty within an
hour..so get moving woman! Chop chop!"

I look at him as if he's just lost his mind,that's

because he has!

Me:"debonairs will be here in twenty minutes with your order"

I sway my sexy ass to the room so that I freshen up,I'm leaving with a crazy boneheaded twit ,I can't deal!!

[07/30, 13:16] Ron: Insert 49

LISA

THREE MONTHS LATER

Me: "No Q, I'm tired now...get satisfied man!"

Quinton: "I'm satisfied...but I can't get enough of you"

Me: "Yoh Q..I'm still trying to catch my breathe"

He turn his body to face me, since the pain on his womb is gone now he can move his body around, its just his legs that are numb preventing him from walking or standing on his own, although he can't move a lot like to reach things that are far or in some angels he can't use to move, it depends...ever since I talked to Bella last week I haven't even tried praying, I don't know why, I just don't believe, I've been

avoiding the diamonds and the urge I get of checking on them every hour,its like I get worried about them always feeling the need to check up on them,but I avoid it

Quinton:"your mind seems far?"

I take my eyes off the ceiling and look at him

Me:"we should start praying"

He laughs..okay he's really laughing like I just cracked a joke? What's up with people laughing at me even when I'm serious? Do I have a Mr Bean face perhaps?

Quinton:"I'm sorry" he says in between his laugh "I didn't mean to laugh,its just the way you said that...unexpected"

He catches his breath and gains back his composure

Me:"well as I was saying... before I was rudely interrupted... (I eye him)...we should start

praying"

I feel him looking at me as I find more interest
at the beautiful ceiling

Quinton: "why though?"

I frown looking at him

Me:"what do you mean why?"

Quinton:"cause we weren't praying before...why
the sudden interest? "

Me:"because,we need to,we need the blessings
and protection"

Quinton: "I've got you,you all the blessings I
need....I can protect you"

I sigh

Me:"you can't protect us from everything Q"

He frowns then looks away from me

Quinton:"I can protect you Lisa"

Me:"I know...but we also need God"

He goes mute on me for a little while

Quinton:"is it because I'm a cripple now? Is that why you don't trust I can protect you?"

I look at him in

Me: "of cause not Quinton... I know you can protect me, but I'm just saying

Quinton:" save it Lisa,you don't have to lie to protect my feelings, I know I'm useless now, I can't satisfy you in bed like before,I know its tiring for you to always be on top,I can't help you around the house with heavy things anymore,I don't take you out much,you have to carry me all the time,you do everything alone and I just sit around all day and slave you around.. Even if we were to be robbed right now there'd be no use of me,its the same as if you alone,I'm not the same person I was...I can't do the things we used to do together.. Useless basturd"

My heart breaks at the use of his words as he totally takes this whole thing the wrong way

Me:"Quinton, that's not close to what I meant,just a lot of things have been going on,bad things,to us,I just feel like we need God's presence, we need him to pro...

Quinton: "whatever Lisa...You can go pray to your all so powerful God"

I'm in total shock.. I didn't expect that

Me: "aren't you going to be praying with me?"

Quinton: "to who?"

Me:"God"

Quinton:"which one?"

Me:"the one in heaven..the one who gave up his only son Jesus,for you"

Quinton: "why?"

Me:"because he loves you"

Quinton: "is that why I was shot? Because he loves me?"

Me:"don't say..."

Quinton: "is that why my own blood mother bewitched me? Because he loves me? Why you were forced to get married...to a rapist? Because he loves you so much? That's why I was born by a murderer? Because he loves me? Is that why whenever we finally happy something always comes between us? That's why we fight so easily more than we laugh, that's why I'm a cripple and not able to walk on my own,my life is on stand still.....is this how your God shows his love? Why did he even let his innocent son die? If he loved him so much...for us? Pssh but here we are the world is still full of cruelty, murderers, cheaters,backstabbers, greed,and witches...I don't see the reason to praise this invisible

man"

Me:"but Quinton...if we pray, you'll see,he does exist,he won't show himself if you don't seek him....you have to believe and never loose faith,he'll flourish you with his everlasting love.....please love..let's try and see how things will work out?"

He ignores me,I swear there's something about that ceiling that fascinates us,cause he's looking up at it

Me:"please my love....pray with me"

He shakes his head

Me:"remember how we used to pray for your mother..and just like that when there was no hope,she lived"

Quinton: "yeah....why did he save her? To give her a chance to use witchcraft on me and try to kill me? Is that why he gave her a second chance?"

Oh God..this conversation is not going anywhere, I can't force him to believe

Me:"I'm sorry for every bad thing that's ever happened in your life,but you can't feel sorry for yourself forever, you need to get up and do something about it,there's people who were born with no legs but they very far in life than most people who have every part of their body"

Quinton: "its easy for you to say..you not the one why can't use your legs,so you better keep your advice to yourself until you feel the pain that I feel until you go through the same thing....so please don't tell me about other people who've went far.. Was I born with no legs?..this is not something I grew up with and came to accept it,someone out there did this to me,someone I'll get my hands on and teach them a lesson they'll never forget and see how he or she will like it to be a cripple"

Me:"Quinton..you need to forgive and move

on, revenge is not the answer"

Quinton: "revenge is always the answer liss....its a faster process of karma"

Me:"I don't like it when you talk like this"

Quinton: "Lisa I told you what I do, how my father's businesses run,how I deal with enemies,yet here you are,I told you how I dealt with your ex husband, you didn't seem to have a problem with it,why? Cause it felt good knowing he got what he deserved right?"

Me:"yeah..but..

Quinton: "No buts Lisa...that's the way I am,don't try to change me,your parents groomed you to be the way you are today and the way you were groomed is the only way you know is acceptable... I was groomed to be this way too,this is the way I've accepted I am,this is the only way I can be...God...Jesus...Christianity..prayer..that's not

in a vocabulary for a person like me..so let's not talk about prayer or God again"

I sit up on my butt

Me:"Quinton, I'm a Christian, you can't expect me to not ever talk about God "

Quinton: "its fine Lisa, I'm not saying stop being a Christian and praying and all that..all I'm saying is don't involve me"

But I need you, I want you to help me find myself,my gift lays in the hands of God...I need your support Quinton, please at least hold my hand as I try to figure it out

Me:"that's okay...you don't have to get involved, I'm not going to change you"

He looks at me and smiles

Quinton: "I'm sorry I can't be the person you want me to be"

Me:"No..no, you are perfect just the way you are,
changing you is not what I was trying to do...I
love you just the way you are"

He searches deep into my eyes for a while

Quinton:"thank you"

A smile creeps on my face,its the way he's
looking at me,he changed from serious to that
naughty look

Quinton: "now kiss me"

I saw that one coming,I move closer and peck
his lips but he decides to pull my lip sucking me
back into his lips and we share a deeper kiss till
I pull out

Me:"let's go freshen up"

Quinton: "yeah and brush your teeth too"

I gasp..he quickly looks at me

Quinton:"I mean our....and brush our teeth
too..not that your breathe stinks or anything like

that Nooo"

Me:"shut up Quinton "

Quinton: "Yes love"

He says obeying me, I go run water for us to bath then carry him to the tub,he's getting heavier everyday,I don't know how many times have I been close to dropping him,we now in the bath tub

I'm lying on my back, he has his back against me while sitting in between my legs,I'm playing with his curly short air,placing the bubbles in a mountain form on his hair

Quinton: "bub?"

Me:"love?"

Quinton:"do you ever want to get married again?"

Where did that come from?

I wrap my arms his neck then rub his abs

Me:"uhm..I don't know..."

I really don't

He remains quiet for a while

Quinton: "mmmh"

Me:"why do you ask?"

Quinton: "just asking"

Me:"mmmh"

Quinton: "do you think you'll ever know?"

Me:"I. I don't know"

Quinton (chuckles):"what do you know?"

I laugh

Me:"I don't know "

Quinton: "I love you Lisa"

Me:"aaww I know"

He laughs

Quinton: "at least there's something you know"

Me:"whatever"

We remain quiet

Quinton: "I want to spend the rest of my life with you"

Me(chuckles): "you don't wanna do that"

He turns his head back but can't fully face me

Quinton: "why not?"

Me:"trust me..you just don't "

Quinton: "of cause I do...you know you the only person who's taught me how to love,you know I can't love anyone else...so what would stop me from spending the rest of my life with you? "

Me:"well we'll have to get married to do that"

Quinton: "of cause..I know that ..but we still have time,so we don't have to rush it..it'll happen when the time is right,bit it will happen"

If I were any other normal girl with a normal life

and not cursed I'd be thrilled to have this conversation

Me:"but then married people start a family"

Quinton (Chuckles): "I wouldn't want anyone else to start a family with but you..I can just imagine, my little men running all over our house and breaking things and stressing you out"

He laughs

Me:"you want kids?"

Quinton: "duh...a bunch of them,I want two soccer teams,so maybe twenty four,so bub you better get ready for a whole lot of bedroom workout"

Me: "twenty four!?! You must be crazy"

Quinton: "crazy about you, yeah"

I feel my heart being squashed,I will never be able to fulfill his wishes ,I'll never be good

enough,I'm a pathetic excuse of a woman

Me:"what if I don't want kids?"

Quinton: "what?"

Me: "what if I just don't want to ever have kids?"

Quinton: "then I'd say you out of your mind"

I remain quiet

Quinton: "wait...are you serious?"

Me:"yeah"

Quinton: "but why? You'd make a great mother to beautiful children.. Just imagine your jeans mixed with mine..damn we'd make worlds most cute babies"

Me:"please stop"

Quinton: "for real,I can just imagine you with a huge tummy having those crazy cravings, your hormones.

Me:" STOP!...just shut up!"

He moves from me and sits up,I stand up and get off the tub as I make my way to the room leaving him there

"Lisa!"

I ignore him, I throw myself on the bed and burst into tears,I feel like my chest is suffocating my heart making it difficult for me to breath

"Lisa! I'm sorry!"

I ignore him,for a long while just burying my face on the pillow

"Lisa...the water is cold..please bub!"

I hear the sadness in his voice,I'm tired,I don't know why I'm here,I can't get anything right with my life,I can't figure out my gift,I can't convince my man to change his ways, I can't marry him because I can't bare him children, the excitement in his voice when he talks about our future just paralysis me

"Lisa! Please! I'm freezing"

I come back to my senses as I realise what I just done

I run to the bathroom and find him lying there in the water shaking his mouth trembling

Quinton: "pl..please get me out of here...please.,...its so cold"

Me:"oh my gosh!! What have I done!"

I run to the tub and open the stopper for the water to run out, I take a big towel and wrap him with it then help him out of the tub as I carry him to the room, I lotion him with Vaseline so that it can get him warm quicker,I dress him up and tuck him in bed,we haven't said a word to each other

Me:"I'll go make you a cup of tea,coffee or hot coco?"

He ignores me,he keeps sniffing,he must've

caught the cold

I walk up to the bed next to him

Me:"I'm so sorry Q.. That was so selfish and so very cruel of me, please forgive me"

He looks away from me

Me:"Quinton...I'm sorry, please....I'm so sorry "

Quinton: "its okay"

Me:"No its not...I just left you there, I let you freeze in that cold water"

Quinton: "let it go Lisa..it's fine"

I sigh knowing very well that this is not fine,it'll never be fine,what kind of person am I ? I just made it worse to the fact that he's already traumatized by being a cripple, now here I am treating him like trash

Me:"I'll go make you tea?"

He nods

Quinton: "yeah whatever"

I feel tears at the verge as I make my way out to the kitchen down stairs and make him his cup of tea.. Thinking about how universe is so cruel to me,totally forgetting that Quinton is also not at his best,he needs me, I keep telling him to stop feeling sorry for himself yet here I am busy feeling sorry for myself,leaving him to freeze to death,what kind of person am I!

The door bell rings, as I was about to take a step up the stairs,I turn to attend the door,who could it be? Probably Clyde,he's been coming here a lot lately or Aidan?

I open the door and our eyes instantly lock

"Hey Lizzy"

My blood drops instantly, why is she here?

"Aren't you going to let me in?"

My eyes drop to her tummy,she pushes me out

the way and makes her way inside

"Oh I'd also like a cup thanks..while you at it
please let Ambrose know I'm back"

.

.

To be continued

[07/30, 13:17] Ron: Continuation

LISA

Me: "what are you doing here? You not welcome"

Sydney: "I know I'm not welcome, but Quinton's baby sure is,so can you be a good little girl and call him for me"

Me:"just cause you carrying his baby doesn't mean you can just pop up in here uninvited without announcing with us first"

She laughs

Sydney: "US!?! L.O.L don't make me laugh please,you are not part of this pregnancy, this is between Quinton and I the parents, so you still a little girl I don't expect you to understand"

Me:"whatever you came here to try and achieve, its not going to work"

Sydney: "we'll see about that,now,will you go tell

Ambrose or should I ?"

I click my tongue and storm up stairs to our room

I find him fast asleep he must've got warm enough and dozed off

Me:"Quinton "

I shake him

Quinton: "mmh?"

Me:"wake up love bug"

He sighs

Quinton: "I don't want tea anymore"

He answers with his eyes still closed

Me:"someone's here to see you"

Quinton: "I'm sleeping"

Me:"its Sydney "

He lifts his head and turns to look back at me

Quinton: "what is she doing here?"

Me:"probably came to cause some drama once again, but she wants to see you "

Quinton: "tell her to get out of my house,I don't wanna see her,ever again"

Me:"Quinton.... She's carrying your baby, you have to talk to her sooner or later"

Quinton: "what if this is just one of hers and mother's witchcraft, to make it look like she's pregnant when she's not,she can go to hell with the little devil in her tummy for all I care"

Me:"oh no she's really pregnant, its definitely yours"

Quinton: "what makes you so sure?"

Me:"cause I can feel it Q"

He sighs and looks up at me,I notice a slight glow on his face

Quinton: "you do?"

I smile and nod,sometimes its like he believes in my gift and sometimes he just doesn't

Me:"yeah,...now let's get you down stairs "

Quinton: "yeah"

Me:"Quinton "

Quinton: "mmh?"

Me:"please let's not allow her to come between us again "

Quinton: "Never"

Me:"and please forgive me about earlier"

He looks at me for a while

Quinton: "I forgive you...but we'll talk more about that later"

Well he definitely is not asking me,that was more of a statement

Me:"okay"

Quinton: "now kiss me"

I just love it when he does that after an argument or serious talk

I lean forward and peck his lips but he pulls my lip instead and we end up smooching.. He loves doing that

Quinton:"you should know that baby kisses are for kids not me"

I laugh shaking my head

Me:"let's go Miss sidunu is waiting "

He laughs

Quinton: "let's go see what sidunu wants"

I help him up, I piggy ride him down the stairs then place him in the wheelchair and push him towards the lounge, we find her lying on the couch with her feet up

Sydney: "Ambrose...hey"

Quinton: "what do you want?"

She looks shocked

Sydney:"oh my gosh...why are you in a wheelchair? "

Me:"that's non of your business "

She struggles as she tries to stand up with her big tummy

Quinton looks aback by her tummy

Sydney: "Ambrose....I came back to apologise,I never meant to do all those evil things I did, I was manipulated by your mother,i never wanted to be part of it she threatened me and bribed me whether I took the money or not she still layed big threats against me,so I went ahead with the pills and all that,yes a part of me was happy that we could be together and happy,the way you touched me,the way you made love to me,the way you....

I clear my throat

Sydney:" anyway being with you was everything it meant a lot to me it reminded of the good times we had,although what hurt me is how you you only loved me because you thought I was someone else and constantly calling me Lisa,there were times I really wanted to tell you the truth and stop feeding you those pills but I was scared of your mom,falling pregnant was part of my plan,I thought once we have a baby together Lisa wont ever want to come back to you and we'd raise the baby together,then I'd stop feeding you the pills,you find out the truth but you will have to move on with me,I was sure Lisa won't take you back.....but I guess y'all love is stronger than any kind of witchcraft"

We are just looking at her and listening to the rubbish coming out her mouth

Quinton: "do you smell that?"

He looks around with a disgusted face on him,
then looks back at Sydney

Quinton: "oh..its all the shit coming out your
mouth"

I laugh a little but I see how serious he is so I go
back to serious mode

Sydney: " I.. I'm really sorry for everything,I didn't
come back to ruin things for y'all, you guys
deserve each other,I know Ambrose has never
and never will love me the way he loves you
Lisa, so even if I were to get him back,which I'll
never,he'll never love me...I just came back to
make peace and ask for forgiveness from the
both of you"

She goes down on her knees

Sydney: "please forgive me"

I won't lie and say I'm not surprised cause I'm
so shocked right now

I can't even read whether she's true or not..why!?

I look at Quinton who looks so pissed

Quinton: "get your ass up,you think going on your knees and talking a whole Lotta bullshit will make me just forget that easily? Get your mind right bitch..now get your man knees off my carpet"

Her jaw has dropped looking at Quinton in disbelief, this must be the first time he has spoken like this to her,I'm also just as shocked as her,he always falls for her innocent acts but not this time

She gets up,her legs trembling

Sydney: "okay,..I understand, I messed up big time,I don't expect you to just forgive and forget...but I did my part,I did you guys wrong now I'm here to apologise,its up to you whether you hold onto this grudge forever or forgive me and move on"

silence

We all seated on the couches no one has said a word for the past five minutes

I look at her she's looking down fiddling with her fingers

Me:"why now?"

She looks up at me

Sydney: "excuse me?"

Me:"why now? Why you apologising now?"

Where have you been? Its been a whole full four months, what brings you back?"

She sighs

Sydney: "I went back home to just digest everything that's been going on in my life,being around family gave me a peace of mind,feeling my baby growing inside me made me want to become a better person...and I thought maybe Ambrose will want to be part of the baby?"

I look at Quinton who's very distant from planet earth

I look back at Sydney

Me: "do you need a place to stay?"

She shakes her head

Sydney: "no...I'll be staying at a hotel, unless Ambrose wants nothing to do with the baby then I'll take a flight back home first thing tomorrow and never bother y'all again"

I sigh and look at Quinton

Me: "do you want to be part of this pregnancy and this baby's life?"

He looks at me

Quinton: "I want nothing to do with her"

He says pointing at Sydney

Me: "what about the baby?"

He remains quiet

Me:"well I guess we'll be seeing more of you,that child will be part of Quinton's life so,you two will have to discuss how y'all going to get through this pregnancy together without chopping each others heads off"

He looks at me

Quinton: "Lisa...can we talk....in private?"

Sydney: "I'll leave y'all to it"

Me:"don't go yet"

Sydney: "No,I'll just go chill by the pool area"

I nod, she walks out

Me:"wow at just four months, that's a huge tummy"

Quinton: "what's wrong with you?"

Me:"what?"

Quinton: "why did you say that? You can't be making decisions for me,I told you I want

nothing to do with her but you go ahead telling her to stay?I don't want to be part of anything that involves her Lisa"

Me:"Quinton.. Calm down, that's your baby over there,remember that soccer team you want? It has to start somewhere, you can't afford to neglect some players,who know maybe the first born might be the CR7 of your soccer team "

He looks at me for a while then he chuckles

Quinton: "do you really think I should be part of this child's life?"

Me:"yes Quinton, every child deserves both their parents "

Quinton: "you know that it'll also be part of your life too?"

Me:"I know"

Quinton: "it'll always be a reminder of what she put us through"

Me: "with time, nothing will ever be a reminder....
Let's not focus on the bad things let's just start
on a clean slate and welcome the blessing in
disguise that God has blessed us with, that baby
that's growing fast in that tummy"

He sighs

Quinton: "come here"

I get up and go to the couch opposite that he's
seated on, I stand in front of him

Quinton: "sit here"

He pats his lap, I sit on him facing the side

Quinton: "no I want your legs on either side of
mine"

I giggle as I adjust myself and sit in that
position

I wrap my arms around his neck and we stare
into each others eyes

Quinton: "you are the most amazing woman,

you know that?"

I just smile

Quinton: "you so strong,not only physically but spiritually as well,you have the strongest heart ever,no matter how many times its been broken,you still able to give out love and mercy...you the only thing that keeps my sanity,I would've long killed that bitch,honestly,but because of you and your good heart I couldn't bring myself to"

Me:"You....

He puts his finger on my lip

Quinton: "every good decision I make is because of you,you make me a better person... I know this whole baby thing won't be easy specially on you,but thanks for understanding"

Me:"I'd do anything for you Quinton.... I'd die for you,I promise"

He smiles,I feel something hard against Miss M
Quinton: "I'm sorry this position and your sexy
voice is just too much for Mr B"

I laugh,he pulls me by my neck and cuts my
laugh short with a kiss

Someone clears the throat disturbing us,I try to
pull out but he pulls my lips back into his then
hold my head tighter against his, his crotch is
even harder,wow he's really turned

on right now,I also feel myself leaking down
there and beating uncontrollably, shit! I'm
tempted to strip him naked right now! Great
timing to the Hoe in me

"I'm sorry to disturb,I was thinking I should get
going"

I had to push very hard to pull out from
Quinton's lips,he groaned

Me(breathless):"jeez clam down babe yoh"

I say fixing my hair and getting off him,my eyes pop out at the size of Mr B as I slowly turn my eyes from him to look at the woman behind me

Me(chuckles): "sorry about that..we really were having a serious conversation.. But one thing led to another..you know how serious conversations are?"

I grab the cushion and throw it to Quinton so he can cover his hard

Sydney (chuckles): "apparently I don't think so"

Me:"sit down"

We both sit down

Quinton: "I want to be part of that child's life,that's O'Brien blood in there,and I'll make sure I'm hundred percent involved in his life"

Sydney: "thank you Am...."

Quinton:" I'm not doing it for you,I'm doing it for my baby who mistakenly chose the wrong

womb to grow in"

I think I literally heard her heart break after those words

She fiddles in side her handbag and takes out an envelope

Sydney: "this is for you"

She hands it to Quinton who just looks at her emotionlessly

She places it on the table

Sydney: "I'll get going"

Quinton: "you only come over when I tell you to,you don't contact me unless its about the baby or anything that affects the baby in any way..understood?"

She nods

Sydney: "understood"

She smiles faintly and makes her way out

I sigh

He throws the pillow on his lap on the floor

Quinton: "now... Where were we?"

Oh gosh after all that he's still there?

Me:"wow seriously Q?!"

Quinton: "it'll be quick,right here right now"

Miss M just loves betraying me,its like her and Mr B have a mind of their own,always want to be stuck on each other, I obey her instead,I move his pants a bit down,I lift my dress up and move my panty to the side,can't believe we doing this right now...this guy will be the death of me... I let him slide in and start moving up and down on his lap

Quinton: "how do you keep it so tight?"

Me:"I also don't know how she does it"

Quinton: "can you twerk a bit faster"

I giggle and pick up the pace

Me(breathlessly): "like that?"

Quinton (groans): "aah yeah,just like that..fuck"

Me:"mhm!"

I slow down

Quinton:"can you please scream like how you do when you go really fast..I just love it"

Increase the pace again

Me(moaning loudly): "FUCK FUCK FUCK FUCK
FUCK FUCK FUCK!!!"

Quinton: "damn I love it when you do that"

I giggle and kiss his lips,I feel him release right after me,I sit on him for a while with him still inside, we gaze at each other

Quinton: "we should just stay like this the whole day"

Me:"Quinton? "

Quinton: "bub"

Me:"I can't bare children"

Quinton: "what?"

Me:"I'll never be able to carry a child in my womb"

He looks at me confused

Quinton (whispers):"wha what do you mean?"

Me:"that's what the doctor told me three months ago,my cervix has been damaged badly and I won't be able to carry a full term"

Quinton: "that can't be true"

I get off him and fix myself then head to the nearest room,I grab a towel to clean him up, I sit opposite him after wiping him

Me(sighs):"its true,that's why I was so down after we came back from the doctor and I didn't tell you what he said"

Quinton: "so...we'll never be able to have kids of our own?"

I shake my head

Me:"No....I can fall pregnant,but I can't carry them"

He shakes his head while holding it

Quinton: "how did your cervix get damaged?"

Me:....

Quinton: "HOW!?"

I startle

Me:"aggressive sex"

Quinton: "you mean that basturd!?"

Me:"yeah..but there's nothing we can do now,the damage is done"

Quinton:.....

He looks at me with a frown

Quinton: "yeah right"

Me:"you've already taught him a lesson... No matter what you do now,it won't change the fact that the damage is already done"

He remains quiet

Quinton: "come here"

I reluctantly walk towards him

He pulls me to sit on his lap

Quinton: "this doesn't change anything okay"

Me(crying): "but, what about your soccer team?
I I can't give you that gift"

Quinton: "I don't need a soccer team...as long as I have you,I have everything I need"

I bury my face on his shoulder he rubs my back

Quinton: "don't cry bub,we in this together"

Me:"I hate my life Quinton, there's always bad things happening to us,I hate it! I hate it!"

Quinton: "sshhh don't cry my love, this too shall pass, we just have to stick together, everything will fall into place eventually, you'll see"

Me: "I've been waiting for everything to fall into place, but they keep getting worse and worse!"

Quinton: "hang in there... don't lose hope, I mean kids are not everything in life"

I lift my head to look at his teary eyes

Me: "easy for you to say, you have a baby on the way, you'll never feel half of what I'm feeling "

I get up but he tightens his grip

Me: "let go of me!"

Quinton: "No"

I fight with his hands trying to untangle them from me

Me: "let me go Quinton! Leave me alone!"

Quinton: "not this time! If you want to cry you

can do it right here,in my arms...I'm never letting you go"

I throw my arms around him and burst into a louder cry,he rocks me rubbing my back

.....

The next day

....

I've been up since three o'clock,I'm worried about the diamonds again, I hate this feeling, I glance at my side and he's peacefully sleeping

Me(whispers):"Quinton? "

Me: "Quinton?"

He's still in deep sleep, I remove the covers and head to the spare room

I open it slowly scared to go in,I'm finally inside,I make sure I leave the door open as I walk further inside

I walk towards the diamonds which are in a safe,I open it and take them out,I pour them in my hand and look at them intensively waiting for the glow...but nothing, I sigh and put them on the floor,I go on my knees in praying position...I don't know if I still even know how to talk to God anymore,I place my hand together and face the ceiling

Me:"(sighs):"Dear God....no no...uhm..heavenly father...no I think dear God sounds more proper...Argh"

I sit on my butt

Me:"I'm sorry...I don't even know how to talk to you anymore..(chuckles) if grams can see me right now,she'd give me one hella ass whooping... Ok, father..I'm really mad at you..I'm mad at Quinton too, I'm mad at his mother,I'm mad at his father I'm mad at his whole family... I'm mad at everyone, my mom,my dad,my grams,yonela,Liam specially Liam,his father and

his mother,his siblings,I'm mad at the president of south Africa I'm just so mad at the whole world,planet earth just makes me mad! I'm mad at myself! I'm so so pathetic!....I mean..why to you give me powers if you don't want me to use them? Huh?"

I remain quiet for a while

Me:"okay,I'm sorry,I'm not mad at you,now please tell me how to use my powers? Please? I forgive you for all the bad things you've let happen to me...now please can you just show yourself!!"

Nothing happens mxm this is useless

I play with the diamonds

Me:"come on,do that thing you did on my dream, come on..spin around, show me something.. Now!..please!..mxm"

I throw them on the floor and attempt to walk out the room but it shuts closed right on my

face,my heart stops,I turn to look behind me I see them glowing, I sigh as I try to hide the fear and walk towards them

Me:"yes that's it,just a little brighter"

The glow gets brighter, wow they listen to me

Me:"OK...now float and spin around then show me how I can heal Quinton"

They remain on the floor just glowing really bright

Me:"come on...you can do it!"

They go back to their normal color I look behind me and the door is opened,its like nothing happened at all

Me:"wow! Y'all so useless! "

I out them back in the safe and walk out back to our room

"Where you coming from?"

I startle as I was tiptoeing in our room

Me:"Quinton! Damn you scared me"

Quinton: "where you coming from?"

Me:"I I was in the.... kitchen! Yes,I needed a snack"

Quinton: "really?"

He looks at me suspiciously

I walk to the bed

Me:"Yeah..where else would I go?"

Quinton: "if you went to get yourself a snack...
Then where's mine?"

I chuckle

Me:"well you were fast asleep..I tried waking you up"

Hey that's the truth

Quinton: "okay...well then I want my snack too"

Me:"yoh Quinton, the kitchen is so far"

Quinton: "don't worry bub..my snack is right here"

He tickles my vj

Me(laughing): "Ahh! Okay! You'll get your snack"

He stops

Quinton: "hurry up woman! I'm starving here"

I giggle getting on top

Me:"yoh Q..you love punani ayi ngeke"

Quinton: "fine..I'll stop"

Me:"don't you dare!"

He chuckles,I pull the covers over us..the rest is history

[07/30, 13:17] Ron: Insert 50

LISA

"Father,...if you listening, I'd like to start by apologising ..I'm sorry for abandoning you father, I'm sorry for being so ignorant and stubborn, I'm sorry for fighting my battles alone when you were right here this whole time pleading to fight them for me..but I turned my back on you and I allowed the devil to make me

his playground... But today Lord! I say No More! No more will I be a slave of Satan's lies and schemes! No more will I allow his to toy with my heart,my body and soul,for they belong to you father.....I surrender Lord! I surrender all to you father! Raise me up Lord! Raise me up to take light into this dark world,to not compromise when under pressure.....Lord God,what you asking me to do is really unbelievable,you want me to heal people with just a touch of my hand? You want me to control diamonds and ask them to reveal things to me?....(chuckles)..this is crazy!...but I'm trusting,cause with you I know,that all things are possible...I mean Jesus walked on water,changed water to wine,rose the dead from death...Gosh,this will take some crazy faith in me...Father,I am scared all this power in me just scares me,but I'm willing to step out and take the lead of my crazy faith in you,I don't care how much it costs me,I'm putting my trust

in you Lord, Guide me Lord, allow me to see myself as you see me..in JESUS name I pray...(sighs)...Amen"

I take a deep breath in and out, wow! I feel so much lighter than my first prayer, the room looks more brighter and calm, I think I felt the holy spirit not only in me but in this room too. Bella decided to take me to church with her last week Sunday as reluctant as I was I ended up going and here I am today, taking my first step into faith, something I believed long died in me, guess I was wrong, God has never failed me...I'm the one who's failed God, Bella has totally changed the way I view things, she made me learn that I shouldn't force Quinton to pray with me as long as I done my part and talked to him, I should just pray for him, and leave the rest to God, so I'm doing just that, but before I can pray for him, right now, it was just a prayer for myself, I need to be strong myself before I can

start praying for other people. I get up and walk towards the safe to check up on the diamonds, they still here, but it's not time yet, I'm not ready, Bella says I'll feel it when I'm ready and right now, I'm not feeling it. I close the safe and head downstairs, to make breakfast, I've been in that room for more than two hours since I woke up, yeah I kinda stalled a little before actually praying ..

I make some scrambled eggs, bacon, pork sausages, sliced tomatoes and toasted bread, four slices for Q and two for me, I place everything on the tray including juice for me and tea for my daddy. I head upstairs to our room.

Me: "and breakfast is served!"

Quinton: "mh mh mhit's about damn time!"

I place it on the side table

Me: "a thank you would be very much appreciated"

Quinton:"yeah whatever,just feed me already "

I gasp looking at him in disbelief

Me:"where did you lose them?"

Quinton: "what?"

Me:"maybe I can help you look for them,when last did you use them?"

Quinton:"what are you talking about woman?"

Me:"your MANNERS!"

He laughs

Quinton: "mxm"

I shake my head and help him sit up and give him his food

Me:"that's your tea"

I go in the covers next to him and we enjoy our breakfast, well he ended up feeding me his food and I fed him mine,I still don't get why we do that

Quinton: "why do I get the tea?"

Me:"cause"

I shrug my shoulders

Quinton: "I want juice"

Me:"the juice is mine..just have the tea,you love tea"

Quinton: "I know but I want juice right now"

Me:"not until you ask me nicely "

Quinton: "Lisakhanya get your ass up and go to that kitchen and pour me juice"

Me:"Quinton....go jump off a cliff and disappear "

He chuckles and takes my juice, I grab it just before he could take a sip and it spilled a little, he grabbed it from me I grabbed it back,before we knew it the juice spilled on the bed

Quinton: "great now look at your mess!"

Me:"My mess? My mess? Hehehe! My mess?
My mess Quinton!? My mess? "

He bursts into laughter

Quinton: "you don't know what to say do you?"

Me(laughing):" Nope!"

He kisses my cheek

Quinton: "that's why I love you"

I look at him

Me:"oohhh you love me when I ran out of things
to say?"

Quinton: "whaaaaaat...pssh what gave you that
crazy idea"

He says moving his eye balls everywhere

Me:"mxm you such an idiot..you to know that
right"

Quinton: "that's why you here,in this juicy
bed,with this idiot right?"

Me(sighs):"the idiots God gives us...ayi!"

I get up and and put our plates together, when his phone decides to ring

Quinton: "please answer that for me bub"

Me:"wow,someone remembered where he misplaced his manners"

Quinton: "just answer the damn phone"

Me:"oh wait...what's that?..he lost them again?"

I take his phone from the table just as I answer it,the person decides to give up and drop it

Me:"oh well your person gave up"

Quinton:"cause you talk too much..who was it anyway?"

Me:"I talk too much? I talk too much? Hehehe I talk too much? I talk too much Quinton? I talk too much?"

He rolls his eyes and laughs

Quinton: "there we go again"

Me:"looks like you have a problem boy?"

Quinton: "I have a problem? I have a problem?"

Hehehe I have a problem Lisa? I have a problem?"

I fold my arms annoyed

Me:"we imitating each other now?"

Quinton (laughing): "are you mad now bub?"

Me:"mxm,get off the bed,I want to clean up the mess you made"

Quinton: "my mess? My mess?....."

Me(interrupting):" aarrghh shut up!..make up your own 'don't know what to say' line "

He bursts into laughter, I sit on the bed sulking,Quinton loves teasing me and he knows sometimes okay most of the time I can't defend myself,then he laughs at me.mxm

Quinton: "okay okay...I'll stop,look at me bub"

I turn my whole back on him

Quinton: "I'm sorry my love,look at me"

Me:"mxm"

Quinton: "okay..pleeeeaasse look at me bub"

Me:.....

Quinton: "come on bub....bubbly bubbly"

I feel his hands snake around me and pulling me towards him

Quinton: "don't be mad bub"

Me:"No Quinton, you love making fun of me all the time"

Quinton: "I'm just joking babe"

Me:"yeah well its not funny"

Quinton: "not even a little?"

Me:"argh Nx!"

Quinton: "okay okay I'm sorry bub,I won't make fun of you anymore"

I turn to look at him

Me:"ever?"

Quinton: "ever"

I smile and move closer to him

Me:"you promise?"

Quinton: "one step at a time please..ever is a long time bub"

Me:"oh so you still wanna make fun of me?"

He laughs and pulls me I end up sitting on top of him facing him

Quinton: "you know how adorably ugly you look when you sulk?"

Me:"wow can't believe you still teasing me? I'm ugly now?"

Quinton: "why do you have to take everything at

heart bub..did you even hear the word adorably in that sentence?"

Me:"you so mean!"

He laughs and pulls me into his arms burying my face on his neck

Quinton: "okay I'll stop okay?"

I nod

Quinton: "you being a baby though"

Me:"I'm your baby though "

Quinton: "yeah daddy loves his baby"

Oh god this guys body intoxicates me,its like I lose my morales when I'm against it,I automatically start kissing his neck,I don't why cause I'm "supposedly" mad at him right now

Quinton: "but you have to admit..it is funny when I make fun of you"

Me:"No!"

Quinton: "it is bub,come on"

Me:"No,its not"

Quinton: "not even a little?"

Me:"mmmmh..No!"

Quinton: "tinsy winy bit?"

Me(sighs):"okay..just a tinsy winy bit "

He moved his shoulder making me move my face from him

Quinton: "kiss me"

My heart melts...it gets me every time when he does that, its like some kind of spell or hypnotism which makes me wanna do exactly that

I move closer to give him a very lustful kiss playing with his tongue,he pulls out and looks at me in total shock

Quinton: "I said kiss me..not rape my mouth"

I gasp

Me:"now I'm raping his mouth,that's not what you were saying last night when I was up all in that mouth,with you moaning and groaning my name...aahh Lisa! Fuck Lisa! Yes Lisa! "

He laughs,his phone rings again he stops laughing and looks at me,then looks at his phone

Me:"so now you just going to order me around with your eyes?"

Quinton: "Yoh..you can talk guuurrl..just please get my phone"

I roll my eyes and pick up his phone,its the same number but its not saved

Me:"Quinton's super hot girlfriend,hello"

I wink at him he chuckles and kisses my boobs,I'm still on top of him

"Oh hey Lisa,its me,Sydney"

I sigh and roll my eyes,Quinton is busy playing with my boobs wiggling and shaking them

Me:"okay "

"Can I talk to him?"

I cover the phone with my hand

Me(whispering):"it's Sidunu"

He rolls his eyes

Quinton (whispering): "what does she want?"

I shrug

Me(whispering):"she want to talk to you"

Quinton (whispering): "tell her I'm not here"

Me(whispering): "where are you?"

Quinton (whispering): "far far away"

I shake my head and put the phone back on my ear

Me:"he's not here"

"I heard everything by the way"

I hold my mouth as I feel like laughing

Me:"oh...uhm can I leave him a message, he's really busy (playing with my boobs)..and he really can't talk"

"(Sighs) okay please tell him that I have an appointment with the doctor for an ultrasound later at exactly 12:30pm..so if he would like to come he's welcome"

I heart drops into tiny little pieces

Me:"oh"

That's all I can utter

"Yeah..uhm you also welcome if you want to"

Me:...

"Hello?"

Me:"okay..uhm thanks for letting him know..I'll tell him"

"Okay, arhm ..bye"

Me:"bye"

She drops the call

Quinton: "you don't look well? What did she say?
I swear if she cursed you or..."

Me:" she's inviting you to her appointment for
ultrasound "

We look at each other for a while

Quinton: "oh...uhm when?"

Me:"today..twelve thirty"

Quinton: "oh..well I don't have to go...right?"

Me:"what..Quinton,you should go,I mean this is
important, to see your baby and hear his heart
beat"

He sighs,then a smile creeps in

Quinton: "Yeah you right,you sure you don't
mind?"

I shake my head no, but my heart is saying
another story

Me: "No..she also invited me, but I have other
plans so, you can go with her"

Yeah that's pure lies, what plan? It's December, I
have no school, I was planning on taking him
out, we've been stuck in this house for months
cause he doesn't want to be seen a lot and
doesn't like it when people start feeling sorry for
him and look at him with pity

Quinton: "thank you, you the best"

He pulls me close and pecks my lips, he pecks
them repeatedly until we end up sucking and
sharing spit, I pull out

Quinton: "we should have a quick session
before we bath"

Me: "my pussy is exhausted Quinton "

He looks at me with a disgusted face

Quinton: "that doesn't sound attractive..
Exhausted pussy.(shakes his head)..seis"

I burst into laughter

Me:"you the one who exhausted it"

Quinton: "wow..Mr B just lost his appetite"

Me(laughing): "thank goodness!"

Quinton: "ohh this was part of yours and Miss
M's plan?"

Me:"nope..let's go bath "

Quinton: "nc nc nc nc....I might as well be single
here"

Me:"ayi Quinton... I've been giving you pussy
breakfast lunch late lunch dinner supper desert
every single day..so don't you dare say that "

Quinton: "oh so today is not is not part of
everyday?"

Me:"ayi dude let me clean so we can bath so

you can go"

I take another thirty minutes trying to get off Quinton's grip,I clean up the house then we take a bath but I bath him alone cause if we go in together it'll take hours.

He's now already dressed up and so am I

His phone rings while I'm busy in front of the mirror fixing my hair, he picks it up while sitting on the bed

Quinton: "hello"

....

Quinton: "okay cool"

..

He drops the call

Quinton: "hey Liss she's down stair could you please go let her in"

Did he just say please,without making me beg

for it or making fun of me!?

Ouch! I don't know but I'm hurt

Me:"since you asked so nicely "

I go open the door for her

Sidney: "hey Lizzy"

Me:"its L

Sidney: "Lisa yes I know,I just love calling you Lizzy"

Me:"but I don't like it"

Sidney:"argh you so serious...fine Lisa.. Happy?"

Me:"yeah whatever "

I make way for her to come in

Sidney:"where's my baby daddy?"

She says laughing

I give her the look

Sidney: "I'm kidding kiddo, come on"

If only she knew how her sight disgusts me, I feel like throwing up on her and ruin that beautiful maternity dress she's wearing with her flawless glowing skin nxa, I can't help but get bad flashbacks when I look at her, I hate her..but I need to learn to like her, she is carrying Quinton's baby, who will also be my baby as well..I don't like this at all, I wonder if I'll ever be okay with this and just be around Sidney without feeling the urge to vomit or get bad flashbacks. I leave her there and go fetch Quinton, I get him downstairs and walk them to the car Sidney: "are you sure you don't want to come with us?"

Me: "No, I'm cool, I have so much to do"

Quinton: "I'll see you in a few hours bub"

Me: "okay..Sydney.. Are you sure you'll be able to handle helping him in and out the car and stuff?"

She looks at him then back at me

Sidney: "I can handle it"

Me:"you sure? Cause he's really heavy so you'll have to find easy ways to hold him, the easiest is when you put his one arm around your neck and.....

Sidney (interrupting): "yeah yeah I got it..I'll manage"

I sigh

Me:"okay,please do be careful...I wouldn't want anything happening to him...and that baby in your tummy"

Quinton: "we'll be fine bub,stop stressing"

He hasn't been anywhere or done anything without me since he was shot

Me: "I can't"

Quinton: "then maybe you should just come with us"

I think about it for a while, it'll just make me feel like the third wheel on a date with a couple who's about to have a baby and get married !
Great now I feel like crying

Me:"No no its cool..I trust you'll be good"

I move my face to his and peck his lips he pulls my lips,I roll my eyes as I deepen the kiss, she clears her throat I pull out,we can get carried away when kissing

Me:"love you "

Quinton: "you loved by me"

I help him get in the car and they drive away,I go back inside the house

I don't even know what to do,I can't help but think about her sly hands all over his body. I hang around in his study..I fiddle with his laptop looking for a nice movie,although I know all the movies in his laptop, I find myself in his Facebook,I don't know why but hey I'm already

here,my hand forces me to go to messenger, I notice Enhle Johnson, I click in it,oh wow they just recently talked,well there's nothing much in their conversations but I continue scrolling up to see more until I come across a bunch of colourful emoji hearts, in love, laughing emojis

Quinton: you still look so hot

Enhle:aaww thanks babe,you look even more hotter,Lisa must be taking real good care of you ❤️

Quinton:yeah she is, but I miss you so much

Enhle:she ain't giving it to you good?

Quinton: oh she's fine, but you know that you were my first love

Enhle: we should get together some time?

Quinton: I can't go anywhere without her on my tail

Enhle: then you should make a plan

Quinton: I'll try...anything to see you again

Enhle:yeah we have a lot to catch up on

Quinton: yes bae...so tell me how's your family?

Enhle:they good, besides the fact no one knows where my older bro disappeared to,its been really stressful on us

Quinton: that's a bommer I wonder why would he just disappear

Enhle: dad has been so stressed he can't do anything..

I log out,I can't read anymore,how could he do this to me?! That son of a bitch!! Ohhh I'm so done with his ass!!! He can go to hell!!! Argh!!

Me:"All this time I've been peeping his butt,bathing him! Feeding him in more ways than one!! Carrying his heavy ass around!! Then he does this to me!! With Enhle of all people!!! He doesn't fucken respect me!! He doesn't!!! He

doesn't!! How many times do I have to get hurt by Quinton for me to leave him! Cause its clear he's just pretending me,when everyone has his back on him he runs to me,what am I to him? I don't get it! Can someone be this much of a good actor?.. Oh my Gosh I'm so done!!

[07/30, 13:17] Ron: Continuation

LISA

I couldn't leave, I just couldn't leave, I was so sure I'm leaving him as I stepped out of that office but I couldn't, something within me just couldn't allow me to get out that door, I don't know why? I'm not even married to this person! Its not like I have kids to worry about, why can't God just allow me to leave Quinton, whenever we seem to be very happy something always burst our bubble. I hate this, why should I stand for this? I'm eighteen yet I have problems of a forty year old who's been married for twenty years with five kids!. And can someone tell me what's taking him so long at stupid twenty minute appointment!? He better be okay and having the time of his life cause if something bad has happened to him, I really don't feel like feeling sorry for him right now, I want to give him ten good hot slaps, then ask him what is he

doing disappearing for so many hours with Sydney. Why does this guy love hurting me like this!? He could've at least called and tell me they'll be late I'm not even going to call them! Nx! I'm supper furious right now..I pace up and down the house,I look up to check the time by the clock it past eight..where the hell are they!!?

.....

My singing fades as I see the cake already cut

Me:"oh no,he found it"

"Uhm Lisa.... I think you might wanna see this"

She staring at something by the couch I walk up to her

Me:"he found the surprise cake I....."

I trail off as I see what yonela is staring at
Quinton's clothes are on the floor and his breifs,also lingerie and

my night dress, I look at the table and notice
two empty glasses

the other one has lipstick stains

Yonela(breaking voice): "oh no...Lisa...I'm so
sorry"

I chuckle then start laughing for real

Me(laughing):"No...this is not Quinton's
clothes... It can't be"

I walk up stairs

Me:"Q!! Baby!!"

I open our room and I swear my heart slipped
out of my body

as my body freezes and I become cold, they
under the covers

and are moving so fast,her moans fill up the
room,not this

again!.. I feel my head getting dizzy,I hold it with

both my hands

as it feels like its going to fall off

Me(softly): "Quinton?"

She immediately gets off him,he sits up and just looks at me

She covers herself with the covers

Sydney: "oohh Lizzy..its not what it looks like"

My eyes are glued at the man I thought loved me

Me: Quinton? "

Quinton: "ppsshhh...oops"

My jaw drops did he just say that? Its like he's not even shocked

I caught him,he doesn't care

Quinton: "how long are you going to just stand there?"

I swallow the biggest lump on my throat it

almost choked me

Me:"in our bed? In our home?"

Quinton: "my bed...my home...my dick"

Me:.....

.....

I sit down, holding my head,I feel a sharp pain in head,oh God please make it better, I can't die now,I get up I can't even walk properly, I get to the kitchen and pour myself a glass of water and gulp it down, I kneel down on my knees

Me:"Almighty God, please give me the strength, give me the strength to take care of this situation maturely...Give me the heart to forgive Quinton no matter how bad he's wronged me.....but lord so help me if I take the knife in that draw and slit his throat off I swear to God that boy gets in my last nerve I'll.....

The sharp pain comes back

Me:"okay okay, I'm sorry,I'm calm,I pray wherever they are,they all safe father,if something went wrong with the baby,I pray to you father to cover it with the holy spirit,cover them with the loving blood of your son Jesus Christ,in Jesus name I pray,Amen"

I open my eye and I feel more at ease and lighter,the headache is gone

My phone rings, I pick up immediately

Me:"hello?"

"Hey Liss, can you please come fetch is at the hospital?"

I stand on my feet in panic

Me:"are you okay? What happened? Are you hurt?..please tell me you okay please..did she drop you?"

"No calm down Lisa, its not me,its Sydney"

A part in me cools down and I sigh inwardly..

Am I cruel?

Me:"oh!. What happened!?"

"I'll explain everything, please just get here and fetch us"

Me:"okay,I'll be right there"

"Okay thanks"

He drops the call,he sounds so down,I pray the baby is okay...oh and Sydney of cause, I run upstairs to our room and grab my light jacket and car key then ran down stairs out the house and locked the door behind me also setting the alarm,Argh this car! Its takes me another ten minutes to get it on the road,finally! I make it to the hospital, I come in running throwing my eyes around,I spot Quinton and I walk towards him

Quinton: "hey bub"

I can't help it,I'm hugging him..I walk closer and

bend to his level and hug him

Me:"I was so worried about you"

Quinton: "I'm sorry Liss, I should've called earlier but I didn't think it would be this serious and take this long"

I sigh and sit on the chair next to him

Me:"what happened?"

Quinton: "when we were doing the ultrasound,we only heard the heart beat for few seconds then it stopped for a long while,so the doctor had to check her up and fix the problem"

Me:"oh my God,that's horrible, so is the baby okay now?"

Quinton: "yeah,they just told me a few minutes before I called you"

Me:"do they know the reason why this may happen?"

Quinton: "they say usually when a fetal

heartbeat stops its a miscarry but hers was stopping and coming back again then it'd stop for long then come back again, but just a few minutes before I called you everything was okay,they also don't know how they saved the baby,it was a miracle, so they say"

Could it be that this had something to do with my prayer?

Something in me tells me "yes" but I ignore it

Me:"well let's thank God for that"

Quinton: "and the doctors,they were more hands on"

He will never believe, its a good thing I'm breaking up with him..for good this time,nothing he says will change my mind

Me:"So where are they?"

Quinton: "she'll be out just now"

Me:"okay "

We wait in silence, he looks very down,I guess this really took a toll on him

But I have my own problems to worry about than to comfort him right now,if it were any other day I'd be holding him and comforting him right now,but I just hate him more than I love him at this moment,I wish I never even came here in such a rush.

The doctor comes back with Sydney

Doc:"remember to only take these pills once a day for only five days,not more than that"

Sydney: "got it doc"

He smiles and leaves her with us

I was about to say something when Quinton rushed towards her and held her tummy lying his head against it, I rub my throat,it's so painful right now,I feel like screaming at the agonizing pain inside my chest

Quinton: "I'm so glad you okay"

He's talking to the baby while kissing her tummy, I don't think he's realising this picture that I'm seeing right now, I feel like an intruder, like I'm not needed here, his life is complete, I don't see the need or use of me?

Sydney rubs his head and her tummy

Sydney: "he's okay Ambrose, don't worry"

He let's go of her and looks at me as if he's just realising how this must feel on me, I look away then look down at my feet then look up at them again, I sigh

Me: "I'm so happy y'all okay"

She smiles

Sydney: "oh hey Lisa.. Sorry, I didn't see you there"

That makes the both of you, I can't deal with this, I just can't

Me:"let's go"

My voice unexpectedly broke on me and tears were so close as I walked fast leading the way out of the hospital and into the car,I sit by the car for a while, whilst they were still coming, I had to get out and help them both get in the car cause Sydney is still in pain, I felt like putting them both in the backseat, I drove back in silence

Me:"so where do I drop you off again? "

Quinton: "oh..no she can't stay in the hotel alone after this"

Is this really going to happen again!!!? It hasn't even been a year!!!

Me:"so she's staying with us?"

I feel him looking at me but I'm not taking my eyes off the road

Quinton: "Lisa, I'm just scared for the baby

that's all"

Me:"its fine,you've already made up your mind"

Once again

Sydney: "I'll go back home first thing tomorrow morning"

Quinton: "you don't have to do that"

Sydney: "I think its best I do"

Me:"don't even try foxy,when Quinton's mind is made up,its made up"

The car fills with silence until we reach home

I help Sydney out first at least she can walk on her own,then I help Quinton who's being so stubborn

Quinton: "don't hold me there,I told you its uncomfortable like that!"

I hold him the way he wants me to,I'm now trying to get his legs out

Quinton: "damn Lisa! Could you try to be gentle!?"

Me:"I'm sorry,I didn't see the wheelchair was so close to the car"

Quinton: "its fine"

I keep steady as I slowly walk towards the wheelchair which I kinda kicked a bit too far when pushing it away for space

Quinton: "please hurry up!!"

I try to hurry cause the way I'm holding him is not comfortable

I push him towards the house

Quinton:"The car will close and lock itself?"

Me:"oh yeah"

I leave him and attempt to walk towards the car

Quinton: "first get to the house Lisa! You were already so close!..what's up with you tonight!?"

Me:"stop shouting at me!?"

Quinton: "nawe get your mind right!"

Me:"you don't have to be so rude!!"

Quinton: "whatever!"

I feel tears threatening, he's being really mean to me and Sydney is watching us by the door since its locked

Sydney: "please hurry Lizzy, my feet are killing me"

I push Quinton to the house and unlock for them to go in

Quinton: "finally!"

Well I get this is how Quinton is sometimes ever since he got shot,he has his days when he's just sour like now,but today after everything that's happened, I just feel used and unappreciated, I burst into tears as I reach the car,I get in and just cry,how will I even tell him I saw his

messages with Enhle? I can't tell him I was going through his privacy, then he'll find a way of throwing this whole thing at me, maybe I should just shut up with the Enhle story and just observe, cause these messages were from during this week.

I say a short prayer then walk back to the house all calmed down, I find Sydney lying on the couch and Quinton is nowhere in sight

I walk to her after locking the door behind me

Me: "so how you feeling? "

Sydney: "I'm not good at all"

Me: "would you like something to eat?"

Sydney: "oh god I'm always hungry, so I wouldn't say no to food"

Me: "okay then , I didn't cook tonight but there's still left overs from yesterday.. I hope you don't mind?"

She shows a disgusted face..

Sydney:"mmh can we just order pizza?"

Me:"there's plenty of food,its still fresh I can just warm it up,it will be as good as new"

Sydney: "it's fine if you can't afford I'll pay"

Yooohh this B.....I sigh...okay,be nice Lisa,she's pregnant

Me:"that's okay,I'll call for an order"

Sydney: "thanks kiddo"

That's what I am to her..a kid..well she is older than Quinton, she's twenty six,so she's way older than me,that's why she don't respect me

I leave her and go call debonairs...I go upstairs and change into PJs

I go back down stairs

Me:"have you seen Quinton? "

Sydney: "He went towards the study room"

My heart races,I hope I didn't leave any proof of that I was in his Facebook,. Did I even log out? I don't think I did,I just went out without logging off!! Shit! I go to the study and knock

I let myself in since he's ignoring my knocks

Me:"hey"

I close the door while looking at him still busy on his laptop

Me:"what you up to?"

He looks up at me then back to his laptop, what if he's chatting to Enhle?!

I sit on the chair opposite the desk

Me:"Quinton?"

He ignores me,can someone remind me of something bad that I did that might've made him this moody?

Me:"ayibo,love? Is everything okay?"

He closes his laptop and looks at me for the longest time

Quinton: "were you in my office?"

Me:"Why?"

Quinton: "I asked you a question first"

Me:"yeah,I did come in"

Quinton: "for what?"

Me:"I wanted to watch a movie"

Quinton: "did you find it on Facebook?"

My heart accelerates my blood temperature rises

Me: "what? No!"

Quinton: "really? Cause you forgot to log off?"

Me:"I didn't go on your Facebook Quinton why would I do that, you know we agreed to never invade each others space...you probably forgot to log off when you went online"

He looks at me for a while I look at him with a straight face

He sighs

Quinton: "you right,I'm sorry"

Me:"that's cool,please don't ever accuse me of such again "

He nods

Me:"and besides I wouldn't sneak into your social media..because I trust you,I know that you wouldn't do anything that would be disrespecting me in any way..right? "

Quinton: "right,I'd never do that"

Lies! Right in front of my face

Me:"you'd never put me through that again would you?"

Quinton: "I'd never put you through that Lisa"

Me:"I love you Quinton "

Quinton: "I love you more"

He pushes himself towards me

Quinton: "don't cry Liss.. I'll never put you through so much pain again"

Me:"Sydney is here again? "

Quinton: "I promise she..."

Me: "No...don't promise that, I don't trust her
Quinton ,she came here for more,she's not done
Quinton, she can't bare to see you happy with
me,I don't know her plan yet,but I can sense the
devil is on her side,please listen to me
Quinton,let's not allow her"

Quinton: "Lisa,what about the baby? I want to
watch him grow everyday in the tummy I want
to be there on the day he's conceived, how will I
do it if I don't take care is Sydney and make
sure she's healthy,for my baby boy to be healthy
too...(chuckles)... Its a boy by the way"

Yeeyi!! I'm so happy to hear that! I'm over the moon! Mxm!

Me:"what about me?"

Quinton:" what about you?"

I can't believe he just said that!

Me:"what about how I feel?"

Quinton: "what about the baby?"

Me:"Quinton! You not hearing me again! "

Quinton: "Lisa I'm hearing you,I've been hearing you,but not I don't know how to keep up with you anymore,one minute you telling me this the next you telling me that?...you not making sense anymore, first you force me to to accept the baby and show it fatherly love,now you telling me to stay away from the mother of my child?..how!?!..how am I going to be part of the baby if I'm not part of the mother's life? .how Lisa?...now you telling me about your feelings?"

Didn't I ask you if you sure about this? If do you really think I should be part of this cause I never wanted anything to do with it,you know why Lisa? Because I was protecting your feelings.. Yes those very same feelings you only thinking about now..now I'm already attached to this baby,and I don't want to lose it"

He holds my hands

Quinton: "I want to be his dad"

Me(teary):"It hurts Q"

Quinton: "I know..I know it hurts Lisa,and the last thing I want is to hurt you"

I yank his hands off mine and shake my head with tears streaming down

Me:"I can't do this Quinton.. I thought I could handle this..but I can't, its too much for me"

Quinton: "please bub,don't give up now,we've been through worse,please,I need you"

I shake my head more

Me:"you...you cheating on me?"

He looks at me confused

Me:"are you cheating on me?"

Quinton (perplexed): "No! Never!"

Me:"don't lie to me Quinton "

Quinton: "I can't believe you accusing me of such...I've been here with you twenty four seven on your watch, where would I get the time or even the energy to think about cheating?.. Why would I even cheat on you? When I love you so much?"

Me:"sometimes love is not enough, there's ways around cheating Quinton"

Quinton: "now you just pissing me off,what the fuck Lisa!?"

Me:"Just look at me straight in the eyes and tell me you not cheating on me"

He moves really close

Quinton:

"I.AM.NOT.CHEATING.ON.YOU.LISAKHANYA.M
THETHWA!"

Me:"I can't believe you looked me straight in the
eyes and Lied to me! You such a Jerk!"

Quinton: "Lisa! I'm not fucken cheating on you
dammit! Why can't you get that through your
thick skull!!! Huh!! What the fuck is your
problem!!"

Me:"You are my Problem Quinton!! I'm sick and
tired of you!! I am sick and tired of your
stubbornness and bossing me around all the
time,of you making scenes when we go in
public and not want me to help you! You are my
problem, not because I don't like taking care of
you..because I do,but because you don't
appreciate anything I've done for you! You so
ungrateful,I don't have to be here Quinton! I'm

not your wife! I don't have to stand up to all your crap!! I don't, I'm still young and I still have a future! But because I love you! Because I soooo stupidly love you, I take in all your bullshit! All your crap!!"

Quinton: if you so tired why don't you just go? "

Me:"there you go again! Pushing me away! Why can't we just talk normally without you raising your voice at me huh!!"

Quinton: "what's your problem Lisa!? What did I do to you!? If you always going to remind me of how you taking care of me alone with no help,which means you want me to repay you for this!? You doing this so that I owe you? Or you just doing it so that we even for all the things I've done for you?"

Me:"oh my Gosh I don't believe how low you think of me!"

Quinton: "THEN TELL ME YOUR FUCKEN

PROBLEM DAMMIT!"

Me:"I WENT THROUGH YOUR FACEBOOK. I SAW YOUR MESSAGES WITH ENHLE!!!. THAT'S MY PROBLEM QUINTON! THAT'S MY FUCKEN PROBLEM!! "

silence

Quinton (calmly): "Lisa...I..I can explain.."

I fold my arms

Me:"explain!"

I wait for an explanation

silence

Me:"wow,you don't have an explanation do you?"

He looks at me with pleading eyes

Quinton: "its not the right time for me to explain"

What!?!? That was it,that was the 'Tsek!' 'The

fuck off' the 'leave I don't need you' the 'it doesn't concern you' statement

Me(calmly): "Quinton, please explain, I don't want to walk out this door before you explain, cause I'll never come back again"

He remains quiet

Me:"Quinton. Ambrose. O'Brien.... Goodbye"

I turn and open the door, I wait a minute but don't turn back, but he still remains quiet, I walk out and close the door..and that was then end of Lisakhanya and Quinton.. I'm done! I'm going to live my life my way, I'm going to find a way to use my gift I'll carry on with my Life..but I'm done with Mr O'Brien! Done!

[07/30, 13:17] Ron: Insert 51

LISA

"I'm on my knees praying to you Almighty father, because fighting my battles while on my knees is better than fighting them on my feet, I'm praying father I'm praying because prayer is not getting God prepared to do my will, but prayer is getting me prepared to do God's will prayer is also the only way to release the super natural power of God in my life to

show me great and mighty things I know not
,prayer is the key that unlocks the gates of
heaven and shuts the gates of hell I pray for
unity among those that love you,I pray for your
hand of protection and guidance,I pray that you
open my eyes so that I see your truth Lord,dear
God I don't ask you to make my life any easier
but I ask you to please give me the strength to
overcome and face all my troubles....I pray that
you forgive me for my sins..(sighs)...but you
can't really do that right?..because I haven't
forgiven those who trespass against me?...Lord
I pray that you cleanse my heart With the
powerful, caring,healing,pure and forgiving
name of Jesus Christ I forgive those who have
trespassed against me,I forgive those who have
deceived me,those who have abused
me,emotionally,verbally and physically, those
who taken granted of my presence in their
lives,I forgive them all father,as your son Jesus
Christ said,father forgive them for thy know not

what thy do,I forgive lord and I also ask for forgiveness, I pray all these things with all my heart,Amen"

...

Its been two months since I've been home,but recess is over now,its a new year and I haven't spoken to Quinton, well it is over between us but I still really want to heal him,he's been my motivation for me to discover my gift and I'm finally getting the hang of it,but the only thing I can do is to make the diamonds glow and float in the air,but they don't spin and reveal to me things,I'm just glad I've accomplished something, which means I'm getting there,I don't know why but I worry a lot about Quinton not because he's in danger but I feel like he's down, his spirit is not at ease,he's not happy and he cries most of the time,I always find myself picking up the phone to call him but fight against it as I tell myself that maybe its

our break up that's making him feel this way but I feel its more than that, something is going on,he's just not at peace,I hate that I'm feeling his feelings its like I'm one person with him,whenever I think he's crying, I cry too and he only cries at night,I feel like embracing him and telling him that everything is going to be okay and I'm here for him. ..I should move on,that was the plan after I left him for me to move on with my life,but how can I do that when I feel so incomplete, like there's no life to live without Quinton, he's been there from the beginning he's always been my protector from the very first day I came to Jo'burg, but I'm not about to go back there,he doesn't trust me enough,he let's people in too easily, he cheated on me..argh, why am I even thinking about him!

I'm now packing my bags

"Do you have to go back this early?"

I look up at her

Me:"mom,schools open next week,I've been here for two months "

Mom: "feels like it was only few days"

Me:"aaww I'll miss you to mama"

Mom:"I'm so happy about this God fearing woman you've become "

Me:"come on mom,you talking like I'm this holy holy person"

Mom:"you don't have to be holy holy,a praying woman is a powerful woman"

Me(sighs):"its taking me forever to figure my gift out"

Mom:"you doing well so far,remember one of the fruits if God...Patience "

Me:"I know,I'll be patient "

Mom: "you should also put your pride aside and go check up on him"

Me:"No mom,he didn't even try to stop me or explain to me after I caught him cheating, he obviously doesn't care about me,why should I care how he's holding up,he's just so ignorant of my feelings at times I swear sometimes it feels like I don't mean shit to him...forgive my language "

Mom: "so you haven't forgiven him?"

Me:"I've forgiven him...I always forgive him,he's one person I find easy to forgive... But I'm still hurt,I don't want to hold grudges but he doesn't care mom,he doesn't care at all"

Mom:"you seem to be focusing on all the wrongs he does, if you look at the good and loving things he's done for you,do they overpower the wrongs he's done to you?"

I take my time to answer that question

Me:"Yeah...but mom,when he hurts me..it hurts so bad,its always another woman,its always the

same way,the most painful way,I feel like I'm just not enough for him,like I just don't satisfy him,he feels the need to look for more,he's selfish,he's ungrateful, I give him my all,my love my body even my soul,but he just doesn't get it"

Mom:"and despite of all the wrongs he's done, does God still love Quinton? "

Me:"obviously, God loves him no matter what"

Mom: "do you love him?"

Me:.....

Me:"more than anything.. But I'm just so angry at him"

Mom:"grace....he needs that from you too"

Me:"mom,I don't feel like he deserves it,he never even asked for forgiveness he never bothered to explain himself, you don't get it mom,he made me feel like I'm nothing, like I'm not needed"

Mom: "when Jesus died on the cross and sacrificed his life for you so that you can be forgiven so that you and God could be reconciled, that was His grace for you... Do you think you deserve it?"

I look at her for a long while

Me:"No"

Mom:"but still he shows you his immortal grace even though you don't deserve it..because he's love for you is limitless.. Do you think you can do that for Quinton? "

Me:.....

Mom:"there are so many things I had to forgive your father for..so so many heartbreaking things,but I forgave him...and by doing that,it freed me,Lisa baby,its time you let the God in you take over my love,sometimes if you want to win the war you have to step down and let God fight the battle as he offers to do in the bible"

I sigh and sit down

Mom:"don't give Satan the satisfaction, show him who's in charge in your life,he doesn't have the authority over you"

She's talking a whole lotta sense,its time I let God fight for me,I'm too weak to do it myself anymore

Mom:"think about it"

Me:"yes I'm happy with everything, it'll be just fine "

Landlord: "I'm glad you like it,its nothing much,I'm still going to hire a plumber to fix the geezer very soon"

Me:"okay,I'll survive,thank you"

Him:"call if you experience any more problems"

Me:"I will"

He smile and walks out.

Well I found a new apartment, its nothing much,one bedroom, one bathroom with a toilet and a shower,and a big open space that can be divided to be the kitchen and lounge,I just have to separate it with a table or something, its a really small flat but since I'm alone its just right although it looks like a lot needs to be maintained, I hope the plumber comes soon and that the landlord and I could get along,I'd hate to have to remind him all the time.

I couldn't go back to yonela, I don't want to intrude, she's distanced herself a lot from me,since I moved back in with Quinton to take care of him after he got shot,she's just been distant, I get that she doesn't like Quinton after the way he treated me,but that doesn't mean she should stop talking to me,I could've used help sometimes, you know just someone to come check up on me,but nothing,I'm not going

to go around asking her what's her problem,I'll also keep my mouth shut and move on,the last thing I need is an disloyal friend although I miss her a lot at times, even Quinton's siblings they've never checked up on him, its always just been him and I, I'm so antisocial, I don't even know how to make friends anymore,Quinton and Yonela have been my only friends,but now,yeah it is what it is neh...life goes on.

I settle in and pack everything of mine after the van delivered my few stuff like the bed and furniture and all that.

After a few hours I was done and just relaxing on my bed

A knock is coming from the door,I get up and go towards the main door

Me:"who is it!?"

"Neighbour"

I unlock and open and a young lady who looks my age is standing in front of me

Her:"good evening "

Me:"evening,can I help you?",

Her:"oh,my name is Thelma I live next door,I noticed you moving in earlier on"

Me:"oh Yeah,yes I just moved in"

Thelma:"I know you probably tired since you just moved in,you probably also too tired to cook"

I have nothing to cook actually

Me:"yeah,but I was just going to have tea and bread"

Thelma:"I was about to go to town,I don't really have much friends around here so do you mind accompanying me?"

Yoh this girl though,how can she ask a total stranger to accompany her?

And why should I trust her?

Me:"well,there's still so many boxes I have to empty up and..."

Thelma: "we won't be long,please"

Well I am hungry,but I don't have money to waste since I'll be renting alone with the little money I get from the bursary and from mom

Me:"I guess I could use a break"

She flashes a big smile

Thelma: "let's go"

Me:"wait here"

I run to the room to wear a jacket and shoes,I already had a jean on

Me:"let's go"

I lock and we head towards a very nice car Audi A4

Me:"this yours?"

She nods

Thelma: "yep, got it last year on my eighteenth birthday"

Me: "wow people do that in real life?"

She laughs

Thelma: "it wasn't easy, I had to pass matric with straight As"

Me: "and you did?"

Thelma: "I only got three As but it was good enough to impress mom and dad"

Me: "wow"

Thelma: "if I had passed with all As I would've got a bigger and better one maybe a range rover or something"

Me: "damn you mean if I were you I'd be driving a range rover now?"

She laughs

Thelma: "you passed with straight As?"

Me:"yeah,95s and above"

Her mouth hangs open

Thelma: "woow if I got that,I'd have my own penthouse in sandton and a car"

Me:"dude! Let's exchange lives...please"

Thelma: "so where will you study next year?"

Me:"I'll be doing my third year in Wits"

She takes her eyes of the road for a while to look at me then looks back at the road

Thelma: "how old are you?"

Me:"I'll be turning nineteen in two months time,march"

Thelma:"I'm turning nineteen next month..when did you finish school?"

Me:"at sixteen"

Thelma:"while I was busy waiting time in grade

ten you mean I could've just skipped straight to varsity?"

I laugh

Me:"yep all you needed to was just know a bit more and study a bit extra than your normal grade average"

Thelma: "you mean do harder work than the hard one they were already giving us? No thank you"

Me(laughing): "guess you wouldn't understand"

We talk about other random stuff until we reached steers

Me:"I think I'll settle for KFC"

Cause I'm broke,but wouldn't wanna put it out there

Thelma: "oh come on,steers burgers are the best and the ribs come on"

Me:"naahh I feel like KFC right now"

That is not half of what I feel but it will do

Thelma: "please...its on me"

Me:"I wouldn't wanna inco....

Thelma: "Not at all .now come on!"

She pulls me and we ran towards steers we ordered and ate around the table,she's really bubbly and kinda very too much loud,in a good way

Thelma: "there's this party going down in Sandton my classmate from last year is hosting it,I didn't feel like going but now that we already out and about,do you wanna go?"

I think about it, its been a while since I've been out to any party like a very long time,since last year in the beginning of the year twice? Or was it once?...damn

Me:"Nah I'm cool"

Thelma: "wow your thinking face gave me so

much hope"

I laugh

Me:"you know what...I do need a break, we are bored eighteen year olds with a car free to go anywhere,so let's have some fun"

Thelma (shouts):"That's my kinda guurrrllll!!!"

Oookay. All eyes on us

Me:"yeah let's get out of here before someone kicks us out"

Thelma (laughs):"good idea"

We laugh and walk out,she drives recklessly to the party with music on sky high

Us (singing):"It's going down, I'm yelling timber

You better move, you better dance

Let's make a night you won't remember

I'll be the one you won't forget

Wooooah (timber), wooooah (timber), wooooah

(it's going
down)

Wooooah (timber), wooooah (timber), wooooah
(it's going
down)!!"

We sang till we reached our destination, its so
packed, this house is big and beautiful.... I look
at it and I feel like..One Day..One Day Lisa,You'll
Have It All..And Better.

We head inside after she gave her details

Its even more beautiful inside, its packed with a
bunch of slay queens and young men

Me:"so where do we go from here?"

She looks at me blankly

The music is really loud

Thelma(shouting):"whaaat!!"

Me(shouts):"where do we go from here!! "

Thelma: "That way!!"

She points and we head towards what looked like a lounge and sat on the couch, she looked around until she spotted a group of people

Thelma: "there they are, let's go"

Me: "No I'll just wait...."

She pulls me before I can finish

Thelma: "Hey Guys!!"

There was three guys and two girls

Guy 1: "Hey thelms...howzit?"

Thelma: "I'm cool"

Girl 1: "hey girl, thought you couldn't make it"

She says as she hugs

Thelma: "I couldn't.. Until I met Lisa, she changed my mind"

The cute guy who has been quiet finally speaks

Guy2:"Lisa?"

Thelma: "oh yes..Lisa this is Sfisokuhle but we call him fiso or sfiso"

Guy 1:"nice to meet you Lisa"

Me:"you too"

Thelma: "that's Zweliswa"

Girl 1:"hey"

Me:"hi"

Thelma: " that's my girl Chrissy"

Girl 2:"wazup?"

Me:"I'm cool,you?"

Girl 2:"I'm cool"

Thelma: "and lastly that's the Mr Soccer captain.. Tseviso but we call him tsepo"

He nods..I nod back

Thelma: "he doesn't talk much,don't mind him"

Tsepo:"Thelma, can I talk to you in private?"

She looks at me I give her the go ahead

Thelma: "I'll be right back... Find some drinks and enjoy the music in the meantime"

Chrissy:"don't worry,I got her"

Thelma: "you in good hands"

Tsepo: "I want to talk for a few minutes not kill you"

We all laugh but he remains serious as they walk away

Zweli:"fiso,come dance with me"

They disappeared

Chrissy:"guess it's just the two of us,do you want a drink?"

Me:"No thanks "

Chrissy: "okay,I'll get it for you"

She walks away, guess she don't take no for an

answer

She comes back while my eyes were still
wondering around

Chrissy: "there you go"

Me:"thank you"

She took my hand and we went to dance with
the rest

I thought I'd enjoy myself but this party was just
boring with a bunch of strangers I don't know,
maybe if I came with yonela it would be much
better and Thelma just disappeared on me..I left
Chrissy dancing and found myself outside at
the back of the house by the pool area,..I sat
there for a while with my feet in the pool,no one
is swimming and there's only a few people back
here,making out. I stare at the beautiful sky
filled with tiny sparkling stars.

I startle as I notice someone sitting next to me
with his feet also in the pool

Me:"dude...you scared me"

This dude is something else, he's very well built, hardly smiles or talks and his good looks are intimidating, his dark skin is the attractive kind,I've never in my life met a dark skinned very handsome guy,I thought you have you be like Quinton for a man to be too handsome in my eyes,ahh but Q still takes the cup,always and forever.

He looks at me and gives me a side smile,wow,at least he can smile although it wasn't full or genuine

I look back at the stars,I'm tired of looking at his cute face I might end up blabbering bitchy words and I can be a blabber once I've had a few drinks

Tsepo:"you not from around here"

Is he telling me or asking me?

Me:"okay"

Tsepo:"are you?"

Should've known it was a question

Me:"No I'm not"

Tsepo:"where you from?"

Me:"I reside in braamfontain but I'm originally from Eastern Cape "

Tsepo:"which campus do you attend to?"

Me:"Wits"

He keeps quiet,we haven't been looking at each other the whole time

I glance at him he's staring at my feet which are floating on the water

Me:"You?"

He looks at me our eyes lock

He looks a bit too mature to be a freshmen

Tsepo: "me what?"

Me:"are you from around here? Which campus do you attend to? "

Tsepo:"Yeah this is my home,I attend UJ"

Oh my gosh he stays here!?! What the freaky Friday!?

Me:"oh...what are you studying? "

Tsepo:"sport medicine "

Interesting.. I've never heard of it

Me:"that's sounds interesting, what's it about? "

Tsepo:"its a branch of medicine that deals with physical

fitness and the treatment and prevention of injuries related

to sports and exercise"

He's body says it all,he's a sports freak

Me: wow,you love sports don't you?"

Tsepo: "yeah,that's why I'm also captain of the

soccer team,once I'm done studying I'd love to be a professional soccer player,I've already got so many opportunities to play for all the soccer teams in south Africa.,..but I had to reject them"

He's tone changed at the last part,he sounds like he's very passionate about soccer,you can hear the interest and excitement in his voice when he talks about it

Me:"why?"

Tsepo:"my parents want me to finish my studies first,I can't rely on soccer,I need something to fall back on,they forced me to do medicine, so I chose sport medicine,they didn't mind as long as its medicine, now I have to wait four more years"

Me:"what year are you doing? "

Tsepo: "I'll be starting my fourth year"

Me:"you almost there,just three more years left"

Tsepo: "four, including this one"

Me:"the year goes by fast,this one will be over before you know it"

I feel his eyes on me so I turn to look at him

Tsepo: "wow"

He says staring into my eyes

Me:"what!?"

Tsepo: "you have really beautiful eyes,rare colour"

I look away,you don't know half of the story about these eyes

Me:"thank you"

He turns my face to look at him

Tsepo: "you very beautiful"

Me:"thanks"

We stare at each others eyes

Just then my body shakes as I feel a chill down my spine

Tsepo : "you cold?"

Something bad is going to happen, I can feel it

Me: "something's not right...are you feeling okay?"

Tsepo: "I'm fine, as you can see, but you on the other hand, your hands are shaking"

Me: "we need to get out of here"

He looks at me amused

Tsepo: "where to?"

Me: "somewhere..anywhere but we need to get out of this crowd "

He smiles..oh God he's mind is somewhere else.

Dear God, please protect us from whatever might happen tonight

Tsepo: "come, lets go get you a warmer jacket

upstairs"

Anything to get out of this space,he gets up and gives me his hand helping me up,we walk towards the house,he's still holding my hand,I don't know why,by the door I notice Thelma standing alone looking at us as if she's been watching us the whole time..could this be her boyfriend? Oh damn she'll think something is going on,tsepo bluntly passes her while pulling me,I wanted to stop and say something to her but Tsepo was too fast

Me:"Tsepo wait!"

He stops and looks at me

Me:"I want to have a word with Thelma "

Tsepo: "okay"

Me:"please let go of my hand"

He looks at it and chuckles letting it go

I walk up to her

Me:"hey girl"

Thelma:"I bring you here and you decide to hang out with other people?"

Me:"No,I was tired of dancing so I went to relax by the pool,Tsepo decided to join me,and you were busy having fun I didn't want to disturb you"

She was about to say something until a very loud *BAAH!!*

Everyone got down I pulled her down too

More gun shots were fired, I tried to peep,they are wearing masks,after they shot they ran away,everyone got back up in total shock,that was weird they didn't steal anything they just came to shoot,I notice people surrounding something and some crying for help

Thelma: "what's going on!?"

Me:"I think someone got shot,let's go see"

I ran towards the crowd pushing and shoving
until I reached the middle, my blood dropped as
I noticed Tsepo lying in a pool of blood,dying

"He's dead,by the time an ambulance gets here
he'll be dead"

Someone declears from the crowd

I shake him

Me:"Tsepo! "

He coughs out blood

"Tsepo! Oh my God Tsepo!"

Thelma comes kneeling in front of me with
Tsepo between us

Me:"don't close your eyes Tsepo,please just
hang in there"

I look at the girl next to Thelma who's also
kneeling and crying her guts out

Me:"can someone please dismiss everyone to

go home!?"

She gets up

Her:"Everyone get out,party is over! Out out out!!"

People start disappearing, it was just Thelma,sfiso and Chrissy left including the girl who just dismissed everyone

Her:"please brother,please don't leave me,I still need you!"

Thelma:"where's the fucken ambulance, Tsepo baby,please hang in there"

Tsepo (coughs):"Lisa"

He says looking at me with sleepy eyes

Thelma looks at me hurt

I look back at him

Me:"Tsepo"

Tsepo: "it was nice knowing you.. (Coughs)..I

wish I had more...more time..(coughs and groans)..to get to know you more"

Thelma gets up and leaves Chrissy follows her

Chrissy: "Thelma calm down"

Why would he say this in front of his girlfriend?

Me:"don't close your eyes Tsepo "

He shakes his head

Girl:"I'm gonna go call mom and dad"

She stands up and leaves

Sfiso:"I'll check on the ambulance "

He gets up and its just him and I now

Tsepo: "I...I guess...this is it...my dreams. ..they crash here"

He closes his eyes

Me:"keep them open,breathe,you can do this please "

He opens them

Tsepo: "I can't ..(groans)..."

He closes them I burst into tears

Me(crying):" Nooo don't go..please please please!!"

I lift up his shirt,if my powers have to start working at some point,it has to be today, his shot twice in the stomach

I place my hands on his wounds,I look around if no one is watching, luckily not...I take a deep breathe

Me:"in the name of the father the son and the holy spirit"

I keep my eyes closed for a while,a powerful force takes over me,I feel like my body is floating on air,I see all the bad things that have happened to me

....

Me:"okay okay,but please can we not....

Lee:"if you love me we'll do it my way"

Me:"NO!! Stay Away from me! Help!!"

He laughs next thing I know my cheek is heated up,he just gave

me a hot slap,

.....

Lee:"Shut Up! Why are you making things difficult for yourself?!

You my wife, when I want pussy I should get pussy

...understood!?"

Me(crying): "please...please..please...don't do this"

Lee: "you talk too much,that's your problem,I have a solution"

....

"Aaahh yeah!"

He releases once again

then collapses on me while in between my legs

.....

Sydney: "oohh Lizzy..its not what it looks like"

My eyes are glued at the man I thought loved me

Me: Quinton? "

Quinton: "ppsshhh...oops"

....

Quinton:"are you even really pregnant? "

Sydney: "yes"

Quinton: "my baby?"

Sydney: "yes"

.....

Q's mom: "I just don't understand why you with

her..She broke

your heart,She easily gave up on,she doesn't
love you,she's from

a poor family she's just going to suck....

.....

...

Sydney: "okay,fine,I never came here because of
work,your

mother called me, she told me you in a
relationship that is only

bringing you down and you starting to ignore
the family business

because of her,she's changing you, you were
doing great in

looking for your father's diamonds,but when
you finally met the

girl who has them,you neglected the mission of

getting the

diamonds and fell madly in love with the enemy
of the

family, and now she wanted me to help her
separate y'all and to

make you love me like how you love her so that
I can have

control of you and the diamonds"

Me: "you've been after the diamonds too?"

Quinton: "that was before I knew you the one
who has them"

.....

Quinton: "damn Lisa! Could you try to be
gentle!?"

Me: "I'm sorry, I didn't see the wheelchair was so
close to the

car"

Quinton: "its fine"

Quinton: "please hurry up!!"

Quinton: "The car will close and lock itself?"

Me: "oh yeah"

Quinton: "first get to the house Lisa! You were already so

close!..what's up with you tonight!?"

Me: "stop shouting at me!?"

Quinton: "nawe get your mind right!"

Me: "you don't have to be so rude!!"

Quinton: "whatever!"

.....

Quinton: if you so tired why don't you just go? "

...

Me: "Quinton. Ambrose. O'Brien.... Goodbye"

**

I forgive them all father, cleanse my heart Lord, I
forgive and today I forget

Me: "take over God"

I open my eyes

Tsepo: "how did you do that?"

He gets up

Tsepo: "what the hell! Its gone"

Oh my gosh...its gone gone.. Its completely
gone!!!! Impossible!

Tsepo: "this is impossible..."

Me: "it works!"

I shout looking at my hands

Me: "it works it works it works!!!!"

Tsepo: "I'm alive...I'm better!"

He touches himself all over then looks at me we smile at each other,he runs up to me and hugs me while picking me up and spinning me

Me(laughing): "okay okay! Down!"

He puts me down and looks at me

Tsepo:"how did you do that?"

Me:"it wasn't me"

Tsepo(confused): "but,you you did the thingymagingy"

Me:"it wasn't me...it was..... God"

He looks at me perplexed

Tsepo: "well thank you anyway"

He pulls me closer

Okay..I see someone caught feelings

Me:"uhm Tsepo....Thelma is my neighbour "

I didn't want to say friend cause I'm not sure what are her intentions in my life,I can't trust

anyone anymore

He pulls me and locks me into his arms

Tsepo:"so? She's not my girlfriend "

Me:"oh? But..."

Tsepo: "nothing is going on between her and I...
But I wouldn't mind for something to go on
between the girl who saved my life and I"

"Oh my gosh!!! Tsepo!!! You okay!!"

I push him away pulling out of his grip

They hug asking him questions, just then the
ambulance and his parents come,everyone was
busy surrounding him and touching him.

I slowly walked backwards towards the door,
Tsepo's eyes landed on me,I waved at him he
smiles... I ran out,that's when I realise I have no
ride home,wow,I'm never ever trying to make
friends again!

I call an uber,it comes after a few minutes and

drops me off at my apartment I pay and head to the house and first thing I do is throw myself on the bed

Me:"Quinton! "

It clicks to me that I can finally get Q off that chair !!

Me:"Yes! I can finally heal you Quinton!! "

I feel a strong pang that causes an unbearable ache on my head

I get up and stumble to the kitchen to get myself a cup of water

My hand shakes as I try to pour water on the shaking glass I'm holding

What's going on with me,the headache gets worse as my knees also fail me as I fall on the floor,everything becomes blurry before I know it... Light out!

Well you only need the light when it's burning
low

Only miss the sun when it starts to snow

Only know you love her when you let her go

Only know you've been high when you're feeling
low

Only hate the road when you're missing home »

Only know you love her when you let her go

And you let her go...

QUINTON

I'm embarrassed to call myself man,I never knew a woman could be so cruel. Well Sydney has been living with me ever since Lisa moved out and she's been a living nightmare, she first tried to seduce me but I just wasn't feeling it,she tried for days, walking around naked but I wasn't paying any attention to her...you won't believe what she did thereafter,she sneak into my room and forced herself at me,I tried fighting her but I was already inside her,she's done it more than once,so I just ended up giving her what she wanted..she got tired of taking care of me,she hired a nurse but she she only came during the day but Sydney stopped her from coming cause she was jealous that the nurse

will try her luck since she baths me and changes me. She's confiscated my phone and laptop a week ago..I can't believe I'm taking

orders from a woman,even though I can kick her out or even kill her,no matter how much I can threaten her,she has a bigger threat against me..she once pointed a knife at her tummy,now I know she's crazy,she's capable of anything, she's obsessed and she's been treating me like shit,I haven't had a bath in weeks,this legs! These stupid legs!! These useless stupid fucken legs

"Ambrose...shit.. You stink"

She comes in the room,I'm ilying on the bed,I've been on this bed for a whole full month

Sydney: "oh my Gosh...did you poo your pants!?"

Me:.....

She comes closer holding her nose

Sydney: "sick man.. You messed yourself,..a fully grown ass man,pissing and shitting himself!! Fuck!"

Me:"p..pl..please..

Sydney: "p,.p..p..please. ...hahahahaaaa....you sound like a broken record..hahahahahahaa!"

She's taken out all the bed covers,I only have my boxers on,I sleep with nothing to cover myself and go for days without eating, its been two weeks since I've had food,I only get water once a week

I'm cold and starving!

Sydney: "how does it feel now huh? You and your little girlfriend Lizzy treated me like shit...look at you now who's the shit now?...where's your pretty face girlfriend? You see,that's what you get for falling for teenage girls...when the going gets tough they give up..they can't handle the downs she only loves your dick when its up..when you low she's gone"

She laughs

Sydney: "you left me,a mature woman who can

carry children for you and chose a little girl who still wants to fool around tasting different dicks..and you thought she'll stick around for long? Haa! Shame!"

She walks away

Sydney: "learn to use your useless legs already and clean yourself up! Sies!"

I grab a lamp next to me and throw it at her but she dodges it

Sydney: "have you lost your mind!?!..you want to kill your baby?..fine,I can do that for you"

She takes the lamp and attempts to bang it on her stomach

"Stop!! Stop!!.. I'm sorry! Okay I'm sorry!"

She laughs and throws it

Sydney: "try something like that again, I'll kill this baby..now you going to stay with your shit on that bed for rest of....oh I don't know,until

you can walk"

She laughs and walks out closing the door. As much as I hate it but I can't hold them, I break down and cry,yeah I cry a lot that's all I'm good at its hard not to when you a grown man who messes himself everyday and depends on people who don't want to help you to change you. I don't know how long I can keep this up. I open the draw looking for something to kill myself with,I find a picture of Lisa, I take it and just stare at it,the only person who's truly loved me,not even my own family loved me as much as she did,I just wish we could be happy without anyone trying to rob us of it,there's not a single day I don't think about her,I couldn't even contact her cause of Sydney... But look at me I'm a stinking skinny useless excuse of a man, I hope Lisa never comes back to me,I hope she stays where she is..she deserves better,I can't take her back I can't let her come back to my

complicated life,she's too young for this, she should live a normal life like all the other girls her age out there....I knew I shouldn't have fallen for her,the worst mistake I made was confessing my love for her...everything I've done,I did it to protect her,Sydney ruined my plans,I've found out so much about the Johnsons, Enhle is so blond, Lisa is not safe and there's nothing I can do about it

LISA

THE NEXT DAY

I'm woken up by beeping sounds, I lazily open my heavy eyes looking around

"Lisa! You awake"

Me: "Thelma..what happened? "

Thelma: "I don't know but I came to your apartment earlier to apologise, you weren't picking up my calls so I went to check you at your apartment you were not opening and I panicked since I left you at the party alone, I asked my brother to break in for me and that's when we found you lying hopelessly on the floor"

I sit up

Me: "what did the doctor say is wrong with me?"

Thelma: "you just had a bad headache it could be caused by dehydration "

Me: "oh okay.."

Thelma: "I'm really sorry Lisa, I'm not usually like that, I don't know what got over me"

I look at her like 'yeah right'

Thelma: "okay, I was angry, tsepo was dying, and I was there crying and pleading my heart was breaking cause of that scene, but he didn't even look at me, when he used all his last energy to call your name... I was hurt"

Me: "are y'all dating?"

Thelma: "No..we not dating, we've never dated but we just friends, I care about him a lot"

Me: "oh"

Thelma: "when I saw him click with you by the pool and how he felt comfortable just being around you, even holding your hand, something he doesn't usually do, but only does it to me, I guess i..... I..."

Me: "felt jealous? "

Thelma: "yeah..(sighs)..I'm sorry"

Me:"its cool,I'll stay away from your friends and you from now on"

Thelma: "No..please.. I'm really sorry"

I ignore her

My heart beats fast in fear

Me:"Quinton! "

Thelma: "who?"

Me:"I need to get out of here,I need to go see him"

Thelma: "uhmm.."

Me:" Quinton, I need to see him now,please take me to him"

Thelma: "okay,the doctor said you can be discharged as soon as you wake up anyway..so let's go"

I get up,he's crying again, he's broken...

We literally ran out the hospital

Me:"drive faster!"

She hits the accelerator to full speed pushing me to lean right back against my seat

[07/30, 13:18] Ron: Insert 52

LISA

As soon as we got there I enter the pin,luckily it hasn't changed,the gate opens

Thelma: "wow,your boyfriend is loaded"

Me:"yeah kind of"

We sit in the car for a while

Thelma:"aren't you going to go in?"

I sigh

Me:"when I left,we weren't in the best of terms"

Thelma:"that bad?"

I nod

Me:"I broke up with him"

Thelma: "then why are we here?"

Me: "he needs my help"

Thelma: "he asked for your help?"

Me:"No...but I was long supposed to help him,but at that time,I couldn't, but now, I can"

Thelma: "why do you so desperately need to help him? I'm sure the reason y'all broke up was because he was a jerk ass like all the other men in South Africa"

Me:"well,I need to help him cause its what I was meant to do"

Thelma: "wow,you still love him?"

Me: "Yes,but I'm just going to help him,I don't think I'll get back with him again"

Thelma: "I understand... Should I wait out here?"

I nod

Me:"yeah,I won't be long,if I'm not out after twenty minutes you can come in"

Thelma:"got it"

I open and walk towards the house,I ring the bell,I wait for someone to open but no one opens,I ring it again and also knock, No one opens, where could they be? Maybe they went out..I walk towards the garage,its open and his car is here,maybe they took some other car? Since Quinton can't drive and Sydney also can't drive in her condition specially this car. I go back to Thelma's car

Me:"No one is home"

Thelma:"really? Do they usually leave the windows open?"

I look around the house

Me:"Quinton always remembers to close them well that was because I used to shout at him when he doesn't,I guess now that we not together anymore he doesn't care"

Thelma: "after you rushed me here so much,we can't just leave,I can see the concern in your

eyes for him,you should go try again"

I sigh

Me:"you right"

I go back to the door and ring the bell..nothing

Oh wait,I have my own keys

I walk back to the car

Thelma:"nothing? "

Me:"No...but I just remembered I have extra keys"

Thelma: "that's great"

I look around the car

Me:"didn't bring my handbag"

She sighs

Thelma: "well this sucks"

Me:"I'll just go around the back of the house"

Thelma: "yeah you do that"

She lowers her chair and relaxes

I run around the house to the back, luckily the sliding door is open

I budge in looking around

"Quinton!!!!"

I shout as I walk to the guest room down stairs but he's not there, I thought he'd be sleeping down here since Sydney is pregnant and can't carry him upstairs, how does she manage to carry him up and down everyday?

Me: "Sydney!!! "

"What's up with the noise?!"

I turn and she's coming from the other room

Me: "hey. Sorry if I disturbed your nap"

Sydney: "damn right you did... (yawn)... what are you doing here anyway?"

Me: "I came to see Quinton "

Sydney:"well he doesn't want to see you "

Me:"I don't care,I won't be long I just need to tell him something "

Sydney: "you left him at a time he needed you most,he wants nothing to do with you. He wants to focus on me and his baby now,so whatever you trying to do..its not going to work"

Me:"where is he?"

Sydney: "you don't get it do you? He. Doesn't. Want. To. See. You!.....get that through your thick skull"

Me:"I'd like to hear him telling me that"

Sydney:"oh my gosh..the guy doesn't have any respect you,he chose me after everything you've done for him..not only once but twice! Then on top of that he cheats on you...don't you get it? You not woman enough for Quinton, he needs a woman he can settle down with,a woman like me"

Her words cut deep bringing back the pain but I keep it buried

Me: "I don't care Sydney, I already know all that you telling me, you don't have to repeat it...I'm not here to get him back, there's just something important I need to tell him"

Sydney: "sorry he's not here"

Okay she's acting weird

Me:"let me check for myself "

Sydney: "okay that's it. Get out!"

Me:"you lying.. I can feel his presence "

I walk around and go look by the room she came from,he's not here,I get out and look by the other last room that's downstairs, he's not here

Sydney: "I told you he's not here"

She's been following me all over

Me:"upstairs! "

I attempt to walk upstairs she shouts for me to stop

"Don't go there!! He's not here!!"

Me:"I want to find that out myself"

I was about to take the last step when she jumps and stands in front of me with her hands behind her back

Sydney: "just go Lizzy!! Quinton doesn't want to see you!"

Me:"why are you so jumpy? Why don't you want me to see him so bad?"

Sydney: "cause he said he doesn't want to ever see you!"

Me(shouts):"QUINTON! "

I try to push her out of my way but she brings her hand from her back and points a knife at me...my eyes pop out and my heart is ready to

jump out of my chest

"LISA!! IS THAT YOU!?"

Me:"QUINTON! YOU HERE!?"

Sydney: "Shut up!! You take another step closer,I swear to god I'll kill you"

Me:"your knife doesn't scare me"

I push her but she point it on her tummy

Sydney: "I'll kill this baby,and it'll all be your fault,Quinton will hate you forever! "

Me:"oh my Gosh...you are crazy"

Sydney:"damn right,and you don't want to see how crazy I can become"

I run to her and try fight her for the knife

Sydney: "let go!"

Me:"No,you let go!"

The knife cuts my finger I groan in agony letting her go

I look at her while holding my finger, she aims the knife at her tummy breathing heavily

Sydney: "well this is it.....say your last goodbyes, this baby is history!"

She lifts up the knife getting ready to stab herself..she's by the steps facing towards me I'm already at end of the stairs looking down at her

Me:"Nooooo!"

She attempts to stab herself when someone grabs the knife from her from behind

Me:"Thelma!"

Sydney: "what the fuck!? Give me that!"

The security guy comes in

Security: "is everything okay here mam?"

Sydney:"No! These intruders pointed a knife at me!"

Me:"that's not true! She's the one who had the knife pointed at me"

Sydney: "as you can see..look who's holding the knife! They just came in here uninvited!"

Me:"Sandile...are you going to believe her over me?"

Sandile has been the security ever since Quinton got shot,he only comes in at night and during morning, I guess when I came in he was on a break

Sandile:"Miss Fox,please come with me"

Sydney: "What!?! No you..you can't just take her word.. You are so fired! I'll let Quinton know about this!"

He ignores her and takes her with him

Sandile:"what should I do with her Lisa?"

Me:"just keep her by your back house for now,until I'm ready to deal with her"

He smiles

Sandile: "as you wish"

He grabs her and walks out with her, she tries fighting him but he's too strong

Sydney: "you can't do this I'll sue you! You can't treat a pregnant woman like this!! I send you to jail. Ahhhh leave me alone!..

She makes noise till they disappear

We sigh at the same time

Thelma: "that was some crazy pregnant bitch"

Me: "tell me about it...thanks to you she's still pregnant "

Thelma: "you said twenty minutes I gave you exactly that"

Me: "Thanks.. You can make yourself comfortable in lounge, I need to go check up on Quinton "

Thelma: "okay. Shout if you need any help"

Me:"I will"

She walk downstairs I carry on walking to the room,I sigh before opening,our eyes lock as I walk in...OH MY GOD!! its like a hobo is sleeping on that bed!..I cover my mouth and nose with my hand..It stinks like Shit in here! I keep gagging feeling the urge to vomit

First thing I do is walk to the balcony door and open it wide I open all the windows as well and curtains,I walk to the bathroom and open the windows there too,I take the air freshener and spray it all over ad I walk back to the room...well its a bit better but the smell is still strong

I walk up to him..oh god he stinks and is covered in beard

Me(whispers):"Quinton.... What happened? "

He remains looking down at his hands, he looks ashamed and embarrassed he can't even look

at me, my heart bleeds for him this sight of him
is heartbreaking

Me: "she did this to you? She didn't take care of
you did she?"

He sniffs

I get closer but get back again

Me:"she just let you rot...oh my gosh and you
just let her walk all over you? Do you love her
that much?"

He breaks down and cry he's body is shaking

I get closer and go on my knees,I place my hand
on his cheek

Me(gasps):"you so cold...how long have you
been naked like this?"

He wipes his nose and continues crying silently

I wrap my arms around him

Me:"don't cry...I'm here now"

He tries to break out my grip but I hold him tighter

Me:"I won't let her do this to you again, I won't let anyone ever mistreat you"

I let go of him and head to the bathroom, I ran water in the tub and put all sorts of bathe salts and gels I can find..I walk back to the room,I throw his one arm around my shoulder while the other holds his waist,he's a lot lighter now,he's so skinny,I help him and put him in the tub,I make him lie down and leave his body to just soak in the warm water. I leave him there as I go clean up the room,I take out the dirty bed sheets and pillow cases

I wrap every thing in one sheet and dump it in the balcony, I'll burn them later,sorry but I can't wash them,not cause they full of his shit,but I'm sure they've had sex on them before,before she couldn't handle him I'm sure she first pleased herself with him.

I walk back to the bathroom, he's just staring out in space,he hasn't said a word to me since I got here,I take the shower puff and scrub him with it,after much scrubbing I let the water run out,it's too dirty,I run more fresh water for him and put the salts and gel on him then wash him thoroughly and gently I slip my hands between his legs and wash his balls and in between his butt he groans in a turned on manner..yep there it is,he's hard,I look at him in the eyes,they small but he has a serious face,he's so sad we look into each others eyes for a while but he removes them and looks down, after washing him for the second time,I pour more water,this one is for his face,I rub the soap on his towel

Me:"close your eyes"

He closes them I wash it carefully and rinse it then wipe him..aahh there he is,the handsome sexiest man I've ever seen,I don't wanna shave his beard,I love it,he looks so manly,like he's

just gonna go out there and fight with a Lion or just do something really manly,am I going crazy? After washing his hair I help him out and put him on the bed he still can't sit up on his own he has to lean on something, I lotion him,it wasn't easy with Mr B standing high and tall sending messages to Miss M..but I did my best ignoring it,I dress him up in his warm trackpants,vest and a Jacket,I put a beanie hat,I put sock on his feet . I take out a clean blanket and tick him in,I feel like he's been cold for a very long time he needs to be warm,I turn on the heater from the air-con

Me:"are you feeling warmer now?"

He nods

Me:"you sure? Its not too hot? "

He shakes his head

Me:"okay then"

I hear his tummy growl

Me:"I'll go make you food"

I leave him and head downstairs

I find Thelma sleeping on the couch with the TV playing I carry on walking to the kitchen,I decide on cooking a quick dish of pasta and mince with mixed veg,all mixed together after I'm done I dish up for him and Thelma, I take her plate to her,I put it on the table and shake her she lazily wakes up

Me:"I made you food"

Thelma:"oh..thanks"

She takes it then looks at her phone

Thelma: "I have to go, its already half past five"

Me:"okay,you can go,after you finish your food though "

Thelma: "okay,how is he?"

Me:"he's fine"

Thelma: "that's nice,guess I'll meet him next time"

Me:"yeah,let me go feed him"

Thelma: "I'll see myself out after"

Me:"okay,thanks for everything "

Thelma: "oh please...anyday..I'm just sorry for the way I acted"

Me:"forgiven"

She smiles

Thelma: "I'll see you when I see you then"

Me:"yeah..drive safely "

I kiss her cheek and leave her eating as I walk up the stairs

I close the door and sit on the bed next to him

Me:"made you one of your favorite dishes"

He smiles and licks his lips

Me:"should I feed you or you'll feed yourself?"

He takes the bowl from me and digs in,he eats like a pig,taking in huge amount of food in his mouth without even pausing, tears escapes my eyes as I watch him eat like his life depends on it,my heart breaks into a billion peaces

He finishes

Me:"more?"

Quinton: "yes please"

That's the first thing he's said to me,I guess he didn't have the energy to talk, I run downstairs and dish up more I look around and Thelma is gone,so I lock the doors and head upstairs again with his food a some juice, he eats a bit more calmer this time,until he finishes and gulps down his juice,he makes that aahhh sound, he's satisfied a smile creeps in as I see his glowing face and his eyes beaming, its like he just gained back some life,I sense his

satisfaction in his heart

He burbs

Quinton: "excuse me"

Mmh manners

Quinton: "thank you"

Me:"you welcome"

He sighs

Quinton: "No..I mean like..thank you,for everything, thank you so so much,I know I don't say it much or show it..but Lisa,I'm really thankful,of you,your presence, your love,your kindness,your patience and everything you've ever done for me....what you just did for me right now,it means so much to me,I don't deserve you,you love me even when I'm covered in shit...I might be too late but Liss I appreciate you and I love you so much... Please find it in your heart to.....

Me:" I forgive you "

He looks at me shocked with a beaming face

Quinton: "just like that?"

Me:"it wasn't easy...definitely not just like that,it took a lot of prayer and advice to finally see it in my heart that I need to forgive you...it was kinda easy though..cause I love you "

Quinton: "I finally understand how much you love me,what you did for me today,no one could have ever done it,not even my own family.. Mxm they've all forgotten about me Not even Aidan nor Clyde came to see me,I've been quiet for a while now but never did they once think to check up on me..but God knows if they were in my position I would come check up on them every single day,without them having to call me...since I got shot they've distanced themselves... What kind of family do I have Lisa? What kind of family does that to their own blood?"

Huh Lisa? Does God hate me that much? What have I done to them that's so cruel? All I've done was protect and love them...I saved Candra's life and risked my life in the process,I had to do things horrible things that traumatized me at heart but I didn't care cause I loved my sister and I was willing to die for her...Aidan, I've saved his ass from so many things since we were kids I've been covering up for him, he'd do something wrong,but I'd always take the blame for him,I'd get the ass whooping for him...Clyde, mxm I don't even wanna talk about Clyde, he's the one person who should be bowing down for me after all the shit I've done because of him,..the woman I call a mother..we'd all be homeless if it wasn't for some of the things I've done for her..but where are they now? Family? I have no family "

I'm now covered in tears I feel shattered

Quinton: "Lisa.. You the only person in this

world who truly loves me,the only one who's been there..whether we together or not,I'll always love you for that and be grateful"

I wipe his tears

Me:"God doesn't hate you Quinton but the devil is the one deceiving you,don't let him win....you have to forgive them and love them always, no matter what"

He frowns

Quinton:"I'm not as strong as you Lisa,I can never do that"

Me:"you are way stronger Quinton way way stronger,... Trust me"

He remains quiet

Me:"there's one reason I came back to you today"

He looks at me

Me:"I've figured it out"

He immediately knows what I'm talking about

Quinton: "wow..when?"

Me:"yesterday..at some party I"

I tell him everything that happened

Quinton: "that's amazing"

Me:"I think God brought Thelma into my life to lead me to tsepo who will be the one who my gift will be revealed at....it was so amazing,the best feeling I've ever felt"

He smiles

Quinton: "I'm so proud of you..I really am"

Me:"now you can finally be healed"

Quinton: "yeah"

Me:"you remember my dream?"

Quinton: "yeah I do"

Me:"you were wearing these exact clothes when I saw myself healing you"

Quinton: "really?"

Me:"yeah..really..now let me do this for you"

Quinton: "why?"

Me(confused): "why what?"

Quinton: "why did you still come back? After our last fight,I was sure you never coming back again"

Me:"because,the reason I was so eager to figure my gift out in the first place was because of you...now that I've finally figured it out,you the first person I thought of,you the only person I was fighting for...and I've been with you since the day you got shot,I felt your pain just by looking at you,I know your suffering,cause I suffered with you..believe it or not Quinton, but I feel the same pain that you feel,for the past two months we've been apart,I felt your broken heart,you cries every night it felt like you were crying right next to me,I feel you Quinton.. And

ever since I've been connecting with god and my gift,I've been more connected with you so much,sometimes I could almost hear you,but it only happens when you feeling down or crying and I'd immediately feel the same way....I don't know why these things are happening but one thing I know is I have to heal you right now..today"

We stare at each others eyes before he nods as one tear escapes his eye

I remove the blanket and place my hands over his wound

He chuckles I look at him

Me:"what so funny? "

Quinton: "I just had a flashback, don't mind me"

Me:"let me guess..it was st the hospital, I was trying to heal you for the first time and it turned out to be a miserable failure? "

We laugh

Quinton: "don't tell me you can see my thoughts too?"

Me:"how I wish...I just guessed right because I was thinking of it too"

He laughs,its amazing how we can still laugh even though the situation is actually sad

Me:"come on Q..I need to heal you,you don't want to be a cripple forever "

Quinton: "do your magic bub"

I close my eyes, I inhale,hold it in then exhale

Me:"in the name of the father, the son and the holy spirit"

I feel my body as if its floating on air as it gets lighter

Its the most wonderful feeling to feel,the presence of God

I see everything we've been through since he
got shot

....

The shooting stops

Me(clinging on him,breathlessly):"what was that
about.....

I trail off as I stares at his tummy and hold my
mouth in shock

Quinton:"what?"

Me:"you bleeding! "

....

He opens his eyes,a silent short laugh escapes
my mouth

Quinton: "I love you too"

Me:"you awake"

Quinton:"mhm"

I hug him

"Aahh ouch"

I quickly let go

Me:"I'm so sorry... I'm so happy you awake"

Quinton: "its still too soon for me to leave you alone in this world"

Me:"you right we could use a hundred more years"

...

Quinton (whispers):"why can't I feel them Liss?"

Me:"you will feel them....just not now"

He lays back looking distraught

Me:"don't worry Q, you'll get better in no time....you'll see"

Quinton: "I won't be able to use my legs?"

Me:"its only temporary Q"

Quinton: "my legs Lisa,how am I supposed to do anything without my legs?"

My heart sinks at the sound of his sad tone

Me: "it won't be forever Quinton"

Quinton: "is that what the doctor said?"

I shake my head

Me:"no but...

Quinton: "so you a doctor now?"

....

Doc:"okay,so do you need me to organise a nurse for you,now?"

Quinton: "Yes"

Me:"No"

All eyes land on me

Me:"I'll be responsible for him"

Doc:"are you okay with that Mr O'Brien? "

Me:"yes he's okay with that "

He smiles at me

Quinton: "I'm down with that"

.....

Quinton: "its about damn time, what took you so long?"

I shake my head and push him to the car, we drive in silence till we get to Yonela's place, I attempt to get out but he holds my hand, I look at him

Quinton: "before we go inside, I want you to tell me what's eating you? Is it something the doctor said? Oh god..are you pregnant?"

I feel tears threatening as I shake my head

Me: "No"

He looks at me confused

Quinton: "is that a bad thing?"

Me(teary): "No"

Quinton: "then why are you sad?"

Me:"I'm fine Quinton let's go get the diamonds already "

....

I open the door and our eyes instantly lock

"Hey Lizzy"

My blood drops instantly, why is she here?

"Aren't you going to let me in?"

My eyes drop to her tummy,she pushes me out the way and makes her way inside

"Oh I'd also like a cup thanks..while you at it please let Ambrose know I'm back"

...

It only made me stronger,I've moved on,I make peace today,lord God cleanse my heart...

I open my eyes and look at him all over

Me:"did it work? Are you better?"

He triès to sit us butt fails,I can't believe this..
My heart drops

Me:"it didn't work....how come?"

Tears automatically start streaming

Quinton:"Lisa....

Me:"No Quinton, I've failed you yet again!....

I get up and start pacing

Me:"why can't we be happy? Why? After everyone I've forgiven, why does God forsake me...how do I move on now,I was meant to heal you yet it only works on strangers.. Why am I so useless? The only person I really wanted to heal... But....

"LISA!!"

I stop at my tracks, I have my back turned at him

Me:"its fine Quinton..I've given you false hope yet again, if you don't ever want anything to do

with me....I completely understand "

"Look at me"

I shake my head

Me:"No,I'm too ashamed"

" Just look at me Lisa"

I can hear the sadness in his voice

I shake my head,I can't face him right now,I've failed him

"LOOK AT ME LISA!"

I startle as I turn to look at him quickly

My mouth hangs open as a gasp escapes

He's standing on both his feet with tears running down his face

Me:"Quinton?....oh my gosh..you..you standing...
On your own"

He laughs in between his tears

Quinton: "yeah you did it...I can walk"

He walks around the bed and back, I start crying then find myself laughing, he jumps up and and that's when I scream my lungs out

"Aaaaahhhhhhhhhhh!!!!!! OMGEEEEEEEEEEEE I CAN'T BELIEVE THIISSSS!! YOU ACTUALLY ON YOUR FEET,ON YOUR OWN YEEEEYYYYIIIIII!!!"

I was making a whole lotta noise but I couldn't care less

He walks up to me and picks me up spinning me around

Quinton:"You DID IT!!! YOU FINALLY FIGURED IT OUT! OMGEEEEEEEE!!!"

Me:"HAHAHAA OMGEEEEEEEE!!!"

we laughed in excitement, we looked into each others teary beaming eyes,he's carrying me with my legs wrapped around his waist,he drops me on the bed while on top of me,he moves his

face towards mine,our lips touch,I watch his eyes close ready to kiss me,I push him back a bit

Me(smiling):"my work here is done"

He smiles then gets off me

Quinton: "oh,yeah,of cause....thank you Lisa,you really are gifted,I'm sorry I ever doubted you"

Me:"its cool,water under the bridge...I'm just so happy you can finally go back to your normal self"

Quinton: "me too,how can I ever repay you?"

Me:"its wasn't a business deal Quinton... I wanted to do this for you"

Quinton: "thank you,again"

I smile and sigh

Me: "I have to go...uhm,please burn those sheets,I left them by the balcony"

He nods

Quinton: "I will, sorry you had to touch me, smell and clean up my disgusting shitted self"

I brush his cheek

Me: "I'd do it over and over again... For you"

He smiles looking at me then drops his eyes and looks down

I wear my shoes and make my way out, he follows me and accompanies me outside

Quinton: "please let me take you, wherever you going"

Me: "its cool I'll request an..."

Quinton (interrupts): "just get in the car, its the least I can do"

Me: "I guess you not asking but telling me...(sighs)...fine"

I get in his car and we drive off

Quinton: "I'm surprised I can still drive"

I chuckle

Me:"same here"

I direct him till we get to my apartment

He parks by the gate

Quinton: "so this is where you stay now"

Me:"yeap, wanna come in?"

Why the hell did I just say that!? Say no say no
say no

Quinton: "don't mind if I do"

Me(mummers): "great"

We head inside,I have to lift the door before it
unlocks,we make our way inside

Me:"well I have nothing much,as you can see"

Its supper empty,I only have a small fridge and
few dishes,I haven't bought groceries yet

Quinton: "its okay...as long as its comfortable for you?"

Me:"yeah its comfortable, although the geezer still needs to be fixed,so I will have to warm the water by the stove,until the plumber comes"

Quinton: "but that will cause your rent to increase cause of the use of electricity"

Me:"I'll survive Quinton "

He sighs, he doesn't like this place,its written all over his face as he leaning against the wall with his hands in his pockets,we standing in the empty kitchen space which only has a fridge and a small sink to prove its a kitchen and dishes on the floor,there's no built ins,besides the cupboard that's connected with the sink, no wonder the rent is so cheap

Quinton: "its doesn't look comfortable at all,and there's just so many things that need to be fixed"

Me(sighs):"this is all I could afford
Quinton,sometimes we have to step out of our
comfort zone,to grow"

He walks towards me by the sink

Quinton: "just move back in with me, so you can
save your money to spoil yourself, like before"

Me:"its fine Quinton, you can't always take care
of me,I have to learn,you can't always be my
roommate "

Quinton: "then become my girlfriend...again"

silence

Me:"thanks for the ride...but I think you should
go now"

He sighs

Quinton: "I know I really hurt you,I'm sorry
Lisa,please forgive me"

Me:"as I've already told you,I long forgave you"

He goes on his knees

Quinton: "then please take me back..I love you..I can't live without you,literally, I can't, please bub,please give me another chance"

Me:"don't do this Quinton, please...(whispers)...don't do this"

He looks up at me for a long time before he gets up

He puts his hands back in his pockets

Me:"go home,deal with Sydney, she's by the security's house at the back,then you go see your family and tell them you forgive them,then leave them,God will handle the rest...go home and live your life, I'll do the same"

He looks around,sniffs and wipes his nose then looks at me

Quinton: "good night"

Me:"good night"

He walks out,I feel like stopping him,but I did say I'm done...I meant it then and I still mean it now..no matter how hard it is,no matter how much I love him..I'm still done,it will take a miracle for me to go back there,I've been through so much pain with Quinton, yes I forgive him,but that doesn't mean I should go back...sorry,but I'm done

[07/30, 13:18] Ron: Insert 53

QUINTON

I get home lock the doors,I head up to my room,well Lisa already cleaned up everything so I just take those dirty sheets outside to the back and burn them. I do just that.

It feels so unbelievable to be walking with with these same legs that were so useless a few hours ago, I can't help but think they'll just go numb and fail me again. I really don't understand how this whole God thing works,but if this was all God workings through Lisa's pure heart then I'm grateful to him. I watch the sheets burn. The only way I want to deal with Sydney is slit her throat off too bad she's carrying my baby and Lisa would definitely never forgive me for that,she's too kind for her own good. It'll take time but I will win her back,I

always do....I hope so.

I walk back to the house,I take my wheelchair from my room then head to the security's back house ,I knock then sit on the wheelchair while I wait for him to open

Sandile:"hey bossman"

Me:"Sandile...is Sydney in here?"

Sandile: "yeah but I kinda sedated her with isoflurane,I found from the first aid kit,she was threatening to hurt herself"

Me:"you did well man,can you please carry her back to the house for me?"

Sandile:"sure thing boss "

He walks in then comes back carrying her bridal style I tell him to leave her on the couch

Me:"thanks man,we need to keep a close eye on her,for the baby's sake"

Sandile: "she's a danger to herself and the baby"

What Sandile just said gave me an idea

Me:"I need you to do me a favour "

Sandile: "anything man"

Me:"I need you to organise people to come put small hidden civilian cameras around the house,which will be connected to my laptop "

Sandile: "first thing tomorrow"

Me:"No no please try get them now,I want them here the minute she wakes up"

Sandile: "Eish kodwa seku late manje abasekho aba.....(but its already so late there's no no one who...,...)"

Me:" you a security guard,I'm sure you can figure something out ..you have thirty minutes to sort it out"

Sandile: "done"

He makes his way out immediately

I watch her sleeping peacefully, this woman used to mean so much to me, we had each other's backs, my first female best friend, when she caught feelings, I didn't date her cause I love her back but because I cared for her feelings and I never liked seeing her hurt, she used to be so sweet... why is it the people close to us that hurt us the most? Is it because we let them too close to our hearts that they feel like they can toy with it however they want? How can one betray another's trust just for the good of themselves?

I hold her tummy, I must say, my baby boy is quite the fighter after everything this crazy witch has put him through, yet he's still breathing and moving, only a few more weeks and you can be free from that hell hole, why couldn't you choose Lisa's womb, you'd be way happier and healthier in there and I wouldn't be in this messy situation.

After an hour Sandile came back with two white guys who looked like nerds,I showed them around to where I want the cameras,at every single corner even in the toilets,kitchen bedrooms pool area,everywhere.

Me:"thank you gentlemen "

Guy 1:"just doing our job"

Me:"yeah,well,you did well"

Sandile:"I'll show them out"

Me:"drive safely"

They all walk out,I get up on my feet and lock all doors, I push my wheelchair to my office behide my desk then sit on it, I open my laptop, and check everything, looks like Sydney couldn't do anything cause my pin is quite complicated,Lisa is the only person who knows the pin of everything I own even my phone cause I had nothing to hide,but I forgot to change it when I was chatting with Enhle,I didn't think she'd go

into my Facebook. Its been a while since I've talked Enhle,I hope she hasn't lost interest, I doubt though,that girl is obsessed with me,which might be a problem,I just found out obsessed girls are supper cruel and dangerous, example,Sydney, so are obsessed men,example, Mncesesi...Bub and I should tone down our cuteness, its getting us involved with psychopaths.

I go into my FB then go greet her

Me:hey there beautiful

She answers after five minutes

Enhle: Quinton,my main

I sigh, thank goodness she's still interested

Me:my sweetheart, how I've missed you how are you

She answers immediately

Enhle:I'm fine..but I hate you right now

Me:I'm so sorry for being scarce babe,things have been really hectic...but all I've been thinking about is you

Enhle: aaaww that's so sweet,I love you again.

Me:Lol ..I feel the same,have you been good though? How's life?

Enhle: I've been good,just really stressed out about mom and dad.

Me:why? Something bad happened? I don't like it when you stressed my baby.

Enhle: they just fighting a lot dad is always coming back home late, dad says he's working on something really important that could get us richer than we already are but mom doesn't buy it,she thinks dad is cheating... I just can't take it anymore they always shouting and arguing even in front of us.

Okay this is good she's pouring he heart out at me

Me:whoah babe, that's hectic, did your father try to explain to your mom,what it is exactly he is working on?...I mean maybe if he explains she'll be able to let her guard down a little?.

Enhle: he does explain but not fully,just says he's working on something but he has to keep it low profile so that it succeeds.

Me:oh are you also as curious as your mom on what your dad might be working on?.

I hope its not too obvious I'm fishing here

Enhle:I am curious but dad is too secretive.

Me:yeah that is a problem....maybe I could help you?

Enhle:you know what,I'm tired of dad and his secretes they are the reason him and mom might get a divorce and that would tear us apart,I can't let them put us especially my sisters..so yeah,please help me out babe.

Clever girl,now I have her right where I want her
,this will be way easier than I thought.

Me:okay babe,all you have to do is keep a close
eye on him

Enhle: you mean spy on him?

Me:its the only way ,we should meet tomorrow,
I'll give you something that'll help you...that's if
you okay with this,cause you know I'm just
trying to find the best way to help you babe.

Enhle: you just tell me the time and place and I'll
be there...besides,I miss you so much,I can't
wait to see you..and hold you .

Me:I miss you too babe,can't wait to feel you

Enhle: you know what I miss the most?

Me:do tell

Enhle: your very hard working delicious big D



Me:mmh girl,you so naughty...look babe I'd love to chat the whole night,but I have to go

Enhle: aaww okay

Me:don't be like that, we'll talk more tomorrow when I see you

Enhle: tomorrow!?! Yeyi! Can't wait.

Oh God help this child,she's so shallow, beauty with no brains

Me:yeah me too...goodnight

Enhle: love you Quinton

Me:me too babe.

I log off right after...I sigh,well this is a good turn, I hope Mr Johnson is not planning on anything involving Lisa and the diamonds cause this time I swear I'll kill him,I don't care whether Lisa forgives me or not as long as I'll be protecting her...I really wanted to explain to her about Enhle but I thought its best I keep it from

her,I saw it best she doesn't know,I know how fragile Lisa's heart is even though she'd probably understand but I know it would hurt her cause after all Enhle is my ex and we've had a sexual relationship, I know Lisa would take more of that stuff to heart than the fact that I'm just using her. I'm not really good at this whole explaining thing and that's why I didn't stop her when she left,she was really angry and my explanation wouldn't make sense to her at that state.

I push my way out to the lounge she's still sleeping,I brush her tummy,she moves around then lazily opens her eyes

I have to keep up the act for now

Me:"hey"

She looks at me for a while

Sydney: "hi"

She tries getting up I give her my hand for

help,she sits up

Sydney: "where is she?"

Me:"she left"

She looks at me up and down

Sydney: "I see she cleaned you up?"

Me:"yeah she did"

Sydney: "sick,she touched your shit?"

I feel my blood boil in anger

Me(sighs):"yeah_it was the only way"

Sydney: "wow,I guess being from the farms
she's used to shit"

I just gave her a very hot slap...in my mind

Me:...

Sydney: "I'm glad she cleaned you up,you look
hot again"

Fuck you!

She pulls my wheelchair closer to her I'm right in front of her

She rubs my cheeks

Sydney: "I didn't realise how much more handsome the beard makes you....i guess at that time it made you look like a begger"

She laughs

Sydney: "but now...its a turn on,and your outfit,oh my..I don't know if allowed to say this to a guy..but you look beautiful"

She smiles looking into my eyes I smile back

Sydney: "I'm so hungry...what would you like to order?"

Me:"uhm you can order,I'll have some of the food Lisa cooked before she left"

She looks at me amused

Sydney: "she even cooked? Wow,thank God, I'm tired of fasts foods"

Me:"why don't you just cook ?"

Sydney: "I'm pregnant Ambrose... How do you expect me to cook?"

Me:"sorry that was insensitive of me"

Sydney: "yeah it was...now let me go dish up for myself"

Me:"could you dish up for me too?"

Sydney: "argh no man Ambro...I'm tired of doing everything for you,when will you learn to walk,you've been going for therapy but still..no improvement"

Me:"I'm trying okay! I'm trying, its not easy"

Sydney: "well try harder..maybe if you starve, it'll push you to work harder"

Me:"please Sydney, please babe"

I followed her to the kitchen pushing myself

She looks at me

Sydney: "babe? Did you just call me babe?"

Me:"yeah,...I know things haven't been going well between us,and its my fault,I always expect you to do things for me even though you also need help yourself.. It was really selfish of me...I'm sorry"

I bow my head down

I feel her getting closer to me

Sydney:"I forgive you Ambrose.. I'm sorry I've been so mean to you,I love you and that's not what you do to someone you love,please forgive me?"

Me:"I forgive you"

This bitch only loves me when I'm clean and good looking

Sydney: "let me dish up for us,you must be so hungry.. My poor baby"

She dishes up for the both of us we eat in the

lounge, she let's me eat whole on the wheelchair cause she's too tired to help me sit on the couch

Sydney: "that was a very delicious meal of pasta and mince I've ever tasted...she's good"

Me:"yeah she is"

And I need her buried in my arms right now

Sydney: "I know you'll never love me like you love her..but please give me a chance and forget about her a little, you'll see,we'll be very happy with our little junior on the way"

She's really lost it..loko I tell you

Me:"you know what Sydney... You right,I should just forget about Lisa,I mean she's still to young,she doesn't know what she wants,I need a grown woman in my life,who'll take good care of me and handle our trials..I need a woman like you"

She smiles and puts her plate on the table then pulls my chair towards her

Sydney: "Yes,you finally get it,and besides,we go way back you and I... We really know each other...I love you Ambrose"

Me:"I feel the same for you "

She brings her face to mine

Sydney: "you smell so nice..like strawberries"

Me:"oh yeah?"

Yesterday I smelt like shit

Sydney: "yeah..I want you inside me"

Okay,how am I going to avoid sex..wait,this is my chance

Me:"Sydney... Baby,I'm really not in the mood tonight "

She frowns

Sydney: "oh? But I thought we were having a

moment?"

Me: "yes babe, we were, but I'm just so tired, I haven't slept peacefully in weeks because of discomfort, this will be my first night sleeping in a full stomach and clean bed and just have a peaceful sleep"

Well that is very true, I need the rest

Sydney: "Ambrose.. I'm heavily pregnant, you the one who knocked me up, and I'm sure you've heard about pregnant woman hormones, now please babe it'll just be a quickie"

She rubs my dick

Sydney: "oh my, when last did I get a good big dick, I need it"

I don't know if my dick is numb or what but its just not reacting to her touch, its soft as a cushion

She looks at me frowned

Sydney: "why is it so soft?"

I shrug

Me: "I told you I need to sleep and so does my dick "

Sydney (agitated): "she had sex with you didn't she!?"

Me(confused): "what?"

Sydney: "Lizzy? She gave you pussy didn't she,that's why you so tired?"

How I wish what she is saying is true,great,I'm imagining it now, her sexy round ass twerking and squirting on me making me loose my mind!

I should stop before I get hard then this bitch thinks its because of her

Me:"Sydney.. Let's just drop it"

She gets up looking furious.,. There it is,just what I wanted,the crazy Sydney

Sydney(shouting): "Why can't you just listen to me!! You can't even pretend to care about me!! I'm carrying your baby for you but you can't even do a little to help,like giving him the nutrients from your sperms!! Do I have to beg you for sex!!"

Me:"you know what Sydney.. I'm sick and tired of your bullshit I try to talk nicely with you but you always have to force things!! Why can't you be patient!? Its just sex!! Why do you have to act so cheap!!"

She gasps looking at me in disbelief and total shock and the room fills with silence..before I know it a hot slap across my face burning my cheek

My breath gets heavier with my teeth clenched as I feel the urge to strangle the life out of her

Me:"did_you_just_slap_me?"

She looks at me terrified but regains her

composure and looks proud of herself but unsure at the same time

Sydney: "you pushed me and I'll do it again!"

I attempt to get up but hold myself

She bursts into laughter

Sydney (laughing): "what are you trying to do? Get up? Hhahaha!....you a cripple Ambrose! You can't do anything to me!! You useless!! You not man enough!! You useless son of a bitch...you stuck with me..and if you don't start respecting me and giving me what I want when I want it...you'll be getting more of these!"

She slaps me again, I close my eyes and take in the burn, she slaps me multiple times

Sydney: "You'll learn to love and respect me today!!"

Me: "Never!!..you crazy..you threatened to kill my baby!! I'll never love you!!...Never!!"

I need to make her more angry

Sydney: "you the one who pushed me,you make me so angry!!"

Me:"You are capable of murder!! I'll never respect you!! You a rapist!!! A hoe! How could you forces yourself on a man!!..."

"SHUT UP!! JUST SHUT UP!!!"

She snaps and pushes my wheelchair causing it to fall on its back,I managed to balance with my hands but I didn't let her notice I pretended to be hurt as if I hit my head hard

Sydney: "you so evil...I love you so much but you just keep breaking my heart!!!"

She kicks me multiple times on the ribs, I groan in pain,she drags my body to the kitchen and leaves me on the floor as she goes towards the draw and pulls out a.... gun!!!!??..where did she get that!?

Me:"Sydney.... Baby...calm down....where did you...

where did you get that?"

She laughs an evil laugh

Sydney: "I was going to kill you first then me,but I won't kill you,you already dead without your legs,you'll be more dead when I let you live with the trauma of your baby and his mother dying in front of you!"

I try to slide myself to her

Me:"don't do this.... Please OK okay..I love you. I respect you...

*Bhaahh!"

I close my eyes...as silence fills the room after the gun shot,I pray she didn't kill herself ,I'm afraid to open my eyes, I open one eye,and the gun is right on my face

Sydney: "next time I won't miss"

Okay, this is enough evidence that she's crazy

I grab the gun from her and stand up on my feet

She looks petrified as her mouth is wide open, in total shock, I point the gun at her

Me: "you know what...if you want to die so bad, maybe I should just finally give you what you so desperately wanted!?"

She shakes her head continuously

Sydney (stuttering): "I I. ...when did you? How did you?..you you standing ...you..your legs..they..they..."

Me: "shut up!!!"

She folds her mouth shut

I direct her with the gun

Me: "that way"

I make her lead the way to the security back room, I open

Sandile:"hawu...boss..what's... "

He trails off as he sees me on my legs

Me:"I'll explain later"

He shakes his head

Sandile:"nah...I'm just happy you back boss"

Sandile also works for me in the family businesses, that's why he has connections

I push Sydney inside

Me:"keep an eye on her at all times,make sure she doesn't try anything stupid like try to kill my baby...make sure she eats,don't let her go hungry anything she wants to eat,but not too much junk all the time...take good care of her,and don't let her leave this gate,she's allowed to takes walks around the yard,but she's not allowed inside my house"

He nods

Sandile: "got it boss...she's in good hands"

Me:"I know"

I wink at him and turn to walk away..but I turn to look at him

Me:"and one more thing Sandile "

He looks at me listening attentively

Sandile: "yes boss?"

Me:"don't you dare fuck her...no matter how horny she gets"

He laughs

Sandile: "I'll try not to"

Me:"I'm serious Sandile.... That's my baby in there,I don't want him seeing other men's dicks"

He laughs louder

Sandile: "but boss,he could learn a thing or two"

I laugh

Me:"No! Leave that to me...once he's out of there though and old enough of cause "

We laugh before I walk away

Me:"goodnight Sandile"

I say as I walk away

"(Laughing) goodnight groetman"

I lock the sliding door and sigh shaking my head
and laughing

Me:"that was some crazy shit...now I have
enough evidence to put that bitch behind bars
or a psychopathic home for life..and as soon as
that baby is born I'll have full custody of him"

Now,one bitch down,one more to go

LISA

THE NEXT DAY

Trrriiiiiiii !! Trrriiii !!!!!

I lazily move my hands around looking for my phone under the pillow

Trrriiiiiiii !! Trrriiiii !!

I finally find it I open one eye and switch off the alarm well I put it on snooze,damn,so much noise! I should change it to a calmer tone,even though that will make me want to sleep even more

I close my eyes

Trrriiiiiiii !! Trrriiii !!!!!

Me(sleepy):"mmh just five more minutes "

I snooze it again and sleep

Trrii !!

I quickly just switch it off and go back to sleep..aahh finally!

...

"Starships were meant to flyyyy hands up and touch the skyyy!! Let's do one last tiimmee!!!."

Argh can't a girl get a break I answer it aggressively

Me:"WHAT!!???"

"YOH...geez someone woke up at the wrong side of the bed?"

Me:"Thelma, I'm really busy right now"

"Yeah,your voice says it all...did you see the time!! Open the door please!"

I sluggishly sit up

Me:"unesicefe yaz"(you so irritating you know)

"You'll thank me once you see the time"

I look at my phone and its past eight

Me:"its half past eight..so?"

"You know schools open today right?"

My heart beats on sky high..I totally forgot

Me:"What!! Why didn't you tell me!! Why didn't anyone wake me up!!"

"Uhmhhh that's cause you stay alone?"

Me:"mxm!"

I drop the call and run to go open the door for her then run to the bathroom, I just wash my face and brush my teeth...this always happens to me on first days!! Even when I stayed with Quinton! I run to the room and throw all my clothes out of my suitcase looking for something I can wear without ironing it, I settle for sweatpants and vest! I tie my messy hair into a lazy ponytail, I look like some tomboy snob ,I put red lipstick just to add a little life on

my dull face

"Hurry up Lisa!!"

Me:"I'm coming!"

I put on my running takkies

After I'm done I grab my bag and march to the door

Me:"let's go"

Thelma:"finally "

We get in her car and she speeds off

Thelma: "can't believe you made me late on my first day"

Me:"I totally forgot schools open today! "

Thelma: "but dude last night over the phone its all we were talking about,and how excited I am that at least I have you to guide me around"

Me: "yeah yeah...my sleep hot the better out of me..its just last night was the first time in two

months I got a peaceful sleep"

Thelma: "someone didn't enjoy her holidays"

Me:"you don't know the half of it"

We arrive at campus,nothing was done in classes as usual just the introductions, I still don't get why I even bother coming first days

I'm walking with Thelma, I just came out from my third class and I'm just showing her around

Thelma: "wow,this campus is big"

Me:"not really..its because its your first day..
Don't be fooled"

She laughs

My eyes lock with hers as she comes towards us

Me(mummery): "oh god she dares come towards me I'll kill her, I swear!"

Thelma: "what!? What you talking about!?"

She looks at the direction I'm looking at

"Hey Lisa"

She stands in front of me, I try to carry on with my way, ignoring her but she holds my arm

Me: "don't touch me"

Yonela: "come on Lisa.... Can you just hear me out.. I have a good reason"

Me: "reason or excuse?"

Yonela: "my brother is in a coma"

I gasp I feel my heart ache

Me: "Noo!?!.."

Yonela: "Yeah.. it hasn't been easy for the past three months I've been depressed.. I'm sorry I didn't contact you"

I shake my head

Me: "I understand.. You don't have to apologise... I just wish I had known to be there"

for you"

Yonela: "you had your own problems with Quinton and stuff,I didn't want to add more"

I pull her into my embrace

Me:"I love you so much, you can never be too much for me,no matter how depressed you are,..next time please as long as I'm still alive,don't keep things like this away from me okay?"

She nods on my shoulder we pull out and wipe each others tears

Yonela: "you still a cry baby"

Me:"bitch please..you are crying too"

We laugh, she looks next to me

Me:"oh..Yonela, this is Thelma my new neighbour and friend, Thelma,this is Yonela my old friend"

She laughs

Yonela: "old?"

Me:"you know as in older like she's been my friend longer like old friend...argh you know what I mean"

They laugh at me

Yonela:"we understand...you crazy always have always will be"

Me:"shut up..!"

Thelma: "I like you already Yonela"

Yonela: "wish I could say the same"

silence

We look at her in disbelief, I give her the "eye" the "WTF eye"

She takes out her phone and presses it..is she for real? I hear a camera sound

She bursts into laughter

Yonela: "this is for y'all to see your priceless

faces!!"

She shows us the picture she just took

We all laugh together

Me:"delete that!"

I try grab it from her but she's too tall

Yonela: "never!!"

Thelma(laughing): "wow y'all both crazy!...we'll get along just well"

Yonela: "Now I like you too thelms"

Me:"wow,you just knew her for what? Two seconds and you already have a nickname? "

Yonela (smirks): "jealous much?"

Me: "mxm! Whatever!"

They laugh at me as I walk in front

....

Classes are now all over

Thelma:"guys I just don't feel like going home right away"

Me:"me two"

Yonela: "me three"

Thelma: "why don't we go out?"

Me:"out?...Eish, in the middle of February? "

Yonela:"yeah we broke"

I nudge her,she doesn't have to put it out there...middle of February was already enough message! This girl Mara..embarrassing me in front of a rich kid..Lol as if we care

Thelma: "its on me,let's go to sandton mall"

Yonela:"won't say no to free dinner"

I nudge her again

Me:"what she means is....we'd love to ,..if it won't be much..."

Thelma:"come on Lisa...I'm not that kind of rich

girl...you should know that by now..you don't have to be formal with me"

Me:"I know that....was just fixing this girl's manners"

Thelma:" let's go ladies"

Yonela:"oh yeah!"

We get in her car and she speeds off as usual

We get to the mall and do some window shopping making a whole lotta noise,yonela and I are usually very loud together,with Thelma in the pack,we extra loud,andwe drawing attention to ourselves,I don't know how many times have guys stopped me to "talk" to me..nxa! I don't have time for jerks!..and what do they see anyway, I didn't even take a bath today..lol..seis!!..

Yonela:"Lisa I don't believe you! That guy was so cute!!"

Thelma: "yeah...and so damn neat AF!"

Yonela:"if only he stopped me"

Thelma:"we'd be organizing our third date by now"

I burst into laughter

Me:"too fast...down girl!"

Thelma: "let's go to that new restaurant that just opened"

Yonela: "you mean the one that only people who dress like secret agents and beauty slay queens go to?"

We laugh at her reaction, these two are life!

Thelma: "exactly that one"

Me:"let's go..who knows,with the amount of guys who have been checking us out,we might just eat for free!"

Yonela: "I love how you think friend"

We laugh and make our way there,we find a nice booth right at the back..yep that was my idea..far corner ends..plus it will be fun Making up rich peoples life as they come in, I wish Quinton was here,he was the best when it came to our weird game..argh I should really stop thinking about him!!

Me:"okay that one is definitely her Blesser...no way they are a real couple"

Yonela: "he looks old enough to be her father"

Thelma: "Grandfather even! Look at all that greyness on his face!"

We burst into laughter

Me:"geez the ugurl must be desperate....he's not even cute!"

We laugh,I should stop this game,if I have to build a strong relationship with God, who knows maybe that girl has no choice but to be with that old man

Yonela: "what about her..look at that dress,she definitely came for free dinner!"

I chuckle a little

Thelma: "what's wrong Lisa?.. Come on you the best at this"

Me:"naahh I don't feel like playing anymore "

Yonela: "oh come on,our order will take a while"

Thelma: "yoohhh guys...that couple!!! Come on Lisa! I know you will have something good to say about them!!!"

She's looking behind me

Me:"something good? I have to see this?"

I turn....my blood drop and my heart sinks

Yonela: "uhm...Lisa... Don't mind him"

I turn back to them

Thelma: "what's wrong? You look like you've just seen a ghost?"

I swallow my lump

Me:"let's go"

Thelma: "but we just...."

Me:" let's just go please"

Yonela: "we should listen to her...let's go"

Thelma: "but what about our order"

Me:"please"

I get up and walk fast squeezing between people's tables,I need to get out of her as soon as possible before I faint

I trip and fall,all eyes on me..great couldn't I fall outside the restaurant, I get up and look at them,his eyes are glued on me shocked to see me, we looks at each other for a while, I feel tears threatening... Enhle waves at me,that's when I March out running

"Lisa! Wait!"

I ignore him and run out till I'm outside the mall, I stop and hold on my knees as I try to catch my breath a few minutes later Thelma and Yonela are huffing next to me

Yonela: "let's go...we'll sleep over at your place Lisa"

I nod and we drive away

Why does it hurt so much!? He's free to move on...you didn't expect him to hold on to you now did you Lisa?... No I didn't! But I didn't expect him to do it so quickly.. Holding hands laughing..he looked so happy? So they really are back together, the sad part is that they got back while I was still in the picture... So I really am done? I never believed myself when I said it...but now,now I think I do...since he's clearly done,did he even love me? Ever?..I'm shattered, I don't know what to think,what to believe? What to do?..I'm stuck

Yonela: "we'll need a whole lotta ice cream"

Thelma: "why?"

Yonela (sighs): "I'll explain later...for now,let's try cheer her up"

Thelma: "I'll buy extra junk and I have the best latest rom coms"

Yonela: "good...you down with that Lisa?"

I look at them and force a smile

Me: "Yeah..thanks you guys"

Thelma: "we love you too"

[07/30, 13:18] Ron: Insert 54

LISA

I love these two girls here,they didn't even give me a chance to over think things... We just laughed and matched ourselves with that actors in the movies we watched.,we now getting ready for school. We woke up early and freshened up,I had to bath with yonela in the bath tub to not waste too much water while Thelma took a bath on her own before us..yoh she's an early bird..I throught she'd go get ready at her place but she got ready with us..they fetched their clothes yesterday before we came

here.

The sun is blazing hot, so I wear my denim jean shorts, they really short but not bumshort kind, I wear my white shirt,its see through, so I wear a white bra underneath and my white sandals,this time I combed my hair nicely,I tied it up into a pony, its grown to be very long,I leave the loose ends in the sides to hang since I can't tie them they short,I comb my baby hair neatly,put my eye liner and mascara, then put my maroon matt lipstick... I feel brand new,I'm done crying over people who have moved on...its time I also move on.

I grab my bag and head to my empty lounge

Me:"let's go girls! "

Yonela:"Finally! "

Thelma:"thought we'd never leave!"

They complain as we make our way out

Me:"boo hoo.. Put a sock on it!"

We drive to campus playing music on sky high till we reached campus and went our separate ways..great I start my day with humanities! I hate that class with passion, actually its the lecture that I hate! He's so not passionate about his job and he's making the class boring for the rest of us. But this year,I'm pulling up my socks,I need to go back to my A+ game I'm sick and tired of Bs that's so not me,and with no man in my life ,everything will go just right!.

We are now waiting for our last class for the day and just walking around campus

Thelma:"no one told me varsity guys are soooooo hot!"

Yonela(rolls her eyes):"typical freshmens"

I laugh

Me:"oh please we were also like this during our first year"

Thelma: "there's this guy in one of my classes
oh God he looks like some Asian guy...he's not
from South Africa I swear! He's supper hot!"

Me: "did you talk to him? Let him notice you?"

Thelma: "I tried answering lots of questions...
But dololo attention"

We laugh at her

Yonela: "you sure you answered the questions
correctly?"

Me: "she has a point you sure you didn't
embarrass yourself?"

Thelma: "truth be told half of my answers were
wrong and so irrelevant to the questions asked"

We burst into laughter

Me: "don't worry girl, I'm sure he noticed you..."

Yonela: "your stupidity that is!"

We laugh again

Thelma (laughing): "Eish Mara,he can't blame a girl for trying!"

Me: "true that..a girl's gotta do what a girl's gotta do"

Yonela:"the day Thelma gets that guy,will be the day I'll ask a guy out for myself"

Thelma:"I have an idea"

Me:"oh boi! Disaster yodwa"

Thelma: "if I get that guys number,I dare you all to also get a cute guys number"

We remain quiet looking at each other before yonela and I burst into laughter

Yonela: "Deal!"

Me:"Deal!....cause that'll never happen,after the way you embarrassed yourself"

Thelma: "we'll see about that,I'll get it before the end of today"

Yonela: "I can't wait to see this!"

We laugh and talk about other random things
until our next class

....

Me:"so you did it? Did you do it!? Where is it!
Huh!? Huh!? Huh!?"

I'm so excited I don't know why

Yonela: "mxm...she didn't do it...she doesn't
have the guts!...I saw the guy she's talking
about, he's too hot to talk to"

Thelma keeps quiet

I clap my hands

Me:"come on come on...did you!? Didn't you!?"

Thelma: "I..I just couldn't..."

Yonela:" haaaa I knew it"

Thelma: "couldn't let an opportunity slip me
by!!!!"

She flashes a piece of paper on our faces

We all scream jumping up and down.. I grab the paper from her, and it's real numbers

Me: "oh OMGeeeeeeee...can't believe you actually did it!!"

Yonela: "aaahhhh I can't believe this!!"

Thelma: "in your face bitcheeeeees!!! Who said I couldn't do iiittttt!!"

We laugh and calm down

Me: "okay okay... Wait. For all we know this could be your handwriting and you just wrote a number down, how do we know it's really his?"

Yonela: "there he is!"

She points at the guy.

Me: "daaaaaaammmn!!!....the niggar is hot...like pelepele"

Thelma: "off limits Lisakhanya!!"

I laugh sticking my tongue at her

Me:"never said we not allowed to get the same guys number? "

She gives me a dead look

I stick my tongue out again

Me:"chill girl...already have insecurities,y'all not even dating "

Thelma (smiles proudly): "YET!"

Me:"confident much?"

Yonela: "I know...why don't we call this number while we looking at him and see if he picks up"

Me:"good idea...you better pray you telling us the truth,cause you about to get bastuuuuurrrrd!"

We laugh and look at each other

Me:"don't look at me,I don't have airtime "

Yonela: "well he is your guy Thelma so you call him"

She laughs at us and takes out her phone and calls him..we watch him carefully as he feels his pockets then takes out his phone

Me:"oh my gosh is it a coincidence or his phone is actually ringing while we calling?"

Yonela looks at me as if I'm crazy

Yonela:"you so dumb "

Me:"shut up!"

Thelma: "hey hello"

We see him talking to the phone

Thelma: "I'm good.. So this is my number,just wanted to let you know"

We see him laughing...damn his cute and the phone is on loud speaker so we can hear his

deep cute voice

Thelma: "okay then...later it is..I'll hold you to that"

He chuckles and drops the call

We look at her and scream out loud

Me: "I can't believe you actually did it... You HOOOEEEE!!!"

Yonela: "BITCH!!!"

Thelma: "who the baddest? Bow down bitches!!"

We bow at her

Me:"you got guts shame, guts with liver I tell you"

Yonela: "ayi salute man!"

We laugh and head to the car as we drive home

Thelma: "now...y'all next by end of tomorrow you should have a cute guys number"

Me:"yoh all these guys are so lame...there's no

cute guys anymore "

Yonela: "I already have many cute guys on my contact list"

Thelma: "nope...it should be a total stranger..come on guys we had a deal"

She makes a sad face

Me:"aaarrgh fine!...tomorrow it is...I'm getting the cutest guy than all y'all losers "

Yonela: "we'll see about that"

We laugh and have other random conversations

They drop me off

I'm now all alone in this lonely miserable house, I go to the room and throw myself on the bed

I take my phone and play with my phone.. I think about my girls and find myself laughing, I love those two..I come across Bella's contact on my WhatsApp chats, I haven't talked to her in a while...as if she can sense I miss her she

calls...wow, she never ceases to amaze me

Me:"hey bells"

Bella:"hey liss "

Me:"how did you know I'm missing you?"

Bella:"cause I missed you too"

Me:"aawww you so sweet"

Bella: "not as sweet as Quinton though"

My mood drops and my smile disappears

Me: "Bella...you just had to bring him up"

Bella: "I know things are not going well for y'all now,I'm sorry, but Lisa in all he does,his heart is in a good place"

Me:"I don't care Bella..Quinton doesn't want to involve me in anything, he always shuts me out and ends up hurting me even more"

Bella(sighs):"this time he really took it far...even

though he's in a good place but this is your heart after all, and he's hurting you....I completely understand if you never take him back, but it's a good thing you forgive him so easily.. I know your gift will be doing wonders pretty soon"

Me: "yeah...I'm done with Quinton Bella... Its time I learn to live without him"

Bella: "I understand, I hope that works out for you, cause you really don't belong anywhere else but with that man, Once God has chosen the one for you, it cannot be reversed.. But Lisa, live your life girl, its all up to Quinton now, you have done your fight... Its time for him to fight"

Me: "you know Bella... For the first time, I agree with you..I'm moving on with my life"

Bella: "you do that...just be careful, there's danger coming your way"

Me: "seriously Bella, do you ever have good

news for me? Its always bad bad bad...mxm"

Bella: "its not like I'm making it up Lisa"

Me(sighs):"I know I know...I'll be careful "

Bella:"keep your diamonds close to you"

Me:"I will"

Bella: "I love you Lisa"

Me:"I love you too Bella"

Bella: "now you don't have to go looking for that cute guys numbers,cause you about to get a call right now"

Me (shocked):"how did you know about that!?"

Bella:...

Me:"hello!?...hello?"

Argh she dropped..a phone call comes thereafter

Its a number that's not saved

Me:"yah"

"Hey.. Is this Lisa?"

Me:"who wants to know?"

"Tsepo wants to know"

I sit up on my butt as my heart beat accelerates

Me:"tsepo...tsepo.."

"The guy from the party,who you saved his life?"

Me:"oohhhh that Tsepo..."

I'm so bad

"Yeah that tsepo"

Me:"okay..hi tsepo"

"Hi Lisa"

Me: "what makes you call so late?"

"I can't stop thinking about you...the way you saved my life..how beautiful you are..how bad I want to see you again"

A smile creep in as I bite my bottom lip

Me:"that's a lot of thinking "

He chuckles

"You wouldn't believe the things I had to do to get your number"

Me:"I'm guessing it involves stealing someone's phone?"

He laughs

"You too smart...Lisa, I'm so thankful to you,I mean I should be dead"

Me:"yeah you should... Very dead,six feet under"

"Damn girl! Do you have to be so specific?"

I laugh

Me:"my bad"

"Well next time I'm about to die,you the first person I'll call"

I laugh

Me:"don't joke about death wena,I'd hate it if it came true "

"Aaww you saying you'd be miserable without me?"

I laugh

Me:"haa you wish shame!"

"You know Lisa... I'm around your neighborhood,do you mind if I see you?"

Me:"you what!? Where are you?"

"I'm outside Thelma's house,I believe you stay next door?"

Me:"yeah I do"

"Please come out..I really need to see you"

Me:"why do you need to see me so bad?"

"I want to thank you properly... I know you haven't cooked yet its still early..I want to take you out for supper,just to thank you..you know

saving someone's life is a big deal"

I smile and bite my bottom lip as I think carefully

Me:"I'll be right out"

"Yes! I'll be waiting"

I drop the call and get up,I look at myself in the dressing table mirror... I really don't feel like changing, and besides its hot,this outfit is fine,I don't owe him any swag

I renew my lipstick and mascara, then puff my finishing Cologne, I've had this since last year..I don't know why I'm putting effort for this guy,actually its not for him..we are going to eat out so I'm doing itfor the public.

I grab my bag and walk out locking the door behind me

I look around as I'm now out the gate,he's at the other next door of Thelma's big house, I feel

embarrassed, the house he's parked in front of is a big mansion, my house is the only odd one out in this street

I wave my hand, he flashes his lights then slowly drives towards me...yyuuuhhh the car!! The car!! The latest Jaguar F-type sports car a red one..my favourite colour when it comes to cars, he parks right in front of me...oh my Gosh! I feel so important right now!! Ahhhh!! If yonela and Thelma were here we'd be screaming out lungs out!!!! Damn!!

I'm afraid to even touch it,he gets out and comes towards me,in slow motion.. Fuck!! He's clothes!!! Nooo!! Looking this good should be illegal!! Why is he still in school again!? He's wearing Versace from head to toe..shorts showing his fine hairy legs,a simple shirt that hugs his body and a sports jacket,he has those really nice playboy fade haircuts.

Tsepo:"good evening Miss "

He stretches his hand for a handshake??

I stretch my hand too,he pulls my hand pulling me into his arms and hugs me..I laugh

Me:"didn't know you were the hugging type"

I say as I inhale his Cologne on his neck,oh man..he smells so manly

Tsepo:"I'm a hugger so this might take a while"

He has his arms wrapped round my waist while my arms are around his neck..This hug is way too long for my liking

Me:"how long is a while exactly? "

Tsepo: "a few more minutes"

Me:ookaay"

We stay in the hugging position for a while..his smell..I'm gonna loose my senses if he don't let me go! Its been a while since I've been this close to a guy...Quinton is the....great! He's in my mind again.. I pull out of the hug

Me:"you suffocating me dude"

He laughs holding his chest

Tsepo:"ouch...I was enjoying your Cologne, you smell really good"

Me:"I know"

He looks at me amused

Me:"will you open the door or should I do it myself?"

He laughs louder

Tsepo: "Yes mam! My bad"

He opens the door

Tsepo: "please...get in"

I wink at him and make my way inside

He drives us to,I don't know where but we in a very fancy restaurant, I don't like it when guys flash their money to impress a girl,I mean there's so many things you could do to impress

a girl,not all of us are after the money,but I must say Tsepo is really fun company, he's funny in his own weird way ,his sarcasm is on another level,I have to think about what he just said before I get it and laugh my guts out

Tsepo: "you so slow"

Me:"dude your jokes are complicated "

He laughs then stop..he doesn't laugh for long just four ha's and that's it like ha ha ha ha then he's done laughing

Me:"you should learn to laugh more"

Tsepo: "are you kidding me..this is the hardest I've laughed in my life"

I look at him in disbelief

Tsepo: "I'm kidding, I'm not that weird"

I burst into laughter, this guy though

I'm so loud..all these rich people in here keep glancing at me as though I'm crazy

Our food came,I ordered something I don't even know cause I didn't know anything in that menu
I look at it disgusted

Tsepo: "something wrong with your food?"

I look at him and smile then shake my head

Me:"no...no everything is perrfect"

Tsepo:"you don't know what's on your plate do you?"

I laugh and shake my head

Me:"nope..no idea at all"

He laugh

Tsepo:"me neither "

We burst into laughter

Me:"you lying you used to these things"

Tsepo:"actually I'm not...I like the simple things that I know how to pronouns"

Me:"what a shocker...why did you even bring me here..nothing here costs less than five hundred Rand..which is absolutely absurd!"

Tsepo: "let's go somewhere else?"

Me:"you crazy? We have to finish this food,we can't waste two thousand Rand food...that's my two months groceries "

He laughs

Tsepo: "its my money and I say let's go!"

He takes out his walet and leaves the money on the table then pulls me out,I can't atop looking back at that money in the table

Me:"are you sure they going to see it? What if someone takes it before the waiter? Do people do this in real life?"

Tsepo: "chill,there's cameras everywhere,they'll know"

I sigh ,he takes me to Nandos ..my favourite, I

love their meat, we eat, I'm surprised he eats with his hands, not of that fork and knife stuff

He's really too down to earth and cool for a rich kid...when we were done he took me home, the attention I was getting from girls while walking with him is almost as much as the attention I get when I'm with Quinton.. Well he's worse, I swear a girl would walk up to him and flirt with him completely ignoring my presence!? Like what the hell? That's one of the things I hate with being with a very handsome guy..its like you walking with a piece of meat through a bunch of hungry lionesses.

Tsepo: "aah man..this is the end of our night already"

We parked across my house

Me:"sadly, yes...thanks for the amazing night"

Tsepo: "I still owe you..I owe you my life"

Me:"you don't owe me Tsepo"

Tsepo: "does anyone else know about your wonderful gift?"

Me:"No...just a few close family members and friends"

Tsepo: "you don't mind if I spread the word?"

I think carefully

Me:"please don't....I haven't fully figured it out yet,so I wouldn't wanna give people false hope"

Tsepo: "are you kidding me..Lisa,I was dead..but you bought me back to life"

Me(chuckles):"come on tsepo,you weren't dead yet"

Tsepo: "but still Lisa... You completely healed me..it was so magical,I couldn't believe it...you should've seen your green eyes,oh my gosh,you looked like an angel"

Me:"really?"

Tsepo: "I've never seen such beauty in my

life..you gifted Lisa and people should know about you"

Me:"please don't tell people...only if someone really close to you needs help you can tell me but please don't spread the word..I'm not ready for the world to know"

Tsepo: "I completely understand"

I smile at him,he's looking at me with that serious cute face of his

Tsepo: "are you human?"

My eyes widen shocked by his question,I touch myself all over my face

Me:"I I like to believe I am?"

He chuckles

Tsepo: "its just.. You too beautiful.. Its unrealistic"

I look down as I feel my cheeks heat up

Me:"thanks"

He opens his door and walks around to me then opens the door for me I get off ...

Tsepo:"I had a great night with you"

He closes the door and leans against it I stand in front of him

Me:"me too..thanks. Once again "

Tsepo: "we should do this more often"

I shy away looking down

Me:"I don't know about that"

Tsepo: "come on..please"

Me:"ahh Tsepo...

Tsepo: "please.."

I look at him and he's looking at me with his very brown almost gold eyes

Me:"uhm Tsepo if its a relationship you looking for. ..I can't, I just got out of. . . .

Tsepo: "Lisa.,.can we just hang out..without labeling anything, we'll just hang out and we'll see where it takes us....I don't know what I'm looking for in you..but I know I have to spend more time with you"

I nod

Me:"okay...fine,I guess we could.....hang out"

Tsepo: "awesome...goodnight"

Me:"night"

We share a hug,I pull out but he's still holding me he kisses my cheek

Then gets into his car and drives away... I sigh then turn and head towards the house whistling a song,I unlock the door and get inside as I turn to close the door someone,blocks it with his foot, I startle as I look up to see who it is

Me:"Quinton! "

He pushes the door and comes in,he smells like

booze

I close the door and lock it

Me:"when did you get here? I didn't see your.....

Next thing I know his tongue is shoved in my mouth kissing me hungrily as he picks me up to wrap my legs around him while pinning me against the door,I don't know why the hell am I kissing him back!! He squeezes my butt cheeks roughly his one hand finds its way to my punani rubbing it,I was long wet!! Stop him Lisa!!! Stop Him!! He massages my boobs..oh my gosh I missed his lips....what? No! I push him away hard he sucks my lips for dear life its hard to pull out,I hit his chest he pulls out and we look into each others eyes filled with fire,passion and desire

I breath in and out loudly

Me:"let go of me"

Quinton: "No"

He pins me harder making me feel his hard crotch I try to move but I'm only making things worse for my throbbing punani as its grinding on his hard I can't help but moan, I feel like crying cause I don't want him to make me feel this way right now.,...I'm trying to get over him

Me(breaking voice):"put me down Quinton"

He looks at me for a while he sighs then puts me down

He takes a few steps away from me

Quinton: "sorry bub. I just miss you so much"

Me:"you drunk Quinton....go home, your Girlfriend must be worried"

Quinton: "girlfriend!?. .what girlfriend?... I'm so lonely baby...I need you"

He stumbles toward the lounge and sits on the one couch I have

I didn't even see his car

Me:"Quinton.. How did you get here?"

Quinton: "I took a taxi"

Me:"oh!....you should get going... What are you doing here anyway? "

Quinton: "my car broke down in town...so I took a taxi"

Me:"why didn't you go home"

Quinton:"cause where there's no you..its not home"

He throws his head back on the couch

Me:"oh no no no no Quinton don't fall asleep... You need to go,I'll call an uber for you"

Quinton: "you have a new boyfriend now?"

Me:"mxm...just go home Quinton"

Quinton: "how could you move on so fast?...don't you love me my Lisa?"

He's supper drunk, there's nothing descent I can

talk with him at this state, when Quinton is drunk you can never have a conversation that you can also be part of,he does all the talking and you shut up and listen then he talks a lot of bullshit...funny bullshit,when we in good terms though

Me:"Quinton... I'm calling an uber"

I take my phone and go to car service

He grabs my phone from me

Quinton: "I'll sleep here tonight... Its too lonely in that house Lisa"

He looks at me with puppy eyes..the ones that make my heart melt no matter how angry I am,they cute even when he's drunk! I hate him!

I sigh

Me:"you'll sleep in that couch"

Its a single small couch I don't care how he'll sleep,that's how unwelcomed guests are

treated ..

Quinton: "I'm not sleeping in that couch..haa!
Would you be able to sleep on that?"

Me:"then you sleep on the floor"

Quinton: "on this cement floor? No"

Me: "beggars can't be choosers..and I can't let a drunkard sleep on my bed"

Quinton (laughing): "yoouu know you want me
all up on that beeed"

I roll my eyes. This guy has no respect for me,how can he come here drunk knowing that I'll have to give him a place to lay his head..even though I'm still angry at him,argh I don't know how I feel about him..I just don't want to see him

Me:"Quinton.. I don't want to make Enhle mad,who knows what she's capable of, maybe she's the same as her brother for all we know"

He laughs..I forget how stupid he is specially when he's drunk

Quinton: "she can't be as bad as my baby mama..that witch is craaaaaazzeeee"

I laugh silently then stop immediately.

Me:"I'm serious Quinton, this is not right...you should stay away from me,I don't want to be part of your drama with your obsessed ex's and baby mamas"

He makes his way to my room I hold his arm,he turns to looks at me,we freeze,seriously!! This is no time for butterflies! Argh!

Me:"you not sleeping in my room"

He yanks his arm and makes his way inside my bedroom,he stumbles around as he takes off his clothes,he fell while taking off his pants,I couldn't help but laugh.. He looks up at me while still on the floor

Quinton: "you think this is funny?"

I nod laughing

He tries to get up but keeps stumbling on the floor cause his pants are not completely off so his feet are tied together making it impossible for him to get up...he's too drunk its hilarious

Quinton: "please help me up bub"

I shake my head

Me:"that's what you get for not listening to me"

Quinton: "I'm sorry..this time I'll listen to you.. I promise"

Me:"you'll go back to your house?"

He nods with his eyes closed,he can't even keep them open...he's high,definitely.

Me:"good,...cause I really don't need you here..its over between us and it will never....."

Quinton: "geez just help me get up and stop

breaking my heart already"

I walk up to him and give him my hand he pulls me to fall on top of him instead...

"Ayi Marn Quinton!!"

I should..he bursts into laughter, I maintain an angry face..yeah,I'm failing miserably..I end up laughing at his stupid high face ,I lay my head on his chest and just laugh,he wraps his arms around me and we just laugh, at sweet nothing..our laugh gets fainter,I listen to his heartbeat sleeping on top of him,I can hear the sincerity in his heartbeat beat,the care,my body is shaking as of I'm cold or nervous, he holds me tighter

Quinton: "I love you so much Lisakhanya Ambrose O'Brien"

I giggle and lift my head to look at him

Me:"you mean Mthethwa"

He laughs

Quinton: "Nope..O'Brien"

We look into each others eyes..his small red eyes,he's so high

Quinton: "my wife"

I feel my heart break,as I think more about him and Enhle,who is he fooling? Me or Enhle? He can't have us both,I can't take it

Quinton: "you have to break up with that cheese boy lanny who was all up in my business, touching you here"

He touches my ass I wiggle my butt to move his hands

Quinton: "and here"

He touches my breasts

Quinton: "his was even too close to here"

He touches my vj making me giggle

Me(giggling): "stop..stop it!!...(serious tone)..Quinton! Stop!"

I get off him cause he's not listening to me

Me:"that's it! You definitely not sleeping in my room "

He sits on his butt still on the floor and takes off his pants and shoes

He gets up and throws himself on my bed,okay I guess we not listening to Lisa,she's just farting rotten eggs!

Quinton: "come here...sleep right here"

He pats on the space next to him..I sigh

There's no use fighting him when he's like this

I can't sleep with only my panty anymore cause he's here,now I have to wear PJs its so damn hot,I wear my short PJs..I switch off all the light and close the windows and curtains after

checking the door if its locked I head to bed. I find him sleeping on his back on top of the covers,he's eyes are closed..I shake him

Me:"Quinton!.. Wake up,you sleeping on top of the covers "

Quinton:"mmh mhm "

I leave him,cause he doesn't listen to me,I get in the covers and turn my back on him

"Lisa"

He whispers my name

Me:"just sleep Quinton, so you can wake up and leave tomorrow "

Quinton: "why don't you want me back?"

Is he serious? Oh wait he's drunk he's not serious

Me:"sleep..I have school tomorrow "

silence

Quinton: "you know Lisa.....

(Hiccups)...everything I do,I do it for you"

Me:.....

Quinton: "but...but you just don't understand me...(silence)

After a while he continues

Quinton:" some things I can't tell you....(hiccups)..cause...cause it would blow..
.(sighs)..my cover"

I turn to face him,he's facing the ceiling ,he keeps falling asleep

Quinton: "you the...the only woman I love"

Me:"then why are with Enhle Quinton... I remember how much you loved her too,why would you cheat on me with her? Just the other day you were asking me to take you back...I tell you to go fix your life and you decide to fix your relationship with your Ex?"

He remains quiet for a while, is he sleeping? I shake him

Quinton: "I just need to sort out...I need to sort out.....I need to sort out..

Me(sighs):" sort out what?"

He snores..okay he's completely passed out.

I move the covers and help him get in them, I tuck him in then turn my back on him.

Sort out what!? His relationship with Enhle? Sort out Enhle? He can't even explain even when he's drunk...I want to stop loving him so much, he treats me like a child, he doesn't let me in.

He fiddles around moving closer and closer to me, he wraps his arms and legs around me, I try moving him but his too heavy, I let him be.

He continues pushing me I keep moving moving away he gets closer I move he gets closer I move and-----

Me:"aahh ouch! "

I fell off the bed . I get up and look at him,he's sleeping peacefully accommodating the whole bed..arrgh I hate the drunk Quinton!! I shake him

Me:"Quinton Quinton! Wake up! Move up Quinton! "

I push him,rolling him back to the other end of the bed

I get back and sleep on my side...He throws himself at me again

"Quinton!!"

I shout,he gets up and sits on his back looking straight forward,I look at him annoyed, he looks at me

Quinton: "bub...(hiccups)... I'm not..I'm ...

He gets off the bed holding his mouth

Quinton:" where's the...Bathroom!!? "

I get up and run with him to the bathroom, I open the toilet seat he vomits

Me:"mh mh sies mahn!!"

I rub his back,I don't even know why am I doing this

He finishes and looks at me disgusted

Me:"water?"

He nods

I get him with the glass I use to brush my teeth in the bathroom and pour him water then help him drink

Quinton: "thanks"

He leans to kiss me,I stop him

Me:"ewe...no dude...you just vomited... Sick!"

He laughs,he's still drunk

Me:"let's go to bed"

I help him up we stumble to bed

Quinton: "I love you bub"

I ignore him....oh Quinton... It will take more than those three empty words for me to ever trust or let you back in my life again

*Brrrrr....brrrrrrr.....brr..brr..brr"

Me:"oohh sick man ayi ayi Quinton! Nx uyandinyela kengoku!"(you shitting on me now)

He laughs a little then starts snoring

Me:"mhh damn uyanukisa!"(what a stink bomb)

[07/30, 13:18] Ron: Insert 55

LISA

Trrriii,...I switch it off before it can go any further...I lazily sit up with my eyes still closed as I yawn and stretch my arms....I sigh then open my eyes,I look beside me that's when I realise I'm alone..

Me(shouts):"Quinton!! "

I notice his phone,watch and wallet are not by the side table anymore and his clothes are gone.

Wow..he left, he couldn't even face me while he's sober and explain himself,mxm,I knew he was talking bullshit last night,there's nothing he has to sort out,he's just being a man whore,Nx! coward!

I get up and go freshen up getting ready for school

....

Me:"hey guys"

Yonela:"hey you"

We share a hug

I was about to hug Thelma but she stops me

Thelma:"bitch....don't you touch me"

Yonela and I look at each other

Me:"and then?"

Thelma:"don't and then me'...y'all better show me those numbers"

"Oohhhh"

Yonela and I say in unison

Yonela: "well there's this cute guy who just moved in the neighborhood... And I got his number.....Kah-Bam!"

She flashed her phone on our faces,I grabbed her phone to have a look

Me:"wow...Calvin? Mmh interesting "

Thelma:"wow yonela...is he cute though?"

She presses her phone then flashes it on our faces again

Me:"you have to stops doing that"

I grab it from her and yeah, he's super hot

Me:"guys...where do y'all get these cute men though?"

Thelma: "cute men are all over friend,its just you are so blinded by one good dick you've had..you can't even notice the other gorgeous niggars around you!"

Me:"mxm...that stupid,coward of a good for nothing dick"

Yonela: "what did he do now?"

Me:"nothing... "

Thelma: "do you wanna talk about it?"

Me: "no"

Yonela:"good!....now,that number?"

Me:"I didn't get any cute guy's number guys"

Thelma: "why am I not surprised"

Me:"but I do have a new number on my contact list....a cute guy managed to get my number instead"

Yonela: "they just throw themselves at you..unfair!"

I laugh

Me:"life is unfair Nella"

Thelma: "sooo who is he?"

Me:"Tsepo....."

Thelma: "Tsepo? As in Tshepiso Mapulana?"

Me:"yeah...your friend from the party"

Thelma: "yeah...how did he get your number?"

Me:"didn't tell me..but I think he stole it from your phone"

Yonela: "wait wait..hold up..so you know him?"

Thelma: "yeah"

Me:"remember I told you about the day I met Thelma? And that guy..I told you about "

I talk with my eyes cause I don't think I'm ready for Thelma to know about my gift yet..I only told yonela about how I saved Tsepo from the party

Yonela: "oohh I remember"

Thelma: "Tsepo...that sneaky bastard, girl, just a friendly warning... He's them romantic players..he'll love love you then break break you when you least expect it"

Yonela: "mmh I since experience?"

Thelma: Eww hell no...he's my friend..nothing more,I just know him,from his past relationships "

Me:"I'm not even sure I'm feeling him that way...I mean last night he took me out but I didn't feel anything for him"

Their mouths hang open

Thelma: "he did what!?"

Yonela: "wait so he just recently got your number and he contacted you yesterday then took you out..same day!?!..damn! He don't waste time!"

I laugh

Thelma: "let me guess..he took you to some very expensive restaurant?"

Me:"that's how he roles?"

She nods

Thelma: "yep...he'll be taking you to a lot of those"

Me:"we didn't even stay long there,didn't even eat...I made it clear to him...that places like that..don't impress me"

Thelma: "really?"

Yonela: "you go girl! Tell him!"

We high five

Thelma: "well that's a first... And how did he react to that?"

Me:"we went to spur...and had a lot of those sticky ribs and buffalo wings"

Yonela: "wow..you showed him your pig side on first date! .I give up on you!"

She puts her hands up in surrender.. I laugh

Thelma: "I'm surprised he hasn't told me about this yet,he usually tells me everything.. Specially his dates"

Me:"I'm sure hell still tell you"

Yonela: "you okay Thelma?"

Thelma: "I'm fine..I'm good"

Me:"so guys I hope we all even?"

Thelma: "yeap..looks like it"

Yonela:"although Lisa cheated... But yeah..its cool,we even"

We laugh and the day goes by fast.

Before I know it,I'm already back in my apartment, I need to get a small stand and a TV, this is pure boredom and when its this quiet,I end up over thinking... My laptop has movies I already know,I've repeated thousand times,I make a metal note to download new movies at school tomorrow using the WiFi...I get up from this small uncomfortable couch and head to my bedroom, I take out my laptop and go to my facebook... Its been a while,since last year ...a

lot has been going on,I don't get time to update my social life,even my Instagram is dry.

The first thing I do is go change my profile, it was a picture of Quinton and I making funny face in the kitchen,you can see its in the kitchen cause of the fridge behind usits a cute picture,I got more than one thousand likes for it...mxm, I look through my galary,wow so many pictures of Quinton and i...damn! I finally find a cute selfie of myself alone, one thing I love an iPhone for is for its camera,the best! But its very expensive to maintain, I hate it...I

post,afterwards I just scroll down looking at other people's posts ,liking a few,the like come in flying on my picture, I go check the comments, mxm Quinton reacted with a heart and commented

"My greeneyezilian babe♥ ♥ "

I feel like replying "fuck you!" But instead I'm blushing? Wtf! I don't understand myself

sometimes, specially when it comes to This man, I feel like my actions always betray my thoughts

I look through other comments

Enhle..."so much filter!. ...so fake "

I feel my blood boil, what does this girl want from me though? She has Quinton.. So what more does she want! My soul?

Before I know it Quinton reacted to her comment with an angry face then replied to it Quinton...."that is natural beauty at its best...you could learn a thing or two "

I don't have time for his pretense, he's probably with her in bed right now and are doing this while laughing at how they making such a fool out of me! I log out and close my laptop...I'm so hurt right now, and its all Quinton's fault,he's hurting me so much,why does he love hurting my feelings?...tears escape my eyes,I quickly

wipe them off.

You know what. I'm done crying, I'm sick and tired of crying for someone who doesn't even cry for me as much. He wants to have fun exploring other pussy...its fine, what's stopping me? I'm single.. And you know what..I'm ready to mingle!

I find myself smiling... A call comes through disturbing my thoughts

Me:"hello "

"Hey Lisa"

Me:"Tsepo..hey"

"How are you"

Me:"I'm good thanks and yourself? "

"I'm good too..are you busy?"

Me:"uhm... Yeah, kind of, why?"

"Oh ...I thought maybe we could hang out"

Me:"eerrhm...not today,sorry"

"I understand... Let me know when you free?"

Me:"I will"

"Okay..bye"

Me:"bye"

I drop the call and sigh...I'm really not feeling Tsepo in that way,he's just,I don't know not for me I guess...he's cute and all but I feel like Thelma has a 'thing' for him and I know how that feels,specially when the guy is your best friend.

I get up and head to the front door I open it and stare at the road and the cars going pass...I should get a cute guy's number before the end of tonight,a total stranger. I lock the door and take a walk around the neighborhood, its not a quiet neighborhood,its actually really busy with varsity students roaming the streets

"Hey sexy"

Oh God, No couldn't he at least be cute? I'm in competition here, I can't lose to Thelma and Yonela

Me: "hi"

He gets closer walking beside me

"Cela ukuk'khapha?" (May I please accompany you?)

Me: "no thanks..I'm good I pick up my pace

He turns back, thank goodness

I find myself at a small park with a few swings and slides and a lot of teenagers making out...Oh my word! Kids! Get a room! Or should I say education? Like seriously!

Me: "Jo'burg is so boring, I'd be taking a walk by the beach right now..instead of watching kids in crowded parks "

"OUT OF THE WAY!! OUT OF THE WAY!!!"

I turn to see who's making so much noise,
before I know it a bicycle comes flying towards
me, I quickly get out the way but my leg doesn't
make it in time it passes right on top of my foot
making me scream in agony while on the
ground

"I'm so soooooooh no....are you okay!?!...argh
of cause you not, stupid me!!"

I keep my eyes on my painful foot, I feel tears
threatening, my tears are always close

Me: "it's fine...just go, I'm not that hurt"

"Are you kidding me? Your foot is red...please
let me see, I live nearby I have a first aid kit ..I'll
see what I can do"

I shake my head no, before I know it I'm being
picked up bridal style

Me (shouts): "Heellppp!! Somebody...this crazy
man is kidnapping me!!"

"Would you calm down"

I look at him....

Me:"hooollly loving mother of Jusus Christ"

Damn..am I dreaming? I'm having one of those fantasies again

"Excuse me?"

Me:"I mean...uhm..put me down this instant Mister!"

I try my best to sound scary but my low nervous voice is not helping a bit

"Not until I fix up that leg...I'm really sorry about the bike....."

Blah blah blah...I love you..blah blah blah

...marry me..we'll live in a big castle adopt a lot of puppies and live happily ever after...blah blah blah

"And we here, okay so imma need you to reach for my back pocket and take out the keys?"

Oh my word.. His lips! Did he just say I should reach for his lips?

Me:"huh?"

"The keys...in my back pocket"

Me:oh"

I out my hand in his back pocket.. Oh god I can feel his butt cheek, I feel like squeezing it! I'm going crazy again!

Me:"there you go"

I haven't moved my eyes from his and so has he

"Open please"

I open the door,I don't want him to ever put me down..he's so strong with his sexy arms. I should stop drooling!

He puts me on the couch,ouch! My foot really hurts

Wow this is a gorgeous house

He places my foot gently on his small coffee table

"I'll be right back"

He disappears along the passages..I quickly fix my hair,I take out my phone to check if there's nothing on my face,I start removing invisible things next to my mouth and eyes,you can never be too clean around those areas, I smell my breath against my hand,mmh not bad

I hear him talking as he comes towards me,I try to act normal....although I'm totally not as my hands are wondering everywhere not sure where to place them? Mxm come on Lisa,act cool !! Get a grip

"Okay let me see"

He opens his small white first aid box and takes out detol and some cotton he dips the cotton on the detol then gently rubs me with it

"My name is Troy, by the way"

He looks up at me

Me:"oh...I'm Lisa..... By the way"

He chuckles

Troy: "I'm really sorry about my bike,I don't know how my breaks broke"

Oh so that's what happened

Me:"its fine..as long as you didn't chop my leg off"

Troy:"I tried turning but.Guess I was too late"

Me:"don't worry about it "

Troy: "I shouldn't have been riding on the pavement in the first place"

Me:"troy! If you don't stop...I'll sue you for this "

He laughs

Troy: "sorry..."

silence

Troy: "so..you from around here?"

Me:"yeah..just one block away from here"

Troy:"oh? How come I've never seen you around?"

Me:"how do you know you haven't? A lot of people stay around here"

He looks at me for a while I shy away first

Troy:"naahh I would know if I've seen a beautiful face like yours"

My heart beat down there,skips a few beats...I guess he has woken up the Hoe in me

Me: "okay then...well I just recently moved in"

Troy: "I knew it...I wouldn't forget your face from anywhere"

I blush

Me:"okay"

He even bandaged me...? Overreaction I roll my

eyes on the inside

Troy: "all done...would you like something to drink? Juice? Cooldrink or something stronger?"

I raise my brow

Me:"stronger?"

Troy(smirks):"I meant coffee"

Me:"yeah right..of cause you did"

I wink...we crack up and laugh

Me:"its still too summer for coffee..I'll have juice thanks"

Troy: "juice coming up"

He walks to the very visible big kitchen which is red and white in colour.. Too beautiful, he's wearing gym clothes,looks like he was coming back from the gym,he has those basketball shorts and tank top exposing his muscles...where does God hide all these handsome men? How come I'm only noticing

them now? When things are not going well with my one and only handsome man.

He comes back with two glasses he sits next to me and hands me the juice

Me:"thanks"

Troy:"mhm...ohh sick..you must be disgusted"

Me:"huh?"

Troy: "I'm all sweaty and all up on your space"

He gets up

Me:"oh..no I don't mind..I mean,its no biggy"

Troy: "can yo wait here for a few,I won't be long,I'll just take a quick shower"

Really I don't mind having your sweaty strong arms all up on my body

Me:"I should get going anyway"

Troy: "no no no you can't walk on your own with that foot..please I'll be really quick"

I sigh

Me: "okay"

Troy: "good...please don't disappear, please"

Me:"I'll try not to"

He sighs disappointedly

Me:"I'm kidding... Don't worry,I'm glued to this comfy couch"

His face lits up as he turns and runs upstairs

I look around, I try to get up then walk around the lounge, this is a really nice place,this guy looks like he's already working, he must be in his late twenties

I notice framed pictures on a deck in between the area of the lounge and kitchen, he looks very happy,with a woman who looks approximately his age, great! He's married! Mxm, I knew he was too good looking to be single. I notice a picture of a child who looks

two years or three years old.

Okay,so this guy is happily married mos but he didn't frame his wedding pictures? Weird ...

"Oh good, you still here"

Me:"nice family you got here"

"Oh I see you noticed those"

I turn to look at him

Me(whispers):"whoaaa"

His too close and shirtless, he only has a towel around his waist

I turn back to look at the pictures before I lose my mind

He's standing right behind me,his hand reaches for the photo in front of me causing his body to touch mine

Troy: "that's my wife"

Me:"oh.....she's beautiful "

Troy:"she was very beautiful, I loved her with my all"

Me: "y'all divorced?"

He sighs

Troy: "she passed away"

My heart sinks..why are you so forward Lisa!!

Me:"I I'm sorry to hear that..."

Troy: "car accident"

Me:"may her soul rest in peace"

silence

Me:"what about your child? Where is he?"

He remains quiet

Me:"I'm sorry for asking too many questions..."

You don't have to...

Troy:"his mom was fetching him from his grandmother's house that night... They both were involved in the accident "

The tears finally escape my eyes as my heart bleeds for him

I turn to look at him..okay..still very close

Me:"I'm so sorry Troy...it must've not been easy on you,I wouldn't wish such,even to my biggest enemy"

He smiles faintly

Troy: "its okay Lisa, it was five years ago...I've slowly learnt to move on"

Me:"but still ...two people you loved dearly..just gone...just like that?, that cruel"

Troy: "its all in the past now"

He wipes my tears

Me: "you seem to be doing well...you've handled the whole thing pretty well?"

He shakes his head

Troy: "No...I didn't handle it well at all...I had to

get a lot of help for me to get where I am...I would've long killed myself"

Me:"wow"

Troy: "thanks to this amazing woman..Isabella.. Without her help,I wouldn't be here"

Me:"Isabella? As in Bella?"

He nods

Troy: "you know her?"

Me(laughs):"yeah..I know her very well"

He smiles we look into each other's eyes for a while,he moves closer,till there's no gap between us,our lips just an inch apart, I part my lips to kiss him,he moves away a bit

Troy: "I'm sorry"

Me:"No..I'm sorry"

Troy: "let me get dressed"

I nod, he runs back upstairs

I sigh and go sit on the couch

My phone rings

Me:"what do you want Quinton?"

"Ouch..I guess I deserve that"

Me:"just get to the point "

"And that....look,I'm sorry for the way I just left this morning"

Me:"and the way you just budged in my apartment is okay? "

"I'm sorry for that too"

I roll my eyes

Me:"okay,Quinton, you forgiven,as always.... Anything else?"

"Okay? What's up with you? Am I boring you?"

Me:"yes... Actually you are...you boring me to death,you enjoy breaking my heart and it hurts

so bad that its getting boring "

"Bub..you'll see,everything will make sense,I just need you to be a lil patient with me"

Troy:"I'm all done,are you staying for supper?...oh,sorry"

He makes his way to the kitchen

Me:"I guess I can stay"

Troy: "cool"

"Who's that?...stay where?..Lisa are you with that black niggas again?"

Me:"are you done?"

"Lisa babe...please don't move on just as yet...please bub"

Me:"why not? You seem to be enjoying life..why shouldn't I? "

"Lisa...I'm not enjoying anything, don't you see?"

Me:"bye Quinton "

"Okay okay...in whatever you do..please don't let them have Miss M please"

Me:"mxm"

I drop the call

Me: "so what are you making?!"

Troy: "I don't know...I'll see..you can come watch me?"

Me:"if love that"

He comes towards me and picks me up I giggle...he makes me sit on top of the kitchen counter...I help him cook by telling him what to do and what not to do, he pours us wine...he keeps mixing the pots then comes back to sit next to me on the counter

Troy: "could you help me drink... My hands are dirty,can you help me drink?"

Me:"of cause"

He leans to me and I help him drink,he bursts

into laughter spilling the whole wine in his
mouth on my face

Me:"argh sies!"

We laugh as he wipes me with his hands,and
dirtying my face

Troy: "oops..sorry"

We dead with laughter

I wipe my face with a nearby cloth then look at
him,he attacks me with a kiss,..I kiss him back I
pull out

Troy: "I'm sorry"

Me:"its okay"

He gets up and we continue cooking

[07/30, 13:18] Ron: Continuation

LISA

Me:"its getting late"

Troy:"really? I didn't even realise"

Me:"yeap... Its already half past ten"

Troy:"I guess time really flies when you having fun"

Me:"it does"

He switches off the movie I was barely watching

Troy:"let me get you home"

Me:"please"

He gets up and helps me stand

Troy: "you sure you'll be okay walking with that foot?"

I look at it

Me:"I'll be fine,its not that painful anymore"

Troy: "okay then"

We walk out the house,he opens his garage

Me:"oh you have a car"

He chuckles

Troy: "durh"

Me:"I thought we were going to ride on one of your other bicycles "

He laughs as he opens the door for me

Troy: "oh so now I look like some bicycle

collector"

Me:"you never know"

I say as I get inside,he laughs and makes his way to the other side and we drive off making small talk and laughing along the way

Me:"you can stop right here"

Troy: "oh..is that your place?"

He points at my apartment

Me:"yep that's my crampy apartment "

Troy:"its not that bad "

Me:"tell that to someone who'll believe it"

He chuckles

Me:"uhm..thanks for..."

Troy: "running you foot over with my bike and making up for it?...No biggy"

We laugh

Troy:"you don't have to be thankful for that....I'm the one who should be sorry"

Me:"you don't have to be sorry about that"

Troy: "I see we stealing each others lines now?"

Me:"good night Troy "

Troy: "hope to see you soon again"

Hey this is my chance to get a cute guy's number

Me:"can I have your number"

He raises his brows amused

Me:"No no not like that...it just a silly game I'm playing with my friends "

Troy: "is it called 'get Troy's number' ?"

I laugh

Me:"No...just get a cute guy's number "

Troy: "oh? So you think I'm cute?"

Me:"No..but they will"

He laughs

Troy: "how do you know they'll think I'm cute if you don't think I'm cute?"

Me:"you don't have to give it to me if you don't want to"

Troy (laughing): "okay... Give me yours"

I call it out for him,he dials it on his phone then calls it,my phone rings I pick it up..

Me:"hello?"

Troy: "hey,this is Troy"

Me(thinking hard):"Troy...troy...troy..?"

Troy: "I'm sitting right next to you?....in my car?...right now?"

I look at him

Me(laughing): "oohhh the bicycle freak"

He laughs

Troy: "please delete this number and never call it"

Me:"I wasn't planning to anyway"

I drop the call and open the door but its locked

Troy: "that's my duty"

He gets out and comes around to open for me..mmmhh gentleman, I wonder how gentle is he in.....okay get your mind right Lisa!!

Troy: "have a good night Lisa"

Me:"have a good night Troy "

He's way too close again,he moves his face closer to mine,I was ready to kiss him but he moves to my ear

Troy (whispers): "till we meet again beautiful"

He breaths against my skin for a while then moves away and gets in his car and drives

away,leaving me stuck at the same position and throbbing... There's something about this guy,something tempting, something that makes me wanna drop my panties...okay! That's my que to get in the house before I call him to come back! Shit! What is he doing to me!?.

I head to the house and lock myself in, first thing I do is freshen up, I need to get rid of all these hot wet vibes I've been getting from Troy...after my bath I go straight to bed and play with my phone,I was kinda hoping to get a message or something from Troy.. But to my disappointment, nothing, I don't wanna lie, I would like to have a fling with this guy,he's just too tempting, but also there's Quinton whom I don't wanna hurt at the same time I do want him to also hurt just a bit..for him to feel how its like when he entertains other woman the same way he entertains me,when he gives them the very same pleasures that he's supposed to be

giving me, and only me. At least in whatever I do, I know I'm single now, so I'm not cheating on anyone...right? Yeah...right...I go online in WhatsApp and there's a bunch of messages from Quinton

Quinton.... Hey bub?♥ 20:15

Quinton.... Are you still by that Lanny's house? 20:20

Quinton.... I love you Bub...please don't do anything stupid 20:50

Quinton.... This house is so lonely without you 21:00

Quinton.... I know I messed up but come on, it's been three months now, this is too much, you've punished me enough, please just come back home my love ♥ . 21:20

Quinton.....you still not back at your apartment yet!? Lisa please leave that boy

alone,please..are y'all drinking? Please don't drink anything toxic,and please keep my legs closed....please bub,don't do me like that,I swear I'm not sleeping around ..I'd never do you like that,ever...22:15

Quinton....at least blue tick me yoh! Damn your last seen is scaring me why ungenza so? (Why you doing me like this?) 22:35

Quinton....did you see my missed calls? Please answer your phone I miss you girl♥ I can't stop thinking about what you and that niggar are doing right now How is he touching you ..bub,please don't make me kill someone..cause at the rate you going on, I might end up killing a niggar, and I'd like to believe I'm past that life? ..okay fine, but once all this is over, I hope you'll be ready for your punishment ♥ ♥ ♥ 22:55

Quinton.... Finally, you blue tick me...goodnight
bub,please answer your phone . Just
now

I go offline, after having a too laugh at all his
messages,why is he so jealous? He has Enhle
and Sydney nje? Lol..just then my phone rings
after the fifty missed calls,I decide to answer
this one

"Oh thank goodness...are you okay love?"

Me:"again..what do you want from me Quinton?
"

"I see you had on your neckless today..please
keep it on at all times.please"

Great I forgot he has a tracker on this neckless,
I just love it so much

Me:"are you stalking me Quinton? "

"Okay look, I know things aren't good between
us yet...but please I need to know where you are

at all times"

Me:"No...you don't "

"I'm serious lisakhanya this is no game,just listen to what I'm telling you or you'll force me to kidnap you"

Me:"mxm whatever Quinton, I'll keep your stupid neckless on...as long as you stay away from me and stop overflowing my DM with your whining and meaningless I love yousand who I get down with,is non of your business anymore...and I can give Miss M to whoever I wanna give,she's not yours anymore"

I stop talking after the last statement...that came out very wrong and loosely

"Don't try me Lisa"

I can sense his anger over the phone

Me:"do whatever you want Quinton... Marry Enhle if you want to. Its non of my business

right? Cause you can't even explain to me that you love her that its always been her and it'll always be her"

"Can't you have a little faith in me? I'd never do you like that..(whispers) this is just temporary"

Me:"oh..so your affair is just temporary, then you'll come back to me,and we'll live happily ever after? I'm not a fool Quinton "

"Hey Quinton? Who you talking to?"

"No one.."

Me:"Wow... Just wow..so you with her?!! Fuck you Quinton! You hear me!! Go to hell and burn!! I hate you!"

"Lisa..wait...."

I drop the call...I'm breathing heavily, I need air, quick!!

I get up and go to the bathroom and wash my face,it helps me to calm down..pew! I almost

had a heart breakdown.. I swear Quinton will be the death of me,he just knows the buttons to push as if he knows that I can't live without him.. But you know what?...I can!

....

A month later

...

Well school is just great,I'm more focused now and my friends are the best..I told Tsepo that we should keep the distance,I don't mind hanging out with him,but not all the time and there's nothing that's going to happen between him and I.. I must say he took it pretty well, he also found that he didn't have feelings for me he was just taken by my looks and very thankful for saving his life..his words not mine...then there's Troy..well,things have been quite interesting between us...he calls me a lot ..its like he's in competition with Quinton, the

number of times they call, but of course I'm ignoring The Other Guy.

We hang out a lot too, he's been taking me to the gym with him, it's so tiring but I could use the distraction from all the sad thoughts... And I could also use the six pack.. I don't know what's going on between us but I like it... we do kiss and touch, but I haven't slept with him.. I'm not that loosened

Yonela: "you are glowing nowadays?"

Thelma: "it must be the Troy"

Me: "I don't know what y'all talking about "

We chilling by the cafeteria

Yonela: "don't tell me you've given him the cookie yet?"

Me: "what! No! Come on!"

Yonela: "why not!?"

I look at her in disbelief

Me:"what do you mean why not!?"

Thelma:"she means...you need it!"

Me:"okay..y'all have lost it...I'm not even dating this guy"

Yonela:"who said you have to date him to have fun with him!?"

Me:"fun!?"

Thelma: "yeah,you don't have to be all serious, to have fun with your nookie"

Me: "No way!..you guys are so bitchy"

Yonela: "I mean dude the lustful attraction between y'all is too visible...just explore it a bit..you young and single have fun girl..and forget about people who broke your heart"

Me:....

Thelma: "she's right"

Me:....

Yonela: "just play it safe"

I sigh

Me:"you guys though...y'all such bad influence "

We all laugh and the day continues, I don't know if I'm ready to allow anyone inside Miss M no matter how loud she's been crying for Troy.

I'm now done with my classes...we are outside campus when Troy's car parks in front of us

He rolls down his windows

Troy: "hey ladies"

Yonela & Thelma: "heeeey trooooy"

Bitches..I roll my eyes

Troy: "how you ladies doing?"

Them:"we goood"

What's with the dragging?

Troy: "good to know...can i steal your friend for a while?"

Them:"okaaaay"

Me:"seriously? "

I shake my head,he gets out the car and comes open the door for me

I see them whisper to each other, I ignore them and get in, he drives away

Troy: "how are you today?"

Me:"I'm cool"

Troy: "you look cool"

He says checking me out up and down then looks back at the road

Me:"whatever...this is not the way to the gym?"

Troy: "No gym today...just wanna take you out"

Me:"mmh to?"

Troy(chuckles):"I don't know "

Me:"I can't wait to see 'I don't know' I've never heard of it..is it new?"

He laughs

Troy: "I think so...let's check it out"

Me:"yeah. Let's"

We get to the mall,he buys a few things for his house

Me:"so you decided to hijack me to do your groceries? "

Troy: "my cupboards and fridge are really empty"

Me: "and how's that my problem?"

Troy: "you always st my place finishing all the food"

Me:"oh wow..since when is three times..always?"

Troy: "oh just shut up and take the blame would you!"

We burst into laughter

"So he's the new guy?"

We now by the isle getting ready to pay, I turn to look at him

Me: "so now you following me?"

Quinton: "you just keep changing them like you changing panties"

Me: "stay out of my business Quinton"

Quinton: "now you know I can't do that"

Troy: "is there a problem here?"

Quinton: "stay out of this muscle man"

Troy: "is this niggas bothering you babe?"

Me: "actually he was just about to leave me the hell alone...right?"

Quinton: "Lisa..would you stop all this fooling around and come back to me already?"

I chuckle in disbelief

Me: "you think you all that.. Don't you?.. Well

news flash buddy,..when I said I was done,I meant it...you think all my roads lead back to you? You must be mistaken "

I fold my arms

Troy: "now you getting her all worked up"

He wraps his arms around me turning me around, he slides his hand to my ass and squeezes it a bit,I giggle..next thing I know I'm watching wrestling live as these two men are punching each other in front of people... I watch a bit as I feel like laughing... Until I see blood coming out of Troy's mouth and nose..I try to stop them

Me:"STOP IT!!.....QUINTON!! GET OFF HIM!! STOP!!"

They don't listen

Me:"where is the security in this shop!!"

People are just watching... Like seriously?

I pull Quinton by his clothes,he doesn't budge I try to go between then, before I know it...I think my jaw just broke,from the punch I got from Quinton, I hold my cheek while look at him..he stops fighting and looks at me

Quinton: "bub..are you okay...I'm so sorry,it was a mistake"

He comes towards me but I keep moving away

Me:"stay away from me Quinton "

Quinton: "my love...I'm so sorry.. Please,let me

Troy attacks him with a punch causing him to fall...I can't watch anymore,I run out the shop,I pass the security by the door going towards them..only now they come!?

I run out and wait next to the car, I look at my reflection on the mirror and my cheek is red, I move my jaw around,its quite painful

After a few minutes Troy comes towards me he unlocks the car and opens the door for me..wow, after all that,he's still a gentleman?

He gets in the car and we drive off in silence,we get to his house He takes his first aid kit and takes care of my cheek,he hasn't said a word

Me:"ouch"

Troy: "sorry"

He continues gently after a while he was done,I took the stuff

Me:"let me"

I also take care of his face,he got a blue eye and purple lip

Me:"I'm so sorry about earlier "

Troy:"its cool"

Me:"I didn't know he'd lose control like that"

Troy: "its fine Lisa.. Don't worry about it"

Me:"I can't.. This is all my fault, I should've just ignored him and not get him mad, now you like this and its all.....

His lips smash on mine,what started off slow turns heated up as clothes starts flying in the air

.

.

.

Let's start judging Lisa ! Go!

[07/30, 13:19] Ron: Insert 56

LISA

silence and heavy breathing

We facing the ceiling while trying to catch our
breath

Troy(breathlessly):"wow"

Me(breathlessly): "yeaah"

I feel his hand hold mine which are beside me,
he picks it up and kisses it

Troy:"thank you"

Me:"what for?"

Troy: "for the amazing moment..for being here right now..for being you"

Me: "oh...you welcome, I guess"

Troy: "I haven't had good pussy in a while"

Me (chuckles): "and how long exactly is,a while?"

Troy: "two years ago?..yeah two years"

I burst into laughter but he remains quiet

I turn to look at him

Me: "you not joking?"

He shakes his head

Me:"why not? Are you gay?"

He laughs

Troy: "I don't know,and that was the first time after my wife"

Me: "yoh so you only had sex once after your wife?"

Troy: "is that creepy?"

Me:"not at all..it's just shocking....I mean for a guy..a handsome guy like yourself, not getting laid for so many years.... No wonder "

He looks at me,I smile and look back up at the ceiling

Troy: "no wonder what?...was I bad?... I must've lost my game"

Me:"actually, you were awesome....on fire,I thought I was losing my mind"

Its true,he fucked me senselessly, just as I had imagined and he's big

Troy (laughs):"really?... You think so?"

Me:"my nunu is still burning to prove it"

We laugh

Troy:"you just so tight...I can't get enough"

Tight? I feel so loose though

silence

Troy:"are you okay?"

Me:....

He turns my face to look at him,I look at him in his eyes, he has grey eyes,it's my first time being involved with a white guy

Troy: "tell me what's wrong?"

Me (sighs):"what is this Troy?"

Troy: "you mean us?"

Me: "this...the going out,the random visits,the late night calls,the texting,the flirting.....this(pointing at him and I)...everything.... What is it?"

He sighs

Troy:"what do you want it to be?"

Me: "I don't know Troy, what do you want it to be?"

Troy:...

Me:.....

Troy: "look Lisa, I really enjoy your company and just everything else about you...but..."

Me: "there's a but.."

..those are never good"

Troy: "I'm not looking for anything serious "

I feel his eyes on me as I'm starring at the ceiling.. I turn to look at him

Me: "me too"

Troy: "I know"

Me (perplexed): "you know?"

He pulls me closer, our naked bodies touch

Troy: "you still love him"

Me: "what...?"

Troy: "Quinton Ambrose O'Brien..... You really love him"

I move my eyes away from his

Me:.....

Troy:"you kinda moaned his name "

I did what!!!? I look at him shocked

Me:"I did?"

He nods

Me:"his full name?"

Troy(laughs):"No...but your tattoo of his name under your breast sold out his full name"

Me:"oh...sorry "

Troy: "don't be...I also have my wife's name and child"

Me:"can I see?"

He moves the blanket and we both sit up he exposes his lower body.... Don't tell me he has it on his dick!!?

Troy: "right there"

Its on his lower abdomen next to his V line

Me:"its beautiful "

He covers himself

Troy: "thanks...look,I don't think we should label,this, whatever is going on between us...cause I don't know how long it will last,we both enjoy each other...let's just keep it this way"

I nod

Me:"so....You mean,this, will happen again? "

Troy: "I don't know... You see,if you were my woman.... And I showed you my tattoo of my late wife's name....you wouldn't have took it well,you wouldn't have understood and we'd

probably be fighting about it or you'd be threatening to leave me if I don't remove it....Also, if I were your man, when you moaned your ex lover's name,while I was making love to you, I would've freaked out on you and probably threaten to leave you,then on top of that you have his name tattooed on your body and I'd have to look at that every time we make love,it would just cause problems between us..... So you see Lisa,we both not ready for a relationship and we definitely not looking for all that drama, so its best if we...just have fun and explore this sexual tension...sprouting between us"

Me:"you right....let's not label,its just fun...right?"

Troy: "yeah babe..just fun"

I look back at the ceiling

Me:"and we both single....its not like we cheating or hurting anyone...right?"

Troy: "that's right"

I sigh heavily

Me:"just harmless fun"

He kisses my shoulder and gets on top of me

Troy: "I would love some more of that.. Fun"

He says starring at my lips then kisses me,he enters without warning and we at it again

A few days later

.

Its a Saturday and I just arrived at Spur to meet up with my girls

I immediately spot them at the far corner as I walk up to them and join them

Me(cheerful): "ladies!"

I hug them and we sit

Yonela:"wow,Lisa,the new D is doing wonders"

Thelma:"you over glowing"

Me(sighs):"there we go again "

Yonela:"you even changed your fashion sense"

Thelma:"more like..upgraded"

Me:"is that a compliment Thelma?"

Thelma: "hell yeah...we should thank Troy"

I laugh

Yonela: "wow...he must be hitting it good"

Me(lower tone):"can we not discuss my sex life please"

I take off my sunglasses

Thelma: "I love the new hairstyle"

Yonela: "wow! Make up on point...eye brows on fleek....we doing pink lipstick now?....them nails!...girrrll! You living the life neh?"

Thelma: "Troy knows how to take care of a woman neh?"

Me:"its not Troy...come on,what do you take me for...I just thought,for once let me just focus on myself and stop worrying about other people.. So with the money I've been saving for rainy days...I thought..why wait for rainy days when I can just enjoy the summer?"

I smile showing off my teeth

Yonela: "Slayer gurrlfreeeeend!"

Thelma: "welcome to the real normal teenage and varsity life!"

Me:"yeah yeah..."

Yonela: "took you long enough"

Me(sighs):"yeah..I'm tired of stressing,its other people's turn to stress now.. I almost reached my forties in my late teens"

Yonela: "tell me about it"

"Can I get your order ladies?"

Me:"I'll have your quarter chicken and a salad, thanks"

Yonela: "them ribs and chips"

Thelma: "I'll have the rib burger and please make my chips wedges"

Waiter:"coming right up"

He winks at me and walks away

Thelma: "that guy couldn't take his eyes from you"

Me:"me?"

Thelma: "yeah,he was totally checking you out"

Me:"mmh I didn't realise"

Yonela: "okay..besides that....since when do you order a salad and quarter leg at spur!?"

Me:"would you keep it down?....what's wrong with that? Its time I try something new,I can't be

having the same thing every time I come to spur"

Thelma: "I don't mean to bring back old wounds... But,why couldn't you upgrade yourself like this or spoil yourself while you were still with Quinton? Cause he definitely is super rich"

I sigh

Yonela: "did you have to bring him up...she was doing so well forgetting him"

Me:"No..its cool Nella...she doesn't know half of the things I've been through with Quinton...to answer your question Thelms....I guess I never got the time"

Thelma: "you mean you never got the time not even once to spoil yourself?"

Me:"oh...I had the time to spoil myself..I had a lot of that time and I had the money too, a lot of it that he overflowed my bank account with"

Thelma: "but you just said you never got the time?"

Me:"I never got the time, yes..... I never got the time to think about myself, my number one priority was always my love bug, instead of spoiling myself,I liked to spoil him more...I never saw the need to do..all this (referring to my hairstyle,face and nails)...all I cared about was loving him and showing it...and also a lot of times our happiness was short lived,and we always argued.....(sighs)..I guess he had enough of that and decided to move on with his ex,where there was less problems "

I shrug my shoulders

Me:"So yeah....I guess it is what it is...I'm also doing the same...moving on..and just be carefree for once in my life"

Yonela: "you go girl"

We high fived

Thelma:"this is just sad"

Yonela: "I think its for the best....I mean I've never seen my friend this stress less..... Never! Its always been books books books...then after that it was...books Quinton Quinton books books Quinton Quinton Quinton Quinton books Quinton Quinton Quinton Quinton Quinton Quinton tears heartbreak tears tears Quinton...(sighs)...enough is enough,she's not married she doesn't have to tolerate any bullshit...she can't be girlfriend on wife's terms"

Me(laughs):"Yoh"

Thelma (singing): "if he liked it then he should've put a ring on it..if he liked it then he should've put a ring on it..."

Yonela (singing):" don't be mad once you see that he want it"

Me(singing) "'Cause you had your turn

But now you gon' learn

What it really feels to miss me"

Us:" whoa oh oh oh oh oh ohhh oh oh whoa oh oh!!!

We do a dance flashing our left hands in the air,we burst into laughter and stop as we notice we drawing attention to ourselves

Me:"y'all so crazeeee"

Our order comes and we enjoy our food

We finish up

Me:"guys...I need a dress..a hot dress"

Yonela: "what's the occasion?"

Thelma: "Troy?"

I laugh

Me:"well...troy owns his one of the biggest law firms in Jo'burg, can you believe? "

Yonela: "wow, so y'all have something in common"

Me:"yeah...a lot actually "

Thelma: "so..what's going on? Is he taking you out for another dinner?"

She rolls her eyes

Me:"No...its way more than that"

Yonela: "what? You want us to keep guessing? Spit it out already!"

Me:"he's taking me to a function... (Excitedly)...
A business function! "

They look at me confused

Yonela: "business function? What's so nice about that?"

Thelma: "yeah...just a bunch of businessmen talking about work?"

Me:"you don't get it...they'll be a bunch of lawyers... The best lawyers in South Africa! With my good grades he said he'll put out a good word for me....aaaannnd.....he offered me a

job, to work in his firm while I'm still studying,
for experience"

Their jaws drop

Reminding me of how I was like when he
offered

Me:"that's the same reaction I had"

Yonela: "whoa whoa get down
repunzel!....what's in it for him?"

Me:"Nothing "

Thelma: "it can't be nothing... This is Jo'burg
girl..no one helps you for " nothing" anymore"

Yonela: "I hope its not because you sleeping
with him?"

Me:"that's what I thought at first... Then he told
me if I feel that way,we can stop and end
whatever is going on between us, but the offer
still stands,he was just impressed by my good
grades from high school up until now and said I

have potential "

Yonela:"mmmhh potential neh?"

Me:"yeah...potential, yonela"

Yonela: "mmh okaaay...I hear you"

Thelma(awkwardly): "yeah..good for you girl"

I look at them trying to study their faces

Me:"y'all don't seem happy for me?"

Yonela cough's

Yonela: "I'm happy for you friend... Just,I want you to be careful...remember, this was supposed to be " just fun" nothing more"

Thelma: "yeah..I mean you don't really know this guy"

Yonela: "you can't just trust him"

Thelma: "he's already changing you"

Yonela: "yeah...you should slow down"

I chuckle and shake my head in disbelief

I don't believe them

Me:"wow guys...first y'all tell me I need new D...and I need to get laid, Troy is a nice guy....yeah girlfriend,open your legs for him, its just for fun... Don't let him go ,we love the glow, if it makes you happy go for it! Don't hold back,live your life girl.....and now? Now I've suddenly changed?"

Yonela: "we don't mean it like that"

Me:"No...you do,you do mean it like that, am I a bitch now? A gold digger? Who's after Troy's good life? Is that what I am now?"

Thelma: "Lisa..calm down we just..."

Me:" just what?....you know what,I'm done taking advise from y'all.. From now on, I'll just do what best suits me..and y'all not about to stand in my way"

Yonela (sighs): "Lisa..we sorry,please calm down "

Thelma: "yeah...you do you girl...we are just shocked by the way troy is being so nice to you"

Me: "how did you expect him to be like?... (I sigh and calm myself down)...look,I know I don't know much about Troy..but the little things I do know about him are very personal and its things he doesn't feel comfortable talking about...he's been through things..that I can relate to, we talk a lot I've told him about the way I grew up and all and so has he....trust me, Troy is a good guy, he's doing this for me because he understands me and my background, cause he also never had it easy growing up"

*silence *

Yonela holds my hand

Yonela: "as long as you trust him...then I'm hundred percent behind you"

Thelma joins her hand too

Thelma: "we got your back"

I smile at them

Me:"thank you...now...let's go get that dress shall we?"

Yonela (cheerful): "yeah! And I think a black dress will do, you have to show some skin in a sexy but not too sexy way"

Thelma: "yeah..something that will leave them wondering.. And we don't want to show too much skin"

I laugh at them and we pay the bill

We now looking around the shops

Me:"does it have to be black...I was thinking more..red? Or royal blue?"

Thelma:"ohh yes, those are sexy colours indeed"

Yonlela:"yeah and besides, probably everyone will be wearing black...if this is really a function with a bunch of lawyers"

I laugh

Me:"just because they wear black at work doesn't mean its the only colour they wear all the time..and I also need to look smart"

Yonela:"yeah yeah whateveryoh, seems like your new look is turning heads today"

She says as a bunch of guys were passing us and checking is out

Thelma:"hey guys..look...isn't that Quinton? "

We lift our heads up and it looks like he's at the shop we heading to, did it have to be today God? I can't deal with him right now

Yonela: "we can turn and go look in another shop?"

Thelma: "yeah..I saw a nice dress that way"

Me:"No..we going in that shop, I'm done running away"

Its a ladies shop,he's probably here with Enhle

Our eyes meet as we got closer

Yonela (clenched teeth): "its still early for a you turn"

He's standing by the door holding a trolley with a bunch of paper bags with a big teddy on top,wow he never bought me a teddy that big... how romantic of him to do it for Enhle his first..or is it second Love? We look at each other until we make our way inside the shop,I turn and look at the direction I'm walking to, I can still feel his eyes on me...I see Enhle all serious looking at the clothes, this is a very expensive shop by the way,I'll probably use my last cent if I find something I really like here...we ignore her as we check out dresses with yonela pointing at everything

Me:"come on Yonela,we only came for a dress...I already have a neckless,and that is too expensive "

Thelma: "yeah.. But its so beautiful"

"You right...mmh I might just get it for myself"

I turn to be met by the famous Miss World

Me:"help yourself"

Enhle: "I will....Quinton! Baby!"

He calls Quinton to come in,he points at the trolley, indicating He can't leave it there

Enhle:"ask the security to look after it love!"

He leaves it by the security and comes towards us

I turn and carry on looking at the clothes,my heart breaks a little, its been months now, he's still with her,there's no doubt they shagging each other

Enhle talks loud making sure we can hear

Enhle:"I love this neckless babe.."

I hear Quinton although he's talking on his normal tone but its too deep to not hear him and they really close to us

Quinton: "then buy it"

Enhle:"really!? You'd do that for me?"

Quinton: "yeah sure..anything you want"

I can sense he's irritated a bit..I would too,the bitch is clingy,but I guess that's why he loves her...I look at them and I find I looked at the wrong time when they are kissing passionately in public.. I quickly turn back, I feel my heart ache a lot this time..he didn't even stop her...why would he do that Lisa? Pssh they are a couple after all

If this is his heart still in a good place...I think Bella was wrong this time

Enhle: "it will go very well with the engagement ring!!"

My whole world collapses as my mouth hangs open,I look at the girls and they have the same expression

Me:"uhm..eerrh...I don't think my dress is in this shop...let's go look somewhere else"

My voice decided to break at the last few words in my sentence

I hold my mouth blocking the sob that wanted to escape, I take a huge breathe in and out then turned and walked, we bumped into each other

Quinton: "sorry"

I force a smile and shake my head as I try to continue but the space is small and we keep moving to the same side...this is the last thing I need right now,I can smell her on him...

Me:"can you please get out my way man?"

Quinton: "of cause... Sorry"

He moves to one side,I carry on with my way and head for the door, while keeping my cool,we walk straight to the toilets, I burst into tears as soon as we enter,they comfort me

Yonela:"I don't believe him...he's just gonna marry her,just like that? After everything y'all have been through "

Thelma: "I really thought... Soon enough, y'all just forgive each other and get back together... I mean, everyone can see that you two belong together"

I wipe my tears

Me:"I guess,it was all in our head....maybe he was only meant to save me from bad situations.... Nothing more"

Yonela: "sshhh...don't say that...he'll regret this, you'll see,he'll get tired of that gold digging mosquito and run back to you"

Me:"then what?...I should just welcome him back just like that? And everything will go back to the way things were? Then our relationship will be the same again? As if nothing ever happened?... Please don't fool me,no Quinton is coming back to me,he's happy where he is..this is it..this is my breaking point, I can't take it, its time I let go"

QUINTON

The things we do for the people we love are sometimes beyond measure,sometimes you just have to protect them without them knowing,

because that's the only way you can protect them, Its not easy,you have to sometimes give up your life and put them before you,so that you'll be able to shield them....I am so close in getting all the information I need on the Johnsons, not only to protect Lisa, but to make sure they go down and never get back up...and another way is to take out the head of the house, that being Mr Johnson...I've drawn myself so close to that family, they completely trust me...well I know Mr Johnson is only happy that I'm on their side now and I'm no longer protecting Lisa but I'm now in love with their daughter which will make it easy for them to attack her...they've been keeping a close eye on her and they can see that things are really over between us, as she is now getting down with the Muller,..Troy Muller,the white guy,I also did research on him,his genuine and he's been through a lot of sad shit,so Lisa is safe with him...if I had told Lisa my plan,then she wouldn't

have moved on with another guys,she wouldn't have made it believable if I told her we should act it out together, my plan wouldn't work,things are more real and believable this way. I asked Enhle for her hand in marriage to prove myself to the Johnsons.. And now,now I have all their trust, I know about their shipment what time it goes and comes back..I'll be able to bust them to the police along with their human trafficking, and all those girls will be free,I know some of them depend on that job for their families but I can help them out with something, in my businesses which I'll be changing to be legal soon,since they are in my name,my family has no say...I still haven't talked to them.

I hate seeing Lisa like this but at the same time, she's getting to sort out her life and focus on herself for once

Now I feel like I've been holding her back from being herself,her new makeover, the glow on

her face and her eyes...one thing I hate about all this is the fooling around with the muscle man Troy...I can't help but feel hurt and very jealous,that's my girl and I love her more than anything, I'm doing all this for her,I feel like I could just tell her,I hope she'll understand, it looks like she's reached her breaking point after today...what if when this is all over,which it will be very soon...what if she doesn't wanna come back to me? What if she's caught feelings for Troy and she doesn't want to hear me out. I know the marriage is taking it a bit too far,,...but that's how far I'm willing to go for her...or I'll never be able to forgive myself for her death

Enhle: "let's go get something to eat babe"

Me(sighs):"yeah..let's"

Enhle: "babe"

Me:"yeah?"

Enhle: "what would you say if I told you I'm

pregnant?"

My heart skips a beat,impossible

Me:"uhm..I I...are you pregnant? "

Enhle(laughs):"what if I am?"

Me(chuckles):"I'd be thrilled...are you?"

Enhle: "No...we have to start trying, my father wants a girl from me"

Me:"of cause babe...I can't wait"

Enhle: "look at this"

She shows me pictures of baby nurseries

One thing I've kept very secret from them...is my unborn child

I just hope this all ends before he's born

[07/30, 13:19] Ron: Insert 57

LISA

Two weeks later

"Hllii ouch Nella! You burning my skulp"

Yonela:"sorry, nawe your hair is so curly though,
its impossible to straighten"

She's straightening my hair with the hair
straightener

Yonela: "all done!"

Me:"finally! "

Thelma:"now,come put on your dress"

I put it on and its just perfect she helps me with the zip at the back that only goes up to right above my waist as the dress exposes my whole back,but it covers my front and is V shaped in front showing enough chest and cleavage,its body hugging and very long that it has a short tail that touches the ground, I wear a nice black pair of stilettos,I had to practice the the whole week to walk on these,I hope they don't drop me in front of all those people...I got a black clutch bag to match the shoes and red matt lipstick, I must say,I look beautiful.

Yonela: "and Cinderella has turned into a beautiful princess....as your fairy god mother I'm proud to say....my child,you are now ready for the ball"

We laugh and just then there's a knock at the door

Thelma: "wow, Mr Muller has timing"

Yonela: "I'll go get it while you finish up"

She walks out,I take the fluffy black half coat and put it on,its a bit chilly outside

Yonela: "he's waiting"

I take a huge breathe in and out

Thelma: "you'll be fine,those lawyers will notice your potential"

Me:"I'm so nervous...I've never been or invited to high places like this"

Yonela: "there's a first time for everything....

Now go show them what you made of...and I know troy will gasp and drop his jaw once he sees you, let's bet"

Me:"mxm oh please,troy is used to seeing beautiful woman who dress even better than this all the time"

Yonela: "we'll see"

I ignore he and walk out the room with them following behind me he's sitting by the single couch, I clear my throat he quickly stands up as he turns to look at me his eyes wonder my body up and down with his mouth open...yonela clears her throat, I look at her and she winks I roll my eyes while Thelma giggles softly

I must say he look amazing in his suit and those tight pants, his hair nice and styled laying back

I clear my throat he takes his eyes off my dress and smiles looking at me in the eyes

Troy:"you look.....breathtaking "

I smile

Me:"thank you, you look handsome as well"

Troy:"shall we?"

He extends his arm

I put mine under his and our arms lock

Me:"we shall"

We walk out he opens the car door for me and we drive off

Troy:"calm down,no need to be nervous "

Me:"I'm not nervous "

Troy: "you tapping your fingers,that's a sign of being nervous and you starring out of space"

Me:"okay I'm nervous"

Troy: "don't be.. Lawyers don't bite, they human like you"

Me:"I know..but they are intimidating.. Do you watch suits?"

Troy:"my favourite series "

Me:"if I could meet Harvey Spector I'd

faint...that's how much I'm scared of lawyers"

Troy:"then why do you want to become one?"

Me:"so that I can also be intimidating...whilst I throw those thugs in jail"

Troy:"you do know that..throwing them into jail won't always be the case?"

Me(sighs):"I know"

Troy: "so if you want to make it in the law world, you have to be strong and let go of the sympathy and fragile heart.....the client comes first"

Me:....

Troy: "you think you can handle that?"

I nod

Me:"yeah.....I can handle that"

Troy: "some clients are big time gangsters.. And they'll want you to get them out of really messy

situations... You can't afford to say no, cause they have the right to a lawyer and they pay a lot of money...some commit really serious crimes like rape and murder, and you'll have to defend them to not go to jail. Do you think you can handle that?"

So I'll let rapists run free to go rape innocent women and children out there? Can I handle that?

Me: "why are you telling me all this?"

Troy: "so that I know if you can handle being a lawyer? "

Me(sighs): "I can handle it...its what I've always dreamed of..I'm sure I can handle it"

Troy: "if you say so"

We finally get to the function, with Troy introducing me to all the big shot lawyers in south Africa, I was so excited but I managed to hide it and act professional.

We applauded once more as Troy came back to the table after saying his speech

I stand up and hug him as he gets to our table

Me: "that was beautiful "

Troy: "thank you"

He kisses my cheek and we sit down and engage into conversation with other people around this table, I must say these people are of very high standard and class, some are graduates from Harvard law school in USA..how I wish I had gotten a chance to study there.

The wine keeps coming and music starts playing, a slow song comes on and almost everyone is with a partner moving to the slow beat. Troy stands up and extends his hand to me

Troy: "may I have this dance?"

I laugh silently looking down as I blush, I look

back up at him and he has the biggest smile ever, I give him my hand as I stand to my feet

Me: "Yes, you may"

We move to the dancing area, we look at each other in the eyes before he pulls me against his body and locks his arms around my waist gently I wrap my arms around his neck and we dance to the slow song, I lay my head on his shoulder

Troy: "your hair smells so nice"

Me: "thanks...you smell nice too"

We remain quiet and move to the beat

Troy (whispers in my ear): "I wish this song never ends, I love having you in my arms"

I smile and pull him even closer.

We are now driving back home, he parks in front of my apartment

Troy: "you sure you don't want to go home with

me?"

Me:"nice try Troy, but not tonight, I just want to be alone and let all that inspiration sink in"

Troy(sighs disappointedly):"if you say so then"

He gets out and opens the door for me

Troy: "I would've love to take this beautiful dress off you...its all I've been thinking about you know"

Me:"I'll wear it again when I pay you a visit"

He laughs and takes my coat then puts it around me

Troy: "good night gorgeous"

Me:"goodnight"

He kisses my cheek,then looks at me for a while,he removes hair from my face as he holds my neck and pulls me in for a kiss,I kiss him back, he pulls out

Troy: "damn! I can't let you go"

Me:"oh Troy"

I kiss him again for a while till I pull out as it was getting heated

Me(breathlessly): "goodnight Troy"

Troy: "goodnight Lisa"

I walk away and watch him drive off as I close the gate

I walk towards the door while looking for the keys in my purse which I'm having difficulty finding under all my make up and a bunch of stuff, I stand by the door looking for them

Me:"finally! "

I say as I pull them out

"Finally!...now, don't you dare move"

I hear the gun being triggered right against my head, my blood drops to my stomach as my

heartbeat accelerates ready to pop out, I drop the keys and everything else I was holding as I slowly out my hands up

"Pick up the keys and open the door"

I know that voice..but I'm not quite sure where I know it from?

I do as I'm told and we walk inside with my legs pressed together as I feel the urge to pee...oh God, is this it? Am I really dying today?...why? Why today, please Lord show your mercy father, I know I might have lost my ways these past few weeks, I'm sorry I....

"Where are the diamonds?"

Me:"wh what ...I don't...

"Don't fucken waste my time!!"

He presses the gun hard against my head

Me:"okay okay...I'll go get them"

"Lead the way"

I walk to the room,I'm surprised these heels haven't dropped me yet

I get down on my knees next to the bed,with tears steaming down my face

Me:"please don't kill me"

"JUST GET THE DAMN DIAMONDS!!"

I quickly lift up my bed mattress and take them

"Don't look at me just hand them over"

I give him my hand and he takes them

"(Laughing)...you can turn and meet your worst nightmare"

I slowly get on my feet and turn to face him,he takes off the black head mask, I gasp as both my mouth and eyes widen

Me:"Mr...Johnson??....."

Mr Johnson(laughing):"why you so shocked? You thought I forgot about you?....oh no little

lady,I've been keeping a very close eye on you..where's your loving boyfriend now? He's marrying my daughter, you see Lisa,you also could've had a nice comfortable happy life,if you had just bared with my son and instead of sending your boyfriend to kill him you should've just helped him..he really loved you,he was willing to change for you, but you are your Father's daughter, a betrayer,these were supposed to be our diamonds, we were going to share the power they come with,but he decided to be selfish and keep it all for himself.. I was going to kill him but I guess the O'Brien's beat me to it.....,now you can go join your father in hell...and say hi for me"

He pulls the slide again I close my wet eyes as I await for the excruciating pain

Bhaah!!

I fall on my knees

Bhah bhah

Gun shots go off but no pain? I open my eyes slowly to be met by Quinton holding a gun pointed at the very bloody dead man in front of me, my face and whole front is covered in splattered blood

Me(Whispers): "Quinton?"

Bhaah

He shoots the already dead man on the head once more

Me:"No..."

I look up at him,he's starring down at the dead man,he lifts his face up and our eyes lock...my head gets dizzy and very heavy as the lights go off

I open my eyes and quickly sit up in fear

Me:"Quinton! "

I look around and he's sitting at the edge of the bed ,I look at myself and I'm clean in my PJs, I go sit next to him and that's when I realise what he's starring at, Mr Johnson is still laying there in his pool of blood,my body crawls in disgust, we both just sit there

Quinton:"are you okay?"

He asks after a few minutes of silence

Me:"No..."

Quinton:...

Me:"are you okay?"

Quinton: "No"

silence

Me(whispers):"you killed him"

I feel him look at me as I'm looking down

Quinton: "he was going to kill you"

My spirit feel down,I feel broken, not because I

was almost killed or because Mr Johnson is dead....but that image of Quinton killing him is what bothers me the most more than anything,I wish it were someone else,not Quinton

Me:"I know...(signs)...what are we going to do about this?...we should get rid of it and clean up this mess"

Quinton: "No....we should call the police"

I give him an astonished look

Me:"are you crazy? Do you know how hard it will be to prove that this was defense? You might go to jail...I can't afford to loo--....I mean you can't just go waste your life like that"

Quinton: "I have it figured out...don't worry"

Me:"what?....wait...how did you know he would be here?"

Quinton: "I knew cause I was willing to marry his daughter"

I look at him as I try to comprehend what he's saying

Me(confused): "what?.....what does that mean?"

Quinton: "I'll explain everything to you, right now, just know that, I've always been by your side,and I'll always be by your side.. Everything I do,I do it for you..and everything I did...I did it for you..because I love you"

Me(confused):.....

Quinton: "the police and ambulance will be here any second now"

Just then I hear the sirens

What does he mean,he knew about all this?

What's going on here!?

My phone rings disturbing our eye contact I answer it

Me:"hello?"

"Lisa... I heard gun shots from that side and

now I'm hearing sirens...are you okay?"

Me: "I'm fine Troy"

I look at Quinton and he's looking at me. I look away

"Do you know where it came from?"

Me:"someone tried to rob me and kill me but he got shot before he could"

"WHAT!! And you telling me you fine!? I'll be right there!!"

Me:"No Troy... Its fine,its over now"

..

Me:"hello?"

..

Me:"Troy .you there?"

I look at my phone and he hang up

"I'm gonna need y'all to step out of the house please"

Says the police officer as they make their way in with the paramedics

They ask us a few questions

Detective: "I'm gonna need y'all to come with me for further questioning and you will have to spend a night in a cell until we get enough Information "

Me: "but officer...."

Detective: "Please don't make us force you mam"

"That won't be necessary"

We turn to look at him

Detective: "Mr Muller"

Troy: "Detective Dickens"

Detective: "we have to take him them in"

Troy: "now,we both know the rules and rights,I'm sure you were given a statement,your

job is to look more into it, let the victims have their rest before you can take anyone in for questioning...what's the use of taking them there if they won't answer you and they'll demand a lawyer who will come and tell you the same thing in that statement you holding?"

He looks at him for a while

Detective: "I'll see you two tomorrow... Have a good night"

He walks away, Troy pulls me into his arms immediately

Troy: "are you okay? You sure they didn't hurt you?"

Me: "No. I'm fine Troy "

I pull away from him and turn to look at Quinton, I see him get in his car and drives away...he didn't even say goodbye, I didn't even get to say thank you

Troy: "you cant stay here alone after tonight....I have plenty of room,at least spend a few nights until everything has settled down"

I look at him and give him a faint smile...I look back at the road,where Quinton's car disappeared to

"Let's go"

I look at him

Me:"uhm.....I'm sorry Troy....but, there's somewhere I need to be"

He looks at me for a while then smiles

Troy: "you can take my car"

Me:"thanks "

I hug him,he gives me the keys..I get in his car and follow the direction he drove in

.

.

A few inserts away to the end ♥

[07/30, 13:19] Ron: Insert 58

Finale part one

LISA

I park outside the gate and buzz Sandile to open the gate for me,after a few seconds it opens I park right behind his car,I sigh, before getting out of the car

I look at the house then make my way towards it

I budge in

Me(shouts):"Quinton!"

I look around and there's no one,I run upstairs

"Quinton! Baby! ...We need to talk!"

I say as I budge in his room,no one in here, I walk out and look at the other rooms, I notice the spare room that we never used,the one I used to pray in is now nicely decorated, smells of fresh paint as its painted blue and white,everything is baby blue and white with a soccer theme of Argentina, that's Quinton's favourite team,he loves Lionel Messi..its so cute..I look around the room next to the cot, all

the cute baby things..wow I guess he's really excited about this baby,he's gonna be a great father,I just know it...there's a small table with three framed pictures..I walk closer, In the middle is a big frame of a picture of him and I he's hugging me from behind and kissing my cheek while I'm smiling widely at the camera next to it is a picture of me alone and the other side is a picture of him. A tear escapes my eye.... This whole time I thought he was moving on,he was still thinking about me? Then why would he hurt me like that,why would he cheat on me then get back together with his ex There must be good explanation.

I hear screaming coming from downstairs I quickly run out the room and down the stairs, the noise is coming from outside it sounds like a woman screaming, I notice the sliding door at the back is open,I run out to the back house where the noise is coming from, she sounds

like she's in a lot of pain

Me:"Quinton! Sandile! What's going on? "

I shout as I make my way inside and notice Sydney on the bed screaming her lungs out

Sandile:"she was like this even yesterday.. We took her to the doctor but it was just contractions....we think its still them"

"Aaahhh aahhhhh!!!"

Quinton: "just breath will you!"

I run closer to them

Me:"don't shout at her...she needs to get to the hospital quickly... This baby wants to come out"

They look at me

Me(shouts):"Ayibo!!! Move it! Sandile get her to the car!! Quinton! Get moving!! Come on!!! We have a baby on the way!!"

They get up as fast as lightning

I follow behind. I take a towel that was on top of the bed, I pass the kitchen to get a bottle of water

Quinton drives to the hospital while Sandile and I are trying to calm her down

Me: "have some water"

She shakes her head

Sydney: "do I look like I fucken need water!!
Ashhhh sshhhhiitt...oh my gosh..my water!"

Her water broke

Me: "just try to breath okay"

I show her how to breath, she copies me for a while then stops

Sydney: "this is useless!"

I wet the towel and put it on her forehead then hold her tummy, she calms down

Me: "that feels better?"

She nods

Sydney: "a lot"

Quinton is driving on normal speed respecting all the road rules as if he's in no rush

Me:"Quinton! Will you step on it! She's going through pain here we need to get her to the hospital quick!"

Quinton: "she'll be alright"

I can't believe he's enjoying the fact that she's in pain right now

Me:"Oh so you don't mind if your baby is conceived right here?"

He drives faster after I said that, I remove my hands from Sydney since she was better

"Aaahhh!!! Please don't let go!"

I put my hands on her tummy again and she's calm...okay

Sydney: "how do you do that?"

Me:"what?"

Sydney: "your hands...they make the pain go away"

I shrug

We finally get to the hospital, Quinton picked her up and ran with her inside with me walking behind and Sydney screaming at the top of her voice in agony

The doctors attend her immediately

Doctor: "y'all going to have to wait out here"

Quinton: "I'm the father"

Doctor: "oh..I guess you can come,only family though"

I watch them as they go in...I would have love to also be part of that, he's doing it again.. leaving me in the sidelines, no matter how much I try to show that I'm on his side that he can trust me

but he just doesn't see it.

I sit by the chair and bury my face in my hands

"Could you please come in with me?"

I look up at him

Me:"huh?"

He helps me stand

I smile at him

Quinton: "come on..he's almost here"

He pulls my hand and we head to her ward,
she's already pushing

Quinton squeezes my hand as we watch her
pushing

Doctor: "one last push....I need you to give it all
you've got"

"Aahhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!!!!!!"

Next thing we know it a crying baby

Doctor: "congratulations.... Its a healthy baby boy"

I sigh,the nurses go wash him first, I go stand next to Sydney

Me:"how you feeling?"

Sydney: "in pain..but relieved at the same time"

I chuckle and so does she, I look at Quinton who's staring at me

as we standing opposite each other on either side of the bed

Nurse:"there you go"

She gives Sydney her baby

Sydney: "aaww my baby...he's so cute"

She kisses him on the forehead

Quinton:"may I? "

She hands him the baby, he smiles as a tear escapes his eye but he quickly wipes it, he plays

with the baby's cheeks then kisses him

He walks around the bed towards me ,he
stands next to me

I turn and face him as I stand up from the chair

Quinton: "here"

He gives me the baby,I gently take him, he's so
tiny he has his eyes closed with his little hands
fisted against his face

Me:"he's so beautiful "

My heart skips a beat, I'm filled with so much
joy, having him in my arms is the best feeling
ever

Me:"oh my God,thank you father,for this
wonderful gift"

I kiss his tiny hands

Me:"I'm so in love"

I give him to Sydney

Me:"I think he needs mommy's boobies"

Sydney (chuckles):"let's feed you"

She gives him the boob and he sucks on it for dear life

I watch as Quinton watches his baby eat with so much joy in him

I walk out of the ward...I can't help but feel heartbroken, I think I made a mistake coming here,even if I wanted us to fix things, but things will never be the same anymore,looks like Sydney will forever be part of his life now and as much as I love Quinton, I don't think I can go through that again. I get outside the hospital and go through my phone as I look for a ride

"Where you off to?"

I turn to be met by the most handsome father

Me:"oh..I I just thought, I should go..."

He puts his hands in his pocket..he loves doing

that

Quinton: "why did you follow me?"

I look down

Me:"I I just wanted to thank you"

He remans quiet, I look up at him

Quinton: "for?"

Me:"thank you for saving my life....once again"

He nods

silence

Me(sighs):"okay then...that's all, bye"

I turn and walk away from him

"That was the plan all along you know"

I stop walking

"Everything, all the flirting and marrying with
Enhle.....it was all part of the plan"

I turn to look at him

He sits down by the steps in front of the hospital building and looks straightforward, I sit next to him and also look at the freeway

Me:"I need you to tell me everything..... And please,don't leave out a single thing"

Quinton: "it all started two weeks after I was shot...I found out who shot me"

A gasp escapes my mouth

Me:"why didn't you tell me?"

Quinton: "it was some niggas I don't know, so I asked my people to get him for me, I found that he was sent by the Johnsons... That's when I knew that they are not done with you...you the one who was supposed to get shot that day, they were after your life,so I had to know their plans,I had to be two steps ahead of them....that's when Enhle came into mind,I knew she was not over me yet,since she has been trying to get back with me but I've been

ignoring her,so I decided to take advantage of the opportunity and take her back,I knew,the way she loves me,it'll be easy getting the information I need through her...I had to act as though, things between you and I aren't going well...so that she becomes my escape from you... She bought it and it made her happy, I had to make it as believable as I could"

Me:"so all this time...you were pretending her?...the marriage?"

Quinton: "yes"

Me:"why didn't you tell me? Why did you let me believe it was all real? Why did you let my heart break like that?"

He takes a deep breath

Quinton: "if I had told you, would you have understood? Would you have been comfortable watching me entertain her? Flirting with her, visiting her in the late hours of the night? Taking

her out,giving her all the attention and affection?
The same affection that should be giving you?
Would you have understood?"

Me:...

Quinton: "No..you wouldn't...it would've still
broke you.. And you would've asked me to stop
or we would've ended up fighting everyday until
we separate as usual... You would've sold out
the whole plan to Enhle I couldn't afford to let
anyone know.... It wouldn't have worked if I told
you"

He tells me everything.. How he's planning in
destroying their businesses, how he got to
know what they were up to all the time,how the
engagement with Enhle made them trust him
even more.

I'm in disbelief

Me:"wow"

Quinton: "I'm so sorry I put you through that"

Me:"so much has happened Quinton.... While you were busy playing undercover hero....so much has happened in my life"

Quinton:"you mean Troy? "

We look at each other

I nod

Me: "but it was nothing serious"

Quinton: "I understand.... You were heartbroken and vulnerable, and he was around...to make you forget and release"

He looks away, I can sense his anger and frustration

Me:"did you have sex with her?"

He remains quiet

Me: "of cause you did....you had to"

I bury my face in my hands as I hold the tears

Quinton: "I didn't mean for it to go that far,but I

needed to make it believable, I needed her to believe that I really love her Lisa.. As wrong as this sounds but,I did it for you...if it meant Mr B also helping me out,I'd do anything for you Lisa.,anything, even if it means Mr B should help...your life was on the line,I couldn't afford to loose you babe,please try and understand Lisa...please forgive me,please bub..please come back to me,I need you..... I can't take it anymore, I miss you"

I stare into his sparkling blue mixed with grey eyes

Me:"I love you Quinton "

Quinton: "I love you too bub"

Me:"I feel like you just don't trust me enough.... Like you don't believe in me...don't you think,if I had known that its my life that's in danger I would've understood.. Don't you believe that I would've trusted you,that I would've been

understanding and grateful cause I know you would be doing it for me?....why don't we trust each other Quinton, why can't we fully share things with each other,why do we have to communicate when everything has already been messed up? We let people come between us way too easily....we give up on each other way too easily,one minute you make me feel like I mean so much to you, then the next you make me feel like you don't give two fucks about how I feel...why do you do that? And even through all of it,I always forgive,I always have to take you back....because of a stupid funny feeling inside me...a feeling that makes me believe that we belong together,no matter what,..a stupid feeling that is only fooling me...you weren't meant to be with me Quinton,you were only meant to protect me...after all my father did say,you are my protector.. Maybe that's all you are"

I look at him he shakes his head

Quinton: "No..no that's not all I am..Lisa,we've just been through a lot of shit,I get it...we are just so messed up, we broken,we love each other so much...and no one can fix us,no one can love us the way we love each other...I've been involved with many women and you know it..but never, never did I once feel the awesome feelings that you make me feel, never have I loved anyone,not even myself,the way I love you"

Me:"and that's why we should stay away from each other..the more we happy the more bad things will come up and leave us even more broken and messed up"

Tears are streaming down on both our faces

Quinton: "no..you see that's where you wrong, we belong together bub,you'll never love anyone like you love me and you know it...same goes

for me,we've tried Lisa, we've tried being separated and it just made us more attached at heart...I know you can feel it when I'm crying or feeling down or when I'm happy even though you not around... But you can feel my feelings"

How does he know that?

Quinton: "because I feel it too....when you not around,when you not next to me.,.. I still feel your presence, I feel it...in here"

He points at his chest on the left side

Quinton: "when you hurt... I felt it too..even when you happy, I feel it.. Its like I'm attached to you...there's just one thing we lack, we lacking something bub..and I think I finally what it is"

Me:"what is it?"

He gets up then helps me stand, we both on our feet

Quinton: "all this time,we have been doing

things the wrong way"

I look at him perplexed

Quinton: "we know that we belong together, but we haven't been together.... That's why things haven't been going well for us, a lot of people are against us being happy together and we haven't gotten the right blessings... Remember the ceremony your father asked for from me?"

Me(shocked):"we didn't do it...so much happened that we forgot about it"

He nods

Quinton: "your father hasn't fully gave us his blessing, he hasn't forgiven us yet...and as long as he's still not at peace,..we will never be at peace"

Me:"you right"

Quinton: "and another thing..."

He goes down on one knee, I hold my breathe in

and my eyes pop out

Me(whispers): "Quinton,....

Quinton:" I don't see why we should waste anymore time...we've already wasted so much...more than anything Lisa..we need God's abundant blessings..lisakhanya Mthethwa...you the only woman I want to wake up next to till the day God takes my life away,let's make it official,let's protect our happiness, our joy,let's do things the right way bub..let's spend the rest of our lives together.....let's get married Lisa,let's be one,the right way.....marry me lisakhanya Mthethwa?..... Please?"

I cover my mouth,I can't believe what I'm hearing,I can't believe what I'm seeing, his eyes turned green mixed with a bit of blue

Quinton(whispers): "please"

I nod my head continuously

Me:"yes...yes...let's get married"

He gets up and we look into each others eyes for a while

He pulls me close and we share the longest kiss ever,I even lift my one leg and wrap it around his leg,he rubs my thigh then lifts it up,together with my other leg picking me up with my legs around his waist, I can't get enough of his lips as my hands are moving all over his body and so are his all over mine, if it were up to us we'd strip each other naked right here right now

I finally get the strength to pull out

Quinton: "look at this"

He takes off his jacket and gives it to me,he lifts his shirt up..I swear a flood just formed on top of the flood that was already there from the kiss,damn his packs...he's definitely been exercising, he's gotten back to his buff and fit

old self...oh lord have mercy its like his testosterone hormone had rapidly increased

"Hello..Lisa.. Do you like it?"

I move my eyes from his abs to his eyes

Me:"huh?"

Quinton: "the tattoo?...do you like it?"

I look at his chest, a loud gasp escapes mouth as my mouth hangs open

Its the exact style as mine, it reads "Lisakhanya Ambrose O'Brien"

Me:"Quinton... It's beautiful "

He smiles

Quinton: "I wouldn't have any other name tattooed on me for life than yours"

Me:"I want to kiss it"

He chuckles

Quinton: "with pleasure"

I lift his shirt up and kiss it,I end up smooching it, he giggles

Quinton: "enough"

I stop he pulls me into his arms

Quinton: "don't worry about Sydney, she's going to a mental house, and we'll raise our baby together peacefully.."

Me:"mental house?"

Quinton: "yeah..I have enough proof to prove she's crazy,she won't have custody to the baby..ever..after all..he's your baby now"

Me:"really?"

Quinton: "yes. I know you'll make the best mother in the world"

Me(smiles):"you think so?"

Quinton: "I know so"

We kiss I wrap my arms around his neck

Me:"No more secrets Quinton "

Quinton: "No more secrets.. From now on I'll tell you everything"

Me: "we communicate about everything.. I mean everything Quinton, we will not wait for it to come between us,we talk about it and get rid of it immediately"

Quinton: "yes..from now on, I will tell you everything.. I'll listen to your opinions and make sure I always put your feelings first before I make any kind of rash decisions"

Me:"even if its for my protection Quinton.. I need to know"

Quinton: "even if its for your protection"

Me:"even if you have to fart or poop..you tell me"

He laughs

Quinton: "even if I need to fart or poop. I'll let

you know"

We laugh and end up kissing again, he pulls out

Quinton: "let's go see our baby boy"

We walk back inside, we stand next to his small bed, looking down at him sleeping while he's holding me into his arms, he keeps kissing my forehead, as I lay my head on his chest listening to his heartbeat, I never thought I'd fall in love, get married and have a family at such a young age, my life really took a huge turn of events...and I never saw any if it coming

Quinton: "let's name him"

I look up at him

Quinton: "you'll give him his first name and I'll give him his middle name"

Me: "are you sure? Don't you think Sydney will want to...."

Quinton (interrupts): "I don't care what Sydney

wants...I only care about whats best for you and my nameless baby which I want you to name"

My heart melts and my knees become wobbly, what is this man doing to me!

I look down at the baby

Me:"Kyle"

Quinton: "Alexandra"

Me: "Kyle Alexandra O'Brien"

Quinton: "welcome son"

I look up at him and he's looking at me

Me:"have you been talking to Bella?"

Quinton: "what makes you say that?"

Me:"you finally accepted that there is a God...you thought about my father's ceremony... I just can't believe you did that on your own"

He smiles

Quinton: "yeah...I have been talking to Bella..."

From the beginning"

Me:"she knew about your plans from the beginning? "

He nods

Me:"why didn't she tell me?"

Quinton: "I asked her not to..but she's been my drive through the whole plan...when I felt like giving in and telling you everything because I couldn't stand seeing you with another man,but she would remind me of the consequences.. She's also really opened my eyes to this whole Christianity thing"

Me:"really!?"

Quinton: "yes...but please don't pressure me into it just as yet"

Me:"don't worry babe...when you ready"

Quinton: "that's all I need"

Me:"what about your family? "

Quinton: "they were the last problem on my list...now that everything is sorted out...I guess its time I go pay them a visit"

Me:"Kyle and I will be right beside you...holding your hand"

We hug and stare at peacefully sleeping Kyle

[07/30, 13:20] Ron: Insert 59

Final insert

LISA

THREE WEEKS LATER

Quinton: "I'm not ready to face them Bub"

Me: "you are love bug"

Quinton: "I don't have the energy for them"

Me: "Quinton... Its not like you going to ask for unity or anything, you just going to let out all the anger and frustration that is bottled up inside you towards them by talking, then its up to them if they want to be part of your life or not..you need to let them know that you recognised "

Quinton: "what if they don't want to be part of my life anymore? Do you think we'll ever have

peace without both our family's blessings?"

Me: "as long as we tried to do things the right way...we will find peace,what matters is that we tried"

He sighs

Quinton:"I know bub...its just...my mother...how do I talk to her after everything... how do I even begin to look at her?"

Me:"its now or never....you'll be fine Quinton"

He looks at me, then looks at kyle who is sleeping in my arms

Quinton: "do you think I should do it boy?"

Kyle opens his mouth and makes cute baby sounds then goes quiet again

We laugh

Quinton: "if you say so..then I guess I should"

I laugh, he leans towards me for a kiss, I peck

his lips but as usual he sucks my bottom lip and we end up smooching,I pull out

Me:"will you ever accept a peck? We can't be smooching in front of the baby"

Quinton (chuckles): "what does he know"

Me: "he's gonna know a lot if you carry on like this"

Quinton:"then he'll be a good kisser like daddy"

I roll my eyes

Me: "Argh mxm, you can't be teaching a baby how to kiss"

Quinton: "don't worry babe...he knows, only mommy and daddy kiss like that, baby gets a peck"

Me:"yeah right,just drive already"

We were parked a few houses away,he drives to the gate,he enters the pin,the gate opens and we drive in..I swear this house gets more

beautiful all the time

Me:"we'll wait here in the car love"

Quinton: "okay,I'll call y'all inside in a few
though"

Me:"okay love"

He kisses my cheek then gets off, he bangs the
door, causing kyle to wake up,he starts crying

Me:"ohhh baby, its okay,it was just the door"

"Nweeehh nweehhh!!!"

I hold him up and lay his head on my chest

Me:"what is it baby? You want daddy?"

"Nweeh nweeh!!!!"

Me:"milk?"

I try giving him the bottle but he doesn't want it,I
smell his butt

Ohh sick

Me:"oh no you didn't... Damn Kyle..what's up with you and your father with stink bombs"

QUINTON

I could've let myself in but this is not home anymore

A minute after I rang the bell the door finally opened

Aidan:"Quinton! "

He examines me up and down in total shock

Aidan:"wha...when did you.... You can walk?!"

I give him a side smile

He attacks me with a hug,I pat his back then
push him away

Aidan: "come in"

He let's me in,and leads me to the sitting room

Me:"please let everyone know I'm here including
your mom"

Aidan: "of cause"

He disappears

They all walk back in they all look surprised to
see me

I don't know how to read mom

Candra:"bro..what a pleasant surprise "

She comes for a hug I give her a handshake

I handshake them all

They sit down

Mom:"Candra,get your brother something to drink,whiskey? "

Me:"No..I won't be long,its okay"

She sits down

Mom:"oh okay"

silence

Me:"I just came here to say...thank you"

They all look at me perplexed

Me(chuckles):"I know right?..thank you? What could I possibly be thankful for from y'all?....absolutely nothing "

Mom:"Quinton we....."

I hold up my finger

Me:"sshhhh...I'm not done..I just need y'all to listen"

Me:"now..a lot has been going on in my life,from Sydney being paid to come and destroy my

relationship, to being bewitched, to being shot, to being a cripple, to being abandoned, to being abused and raped, to being lonely, to being rejected, misunderstood, taken for granted, to being healed, getting my life together alone, getting my girl back, to being a father to a beautiful baby boy... till finally, I'm now with the only person who loves me, unconditionally... a lot has happened and not even one of y'all have been there to see or support, I never thought that family would be the one to turn their backs when you are at your lowest, you all really surprised me, Candra?.. my one and only sister? You too, after everything we've been through together?"

She looks down with tearful eyes

Me: "Aidan? I thought we got each other?... brothers for life through high and low, I got your back forever... you forgot about that? You know if you were in my situation, you know

very well who would be more worked up in taking care of you..remember the time you were very ill? Mom wasn't around to clean your vomit? I went down on my knees and cleaned your shit up,I made sure you take your medication. I...you know what..you know exactly what I did for you"

He looks down ashamed and sad

I look at Clyde he looks right back at me,I shake my head

Me:"I still have blood in my hands because of you....you should be in jail,but no..because I'm your brother and I love you so much, I couldn't let that happen...innocent people are paying for your sins"

I look at the three siblings of mine who can't even look at me in the eye

Me: "all of you...I wouldn't think twice to take a bullet for y'all...but I guess I was all alone in this we are blood family crap"

I chuckle and wipe the one tear drop that escaped as I turn my head to look at mother

Me:"who is my real mother? And where is my real family? "

Mom:"I am your biological mother and this is your family "

Me:"I don't believe you..my mother would never do what you did to me, all because of money? Of diamonds? Because of power? (I shake my head) not the mother who carried me for nine months full term...a mother who threatens to kill her own son? No..you not my mother"

Mom:"I'm so sorry..."

Me:"I said I just need y'all to listen"

She remains quiet

Me:"I just wanted y'all to know that....I forgive you"

They lift their heads and look at me

Me:"I don't need y'all pathetic explanations cause they won't make any difference,.. I forgive each and one of y'all and I'm willing to give you all a second chance, because I love y'all,despite everything...you my family and yes,family also messes up sometimes, so I forgive you guys,and if y'all still want us to be a normal family again, I'm giving y'all that chance,because everybody deserves a second chance"

Candra burst into a loud cry and marches towards me I stand up and give her the biggest hug ever, Aidan comes in and joins us and so does Clyde, we all group hug,even Clyde is crying, everyone is in tears..I feel someone hug me from behind, I let go of them and look behind me,its mom, we look into each other's eyes,and I can see the sincerity and pleading in her eyes

I attack her with a hug she holds me tight and

that's when I finally let my tears run free

Mom:"I love you so so much....I'm so sorry for everything, I'm sorry"

Me:"I love you too mama"

Despite everything, there's still love in me for my mother, a lot of it..

I love her I can't believe I love her..Lisa was right,with forgiveness comes peace

LISA

Me:"you so adorable... Yes you are...you gonna

grow to be so handsome like your dad, and girls will be throwing themselves at you, don't you dare let them fool you with their big boobs and bums cause mommy will kill them, dead, you will focus on school so that you become super smart and get straight As like your mama here right? Right boy? But don't become a geek now, please yooohh"

He makes the cute baby sounds and smiles with his blue eyes wide open and mouth showing his gums and kicking his tiny legs

Me(laughing): "yes baba, you no geek"

He burps

Me(gasps): "excuse you... where are your manners nana... don't tell me you also lost them like your daddy... don't ever lose them cause mommy is gonna spank right here "

He screams in a happy way

Me(giggling): "you so funny Alex"

The car door opens disturbing our conversation

Quinton: "come, let's go inside"

I give him Kyle before getting out, its too hot for a blanket and he's dressed a bit warm so I leave his blanket

Me:"is everything okay?"

His eyes look like he's been crying

He nods

Quinton: "everything is perfect"

He holds my hand and we walk to the house with him carrying kyle

Aidan comes flying towards me following him is Candra I take steps back and keep steady if this is gonna be a hug it will definitely drop me

They finally reach me and attack me with a hug I laugh as I hug them back,they almost dropped me but I was ready

Aidan: "we missed you"

Me:"I missed y'all too"

We all head to the house, Clyde comes towards me,has he been crying!?! No way!! He doesn't say a word he just hugs me...that's a first, I was expecting our weird convo first...I look at Mrs O'Brien and she's smiling faintly at me,I still don't know how to feel about this woman and my dream about her is still fresh in my mind,she comes towards me, I feel like protecting kyle...don't you dare touch my baby! She hugs me..??..okay... I hesitantly hug her back

Q's mom:"I'm so sorry...you didn't deserve everything I've put you through... Please find it in your heart to forgive me"

Wow I never thought I'd see this day..

Me:"I long forgave you Mrs O'Brien... I long forgave you "

She pulls out of the hug

Q's mom:"you can call me Stella...or mom"

A smile creeps in my face

Me:"mom"

I look at Quinton and he's not holding a baby in his hands he's by Candra who is surrounded by Aidan and Clyde in the sitting room

We walk up to them

Q's mom:"can I hold him?"

She gives him to her

Q's mom:"my grandson... My very first grandchild"

She looks at Quinton

Q's mom: "thank you son"

He smiles then pulls me and holds me around my waist

Quinton:"you welcome mah...I have an announcement to make! Everyone! "

Candra:"wait! Let me go get some wine first"

She disappears to the kitchen with Aidan and come back with wine and glasses

She pours for everyone while Aidan serves us,they all sit down with a glass in everyone's hand

Quinton stands up

Quinton: "now, y'all all know the most important person in my life,the woman who has now become my number one, the one whom I can't live without... No people its not cliché its true,I literally can't live without her,I'd die, the one who's always been by my side and tolerated all my shit and messed up self, the only person who had never given up on me,no matter how many times I've told her to fuck off but she believed in me and the love we have for each other...and believe me when I say,that baby you holding mom,wouldn't be here if it wasn't for

her,I wouldn't be here if it wasn't for her and her powerful prayers.... She's the best gift God has blessed me with,and everything we've been through, I wouldn't change a single thing,even if I were given a chance to go back and do things differently, I wouldn't take that chance,because everything we've been through and the way everything has happened..it has all led us to this moment right here..I've learnt so much form this young strong woman over here.... I've also grown from the life lessons I've been through with her,she's younger than me,but she was always the more mature one...I love her to bits"

He extends his hand and helps me stand

Quinton: "bub meet my family.... Family,I want you to meet bub..I mean Lisa..(they laugh)...Lisakhanya Ambrose O'Brien... My fiancée, your new sister and a daughter... Yep you can close your mouths..we getting married

soon"

Aidan:"I'll drink that!"

Clyde:"congratulations "

Q's mom:"cheers"

We all click our glasses together and drink, kyle starts crying,Quinton takes him

Quinton: "you also want your own glass little chap"

Me:"don't you dare"

Quinton: "just a little so he can sleep"

I give him a dead stare he laughs

Quinton: "I'm kidding.. Geez"

He winks at kyle, kyle decides to smile and makes those cute sounds,hee these boys better not try me

Quinton's mom decided that we should stay over for dinner

Well, Sydney was taken to the mental house, I asked Quinton not to, but he insisted that she should learn her lesson one way or the other, it's no use arguing with him when he's mind is made up, but I understood, I feel sorry for Sydney, I think although she said she wants nothing to do with the baby, deep down in her heart she loves him and it broke her, I told her I'll send her pictures of everything, she will get the bond with the baby, but Quinton wants Kyle to grow up knowing me as his mother and Sydney as his Aunty... I don't know how to feel about this yet... but for now, I'll let it slide

Everyone is happy and laughing, we all just chilling in the sofas, Quinton is playing with restless Kyle, I look at Q's mom, for the first time in forever I see a mother, a mother who loves her family more than anything, everyone is engaging in conversation, for the first time, I feel

like I'm part of it,for the first time,no one is sidelining me...I just hope everything stays this way.

I ended my no strings with Troy and he's completely cool with that, I'll be starting work after the wedding which is in two months time,we informed mom we'll be heading to Mthatha tomorrow for the ceremony, which can now be done properly with Quinton's mom by our side,I hope everything goes well. Although Mncedisi is still somewhere out there,I'm happy he's learnt his lesson and won't ever be bothering us. Tsepo, I still talk to him,we are now good friends and he's confessed to me that he really likes Thelma but doesn't know how to tell her, I told him to go with it,I still havnt heard from him as it was only yesterday he told me this...

I look at Quinton, I don't know what the future holds for us, but I'm never letting anything come

between us again, I love this man with all my heart, no matter how many times I've tried to convince myself, I've failed, he's my soulmate, we've seen each other's worst sides but yet here we are, engaged and madly in love, my own superhero, I thank God for bringing him into my life, loving him was not always easy, but it's always worth it and soon we'll officially become one.

He looks at me and winks while blowing a kiss

He gets closer and his mouth is right on my ear, his warm breath sending shivers down my spine

Quinton (whispering): "remember you said we should communicate a lot about everything"

I nod

Quinton (whispering): "I just farted..it was a long one, but silent,..sshhh"

I look at him and then the smell comes, I pull a

disgusted look

Me(whispers): "silent but deadly"

We laugh also Kyle starts kicking and getting excited, first Kyle in the car

now him!! Someone rescue me!!

.

.

The End